

STATE LIBRARY OF PENNSYLVANIA



3 0144 00376039 4

S
CLASS 909

BOOK Sa34

VOLUME 20



PENNSYLVANIA
STATE LIBRARY



Modern History ;

OR, THE

PRESENT STATE

Penn. State Library

OF All NATIONS.

DESCRIBING

Their respective Situations, Persons, Habits,
Buildings, Manners, Laws and Customs, Reli-
gion and Policy, Arts and Sciences, Trades,
Manufactures and Husbandry, Plants, Animals
and Minerals.

By Mr. SALMON.

VOL. XX.

Contains the Reign of Queen *ELIZABETH*,
and Part of King *JAMES I.*

Illustrated with CUTS.

L O N D O N :

Printed for THO. WOTTON, at the *Three Daggers* and
Queen's Head against St. Dunstan's Church ; J. SHUCK-
BURGH, at the *Inner-Temple-Gate* ; both in *Fleet-Street* ;
and T. OSBORNE, in *Gray's-Inn*. MDCCXXXIV.

11

1011 / 21 11

1011 / 21 11

1011 / 21 11

1011 / 21 11

1011 / 21 11

1011 / 21 11

1011 / 21 11



THE
CONTENTS
OF THE
TWENTIETH VOLUME.

<i>THE Accession of Queen Elizabeth</i>	Page 1, 2, 10
<i>The Pope's Authority establish'd, and the Supremacy of the Crown of England asserted</i>	7
<i>The Reformed Religion restored and establish'd by the Act of UNIFORMITY, &c.</i>	8, 9, 10, 18, 64
<i>The High Commission Court establish'd</i>	7, 17
<i>The Reformed Bishops consecrated in the Beginning of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth</i>	25, 64
<i>Queen Elizabeth's Influence on the Affairs of Scotland</i>	23, 25, 35, 80, 95, 104, 106, 176, 290
<i>The Protestant Religion introduced into Scotland</i>	19, 29, 34
A 2	35478 The

The CONTENTS.

<i>The several Matches proposed to Queen Elizabeth</i>	3, 11, 23, 29, 37, 42, 60, 64, 102, 139, 147, 167, 169 to 171
<i>The Civil Wars of France, in which Queen Elizabeth interposes, and sends Relief to the Protestants there</i>	32, 41, 47, 48, 79, 91, 100, 129, 256, 268, 297
<i>Greater Supplies granted to Queen Elizabeth than to any of her Predecessors</i>	44
<i>Queen Elizabeth proposes a Match between her Favourite Robert Dudley (afterwards Earl of Leicester) and the Queen of Scots</i>	49, 53
<i>Rapin's Partiality, Mistakes, false Quotations, unjust Inferences, and frequent Inconsistencies, animadverted upon</i>	51, 70, 71, 74, 81, 82, 84, 174, 227, 250, 284, 377, 390, 407, 431
<i>The Queen of Scots Marriage with the Lord Darnley, who is afterwards murder'd, and the Consequences of it</i>	54, 56, 57, 60, 62, 66, 76, 80
<i>Earl Murray's Rebellion against his Sister Mary, Queen of Scots, and his setting up her Son James VI. to colour his Usurpation</i>	57, 62, 69, 70, 71, 72, 101
<i>The Puritans factious and troublesome to the Government, of which many Instances are given</i>	59, 78, 105, 116, 127, 133, 175, 180 to 185, 219 to 223, 249, 259, 264, 266, 280, 298

The CONTENTS.

<i>The Wars of Ireland</i>	77, 101, 132, 142, 150, 300, 322, 327, 355, 357
<i>Queen Elizabeth appoints Commissioners to hear the Differences between the Queen of Scots, and her Subjects</i>	85 to 91
<i>A Treaty of Marriage between the Duke of Norfolk and Mary Queen of Scots, which occasion'd both their Ruins</i>	95 to 97, 108, 117
<i>Papists and Puritans first absent them- selves from Church</i>	116
<i>The Prosecution of Mary, Queen of Scots, for Conspiracies against Queen Elizabeth</i>	120, 190, 193, 213 to 219, 225
<i>The Massacre of Paris</i>	124
<i>Qu. Elizabeth's Protection of the United Provinces against the King of Spain</i>	141, 144, 150, 201 to 205, 301, 318
<i>The traiterous Practices of the Jesuits against Queen Elizabeth, and the Care taken to suppress them</i>	152, 172, 188, 207 to 213, 295
<i>Drake's Voyage round the Globe, &c.</i>	156, 303
<i>Prophecies suppress'd</i>	163
<i>The Spanish Invasion</i>	239 to 248
<i>Queen Elizabeth commits several of the Members of the Commons for moving to settle the Succession</i>	272
<i>The Commons refuse a Conference with the Lords concerning a Supply</i>	274 to 278
<i>The</i>	

The CONTENTS.

<i>The Success of the English in taking the City of Cadiz</i>	306
<i>The Disgrace and Ruin of the Earl of Essex</i>	319, 323 to 326, 331 to 343
<i>The numerous Monopolies in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth complain'd of in Parliament</i>	347 to 351
<i>Tumultuous Proceedings in the House of Commons</i>	353
<i>The Death and Character of Queen Elizabeth</i>	359 to 364
<i>Statutes made in her Reign</i>	365
<i>The Accession of King James I.</i>	371
<i>A great many Noblemen and Knights made in the Beginning of this Reign</i>	373, 375, 416
<i>The Conference between the Bishops and Puritan Preachers at Hampton-Court</i>	381 to 384, 390
<i>A Union of the two Kingdoms of England and Scotland propos'd</i>	388, 414
<i>The Gun-powder Plot</i>	400
<i>The King's Partiality to the Scots</i>	415
<i>The Dutch acknowledged a Free State by Spain</i>	421
<i>The Royal Navy encreased</i>	417
<i>Baronets first created</i>	420
<i>The Intrigue between the Lord Viscount Rochester (afterwards Earl of Somerset) and the Countess of Essex</i>	424
<i>Colonies planted by the English in America</i>	426, 432, 436, 439, 442 to 448
<i>The</i>	428

The CONTENTS.

- The Marriage between the Elector Palatine and the Princess Elizabeth* 430
Sir Thomas Overbury's Murder, with the Trials of the Earl and Countess of Somerset, and their Agents, for it
432, 435, 439, 442 to 448
A Match between Prince Charles and the Infanta of Spain proposed 448
The Cautionary Towns deliver'd up to the Dutch 450
The Dutch ruin the Trade of England in the East-Indies, and elsewhere *ibid.*



Order



Order of placing the C U T S.

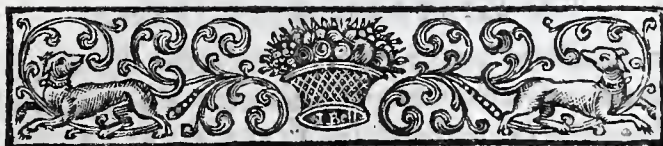
1	Queen Elizabeth	Page	1
2	King James I.		371







ELIZABETH.



THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

CHAP. I.

Contains the Reign of Queen ELIZABETH.



THE Morning after Queen *Mary's* *A.D. 1558*
Death, the Lord Chancellor *Heath*
was deputed by the Council to ac- *A. 1 Eliz.*
quaint the House of Peers with *The Lady*
the Demise of the Crown, where *Elizabeth*
upon that illustrious Assembly declar'd unani- declar'd
mously, that the Lady *Elizabeth*, her Sister, Heir to the
was the true and lawful Heir of the Kingdom ; Crown by
and the Commons being sent for up * the 2 Hou-
Lord Chancellor inform'd them, that the Na- ses of Par-
tion had lost a most pious and excellent liament.
Queen ; but that it had pleased God, in mer-
cy to the *English* Nation, to preserve the Lady
Elizabeth, the other surviving Daughter of
King *Henry*, of whose Right of Succession,
since no doubt could, or ought to be made,
the House of Peers only wanted their Consent

* *Cambden's Compleat History of England*, p. 369.

A.D. 1558 to proclaim her Queen; whereupon the Commons answer'd with one general Voice, *Long Life and happy Reign to QUEEN ELIZABETH.* And she was in the Afternoon solemnly proclaim'd QUEEN OF ENGLAND, FRANCE, AND IRELAND, DEFENDER OF THE FAITH, by Sound of Trumpet in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, of which Advice being sent to the Queen at her Palace of *Hatfield* in *Hertfordshire*, she came to *London* the next Day, being the 19th of *November*.

The Queen
proclaim'd

Her Majesty was five and twenty Years of Age at her Accession; but, as Mr. *Cambden* observes, prudent above her Years, as appear'd from her making very few Alterations, either in Church or State, till she had taken the Advice of her Parliament. She even retain'd in her Council the Lord Chancellor *Heath*, the Marquis of *Winchester* Lord Treasurer, and eleven more, who had been of Queen *Mary's* Council, all of them zealous Roman Catholics, to whom she added *William Parr* Earl of *Northampton*, *Francis Russel* Earl of *Bedford*, the celebrated *William Cecil*, and four or five more of her own Servants.


Her Measures
on her Accession.

She notifies
her Accession to
foreign Princes,
and to the Pope,
who returns a
haughty Answer.

Her Majesty immediately sent Ambassadors to the several Princes of *Europe*, to notify her Accession. And *Karn*, the *English* Resident at *Rome*, had Orders to signify the same to the Pope; but the haughty Pontiff answer'd, he look'd upon *England* as a Fee of the Papacy, and it was a high Presumption in *Elizabeth* to assume the Crown without his Consent, especially as she was illegitimate; but if she would renounce her Pretensions, and refer herself wholly to him, she might expect all the Favour that could consist with the Dignity of the Apostolick See; whereupon the Queen recall'd

recall'd her Minister and would never after *A.D. 1558*
 have any Correspondence with that Court.

King *Philip* presuming on the Services he *A 1 Luz.*
 had done the Queen in the late Reign, made *She breaks*
 her Offers of Marriage, and, as he foresaw *off all Cor-*
 she would object his having married her Sis- *respon-*
 ter, took it upon himself to procure a Dis- *dence with*
 pensation from *Rome*; but as her Majesty had *Rome.*
 no Opinion of these Dispensations, and confi- *King Phi-*
 der'd, that if a Dispensation was good in this *lip offers to*
 Case, it must have been so in her Father's, *marry the*
 when he married *Katherine of Spain*, and *Queen.*
 consequently his Marriage with her Mother,
 during the Life of *Katherine of Spain*, illegal;
 and herself illegitimate, she did not think fit
 to hearken to the King of *Spain's* Proposal;
 Besides, the Queen was in her heart a zealous
 Protestant, and intended from the beginning
 a Reformation in Religion as soon as the
 Times would bear it, and for that Reason al-
 one could never entertain a Thought of
 matching with the most bigotted Prince in
Europe; however she return'd him an oblig-
 ing Answer, and let him know, that tho' she
 had no Thoughts of marrying, she should
 however be proud of his Friendship; and in-
 deed, she had all the Reason in the World
 to cultivate a good Intelligence with *Philip* at
 this time, for the *French* King had order'd his
 Son the Dauphin, and his Consort the Queen
 of *Scots*, to take upon them the Stile of *The Dau-*
 King and Queen of *England*, as well as the *phin and*
 Arms of *England*; he had also a Body of *Queen of*
 Troops already in *Scotland*, and was prepar- *Scots stile*
 ing to send another Reinforcement thither, in *themselves*
 order to invade *England* from thence, being *King and*
 fully determin'd to make a Conquest of it for *Queen of*
 his Son and Daughter, and he was actually *England.*

A.D. 1558 *solliciting at Rome, to have the Queen de-*
A. 1 Eliz. *priv'd of her Dominions by the Pope, and to*
 *get them transferr'd to the Queen of Scots,*
who, as he suggested, had the best Right to
them: Nor was she only engag'd in a War
A disafec- *with France and Scotland, but among her*
ted Party *own Subjects there was already a numerous*
in the *Party, who suspecting her Intentions to abolish*
Kingdom. *Popery, were ready to revolt to the first In-*
The Trea- *vasion; add to this, that she found the Trea-*
sury ex- *sury exhausted, the Crown in debt, and the*
hausted. *Fortifications towards Scotland and France*
in a ruinous Condition; and it must be ad-
mitted, it requir'd. no common Conduct and
Resolution to extricate herself out of these per-
plexing Difficulties.

The Queen *The first thing she set about, was to make an*
takes an *exact Scrutiny into the State of her Revenues, to*
exact Ac- *call the Farmers and Officers concern'd in them*
count of *to account, and to levy the Subsidy that had been*
her Reve- *given to her Predecessor; and finding there*
 nues. *was still a great Deficiency of Treasure, she*
Borrows *order'd her Merchant, the celebrated Gresham,*
Money at *to take up a good Sum of Money at Antwerp*
Antwerp. *(for which the Citizens of London very readily*
Manages *became bound) and took care to manage her*
with great *Expences with the utmost Frugality. She al-*
Frugality. *so repair'd the Fortifications of Berwick, Do-*
Repairs *ver, Portsmouth, and other Fortresses of Im-*
the Forti- *portance; but all her good Management,*
fications. *would have avail'd her very little, if she had*
Renders *the Throne, that her principal View was her*
herself ex- *People's Happiness. It was the Affection of*
remely *her Subjects, and the Opinion they had of her*
popular. *Firmness, Oeconomy, and good Sense, that*
supported her against the Efforts of her Ene-
mies at home and abroad, destitute as she

was

was of Standing Forces, or any considerable Alliance that could be depended on. A.D. 1558

In the mean time, the Protestants were impatient to see their Religion restor'd (the Mass being still celebrated in Churches) they began therefore to preach first in private Houses, and afterwards in Churches, and to dispute and wrangle with the Papists, which sometimes occasion'd Tumults and Riots; insomuch that the Queen was oblig'd to publish a Proclamation, prohibiting such Disputes, and to declare, that the *Romish* Ritual should be observ'd in the publick Worship till it should be alter'd by Parliament, except the Elevation of the Host; only she permitted the Epistles, Gospels, and Ten Commandments, together with the Creed and Litany, to be read in the vulgar Tongue; She did not however allow other Parts of the Service to be alter'd or perform'd in *English*, as Mr. *Rapin* asserts. A. 1 Eliz.
The Protestants express some Impatience to see their Religion restor'd.
Which occasions a Proclamation.
Misrecited by Rapin.

The Funeral Obsequies of the late Queen being perform'd with great Solemnity on the Fifth of *December* in *Westminster* Abby, Dr. *White* Bishop of *Winchester* preach'd the Sermon, wherein he took an Opportunity to inveigh against Heresy, and to applaud Queen *Mary's* Administration in reconciling the Nation to the Church of *Rome*. He gave his Audience a very dismal Prospect also of what they were to expect from her present Majesty's Administration, at which the Government was so offended, that the Bishop was for some time confin'd to his House. Queen Mary's Funeral.
Bishop White laments the ill State of Religion.
And is confin'd.

And now the Queen order'd some of the most eminent Protestant Divines to review the Liturgy establish'd in the Reign of King *Edward*, that it might be ready for the Confirmation The Liturgy reviewed.

A.D. 1558⁸ mation of the Parliament at their Meeting.
 A. 1 Eliz. Dr. *Matthew Parker*, whom the Queen design'd for the See of *Canterbury*, was principally rely'd on in this Matter; and it seems it design'd was with a great deal of difficulty, that *Parker* was prevail'd on to accept the first Preferment in the Church: *Cecil* and Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, two of the Queen's Council, were forced to use Threats, as well as Entreaties, to induce him to accept that Honour, which other Ecclesiasticks so eagerly aspir'd after; nor did he comply with the Importunity of the Court for some Months, as will appear hereafter.

Creations of Nobility. Several Noblemen were either created, or restor'd to their Honours the Beginning of the following Year. *William Parr*, Earl of *Northampton*, who had forfeited his Peerage in the late Reign by High-Treason, was created Marquis of *Northampton*; *Edward Seymour*, eldest Son of the late Duke of *Somerſet*, was created Lord Viscount *Beauchamp* and Earl of *Hertford*; *Thomas Howard*, second Son of the Duke of *Norfolk*, was created Viscount *Bindon*; Sir *Oliver St. John*, was made Lord *St. John* of *Bletſoe*, and Sir *Henry Carew*, the Queen's Cousin, was made Lord *Carew* of *Hunſdon*, and the Seals being taken from the Archbishop of *York*, were given to Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, who was constituted Lord Keeper; others relate, that the Archbishop of *York* voluntarily resign'd the Seals on the Queen's forbidding the Clergy to elevate the Host, and ordering the Litany, the Epistles, and Gospels to be read in the vulgar Tongue. Certain it is, the Archbishop of *York*, and the rest of his Brethren, became very intractable about this time, and even refus'd to assist at the Queen's Coronation,

Sir *Nicholas Bacon* made Lord Keeper.

The Bps very intractable. The Queen crown'd.

ronation, except *Oglethorp* Bishop of *Carlisle*, *A.D. 1558*
 who perform'd that Ceremony in *Westminster* *A. 1 Eliz.*
 Abby on the 13th of *February*, after the man-
 ner of the *Roman* Ritual.

The Parliament meeting on the 23d of *Ja-* The Par-
nuary according to their Summons, were pro- liament
 rogu'd to the 25th, when the Lord Keeper meet.
Bacon open'd the Sessions with a Speech to
 both Houses. He reflected on the Mismanage-
 ment in the late Reign, and let them know,
 that the Queen desir'd, they would take into The Queen
 their Consideration the State of Religion, desires
 avoiding the Extremes of Idolatry and Super- they would
 stition on the one hand, and of Contempt consider
 and Irreligion on the other ; and that they the State
 would make such Laws as might unite the of Religi-
 People in one uniform Order of religious Wor- on.
 ship ; and concluded with laying the Necessi-
 ties of the Government before them ; but said,
 the Queen desir'd no Supply but what they
 should cheerfully offer.


The first Act pass'd in this Parliament, re- The Popes
 viv'd all the Acts made in the Reign of Authority
Henry VIII. for abolishing the Pope's Power, abolish'd
 and repeal'd all those made in the Reign of the again.
 late Queen *Mary* for establishing it ; the Acts A. 1 Eliz.
 against Hereticks were also repeal'd ; and it against the
 was declar'd, that the Authority of Visiting and *Lollards*
 Correcting all Abuses in the Church, shou'd repeal'd,
 be for ever annex'd to the Crown ; and that and the
 the Queen, and her Successors, might by Let- Suprema-
 ters Patents depute any Persons to exercise the cy restor'd
 same in her Name : That all Bishops, and o- to the
 ther Clergymen, with those in Civil Employ- Crown.
 ments, should take an Oath, acknowledging
 the Queen to be the supreme Governor in all
 Causes, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal,
 within her Dominions ; that they renounc'd
 all

A.D. 1595 all foreign Power and Jurisdiction, and should bear the Queen Faith and true Allegiance: *A. 1 Eliz.* Whosoever should refuse to swear this, was to forfeit his Preferments in Church and State, and to be from thenceforth disabled to hold any Employment during Life; and if within a Month, after the End of that Session of Parliament, any should either by Discourse, or in Writing, maintain the Authority of any foreign Power, or do any thing for the Advancement of it, they were to forfeit all their Goods and Chattels, and if they had not Goods to the Value of twenty Pounds, they were to be imprison'd a whole Year; and for the second Offence, they were to incur the Pains of a *Præmunire*; and the third Offence was made Treason. To this a Proviso was added, That such Persons as should be commission'd by the Queen, to reform and order Ecclesiastical Matters, should judge nothing to be Heresy, but what had been already so judg'd by the Authority of the Canonical Scriptures, or by the first four General Councils, or by any other General Council, in which such Doctrines were declar'd to be Heresies by the express and plain Words of Scripture: All other Points not so decided, were to be judg'd by the Parliament, with the Assent of the Clergy in their Convocation.

It was the Clause in this Act, that empowers the Queen to delegate her Authority in Ecclesiastical Matters to certain Commissioners, which gave rise to the *High Commission Court*.

The Act
of Uniformity re-
viv'd.

By 1 *Eliz. cap. 2.* The Act made in the 5th and 6th of *Edward VI. For the Uniformity of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments*, is reviv'd and declar'd to be
in

in Force from *Midsummer*, then next follow- A.D. 1559
 ing. The only considerable Variation made A. 1 Eliz.
 in King *Edward's* Liturgy by this Act, Bishop 
Burnet observes, was about the Lord's Supper.
 It was propos'd to have the Communion Ser-
 vice so contriv'd, that it might not exclude
 the Belief of the Coporal Presence; for the
 chief Design of the Queen and Council, was
 to unite the Nation in one Faith, and the
 greatest part of the Nation continu'd to believe
 such a Presence; therefore it was recommend-
 ed to the Divines, to see, that there should be
 no express Definition against it, that so it
 might lie as a speculative Opinion, not deter-
 min'd, in which every Man was left to the Free-
 dom of his own Mind. Hereupon the Rubrick,
 that explain'd the Reason for kneeling at the
 Sacrament, *That thereby no Adoration is in-*
tended to any Corporal Presence of Christ's na-
tural Flesh and Blood, because, *that is only in*
Heaven, which had been in King *Edward's*
 Liturgy, was now left out: And whereas, at
 the delivery of the Elements in King *Edward's*
 first Liturgy, there was to be said, *The Body*
and Blood of our Lord Jesus Christ preserve
thy Body and Soul to everlasting Life, which
 Words had been left out in his second Litur-
 gy, as favouring the Corporal Presence too
 much, and instead of them these Words were
 order'd to be us'd in the distribution of that
 Sacrament, *Take and eat this in remembrance,*
that Christ died for thee, and feed on him in
thy Heart by Faith with Thanksgiving, and
drink this in remembrance, that Christ's Blood
was shed for thee, and be thankful. They now
 join'd both these in one; some of the Collects
 were also a little alter'd, and that was the
 Book presented to the House.

A.D. 1559 By 1 Eliz. cap. 3. The Queen's Title to the Crown is recogniz'd, and it is thereby declar'd, *That her Majesty in very deed is, and of most meer Right ought to be, by the Laws of God and the Realm, their most rightful and lawful Sovereign Liege Lady and Queen, and that she is rightfully, lineally, and lawfully descended of the Blood Royal of the Realm of England, in whom, and the Heirs of her Body, without all Doubt or Scruple, the Imperial Crown of this Realm, with the Titles, Jurisdictions, and Pre-eminencies thereto belonging, are most fully, rightfully, and entirely vested.*

All Decrees and Acts repugnant to this Declaration made void. And it is further enacted, That all Sentences and Decrees, and so much of every Act of Parliament as is repugnant to this Recognition, or contrary to the Act of Settlement, made in the 35th Year of Hen. VIII. shall be utterly void, cancell'd and defac'd.

The Prudence of this Act call'd in Question by Rapin. *Cambden, Burnet, and the rest of our English Historians, generally applaud the Wisdom of the Ministry and the Legislature, in not entering too particularly into the Queen's Title (lest it should have reviv'd some Reports, not much to the Honour of her Mother) and declaring only in general Terms, That the Queen was rightfully and lawfully descended of the Blood Royal, and that all Acts and Decrees to the contrary were void; whereby the Acts confirming her Mother's Divorce, and declaring her own Illegitimacy, were virtually repeal'd at least, which seems to be all that was necessary or proper to be done in this Case, notwithstanding the celebrated Rapin is pleas'd to be of another Opinion: He imagines, that neither the Friends of the Queen of Scots; nor the bigotted Papists would have enter'd in any*

Con-

spiracies against Queen *Elizabeth*, if the Act *A.D. 1559* confirming Queen *Anne Bolein's* Divorce had been particularly and formally repeal'd, tho' *A. 1 Eliz.* it is sufficiently evident, that the Popish Clergy had very little Regard to any Acts that were made by Heretical Parliaments, as they call'd them, and would have had as little to any other, that should have been made without their Concurrence, especially in Cases of Marriage or Divorce; for in these, they would not allow, either the Parliament or Convocation, either the Laity or Clergy of *England*, to intermeddle without the Pope's Concurrence; but look'd upon all their Decrees and Statutes in such Cases to be void: But to proceed to give an Account of the rest of the Statutes made this Session, in relation to the State.

The *1 Eliz. cap. 4.* Restores to the Crown The all the Tenth's and First Fruits, together with Tenth's, the Impropriations, which the late Queen had *&c.* restor'd to the Crown. surrender'd to other Uses; against which, the Archbishop of *York*, and the rest of the Bishops present, protested; but could not, however, hinder the passing of it. Soon after which, the Commons reflecting on the Miseries of the late Reign, and the Cruelties they might expect would be renew'd, in case of a Popish Successor, address'd the Queen to marry: They told her, no People ever had a greater Affection for their Prince, and they wish'd she might be immortal; but as that was not to be expected, they entreated her to think of such a Husband, as might make herself and the Nation happy, in a numerous and Royal Progeny.

To which the Queen answer'd, she thank'd them for the Duty and Affection they had express'd, *The Queen's Answer.*

A.D. 1559 press'd, and was pleas'd, they had not taken upon them to limit her, either in Point of Time, or as to the Person of her Consort; but declar'd, she had hitherto liv'd single with great Satisfaction, and refus'd some considerable Offers, even in the late Reign, when she was in Danger of her Life at home. She assur'd them, if ever she married, she would make such a Choice, as would be to the Satisfaction of her good People; but, that she look'd upon her Subjects as her Children, and could be very well contented, it might be written on her Tomb, *That she reign'd so long a Queen, and lived, and died a Virgin.* And desir'd they would enter upon Consultations of another Nature.

An Act for
the Security of the
Queen's
Person.

By 1 Eliz. cap. 5. It is made High Treason to conspire against the Queen, or the Heirs of her Body, or to levy War against any of them; and to say, that any of them ought not to be King or Queen, was to be punish'd with Loss of Goods, and of Lands, during Life: And if any Person should, by Writing or Printing, affirm any of these Things, he was to be adjudg'd guilty of High Treason.

Riotous
Assemblies

By 1 Eliz. cap. 16. The Statute of 1 Mary against riotous Assemblies, was enacted to continue in force during the Queen's Life.

Bishop-
ricks.

An Act pass'd also, empowering the Queen to reserve the Lands belonging to Bishopricks, as they fell void, and to settle Impropritate Tythes on such Sees in lieu of them.

Religious
Houses
suppress'd.

By another Act, all the Religious Houses erected by Queen Mary, with their Lands, were annex'd to the Crown; and the Deprivations of the Popish Bishops in the Reign of King Edward, were declar'd valid.

By

By 1 *Eliz. cap. 20.* Tonnage and Poundage was granted to the Queen during her Life. A.D. 1559
A. 1 *Eliz.*

By *Cap. 21.* A Subsidy and two Fifteens were granted to the Queen. Tonnage and Poundage granted for life.

And on the 8th of *May* the Parliament was dissolv'd. A Supply granted.

As the Bishops in the House of Lords oppos'd every Act for establishing the Protestant Religion, the rest of the Clergy, as well in Convocation as elsewhere, did all that lay in their Power to defeat the Queen's Measures, and in their Sermons had the Assurance to declare against the Queen's Supremacy, and the Alterations made in Religion ; The Popish Clergy oppose the Reformation.

among whom, *Nicholas Harpsfield*, Archdeacon of *Canterbury*, and Prolocutor of the Convocation, was one of the most zealous. He declar'd openly, that Religion should not, nor could not be alter'd, and stirr'd up the People to Sedition in his Sermons ; whereupon the Queen prohibited all preaching without a Licence first obtain'd under the Great Seal ; and lest the Convocation might take upon them to act in opposition of her Majesty, she requir'd them, on pain of a *Præmunire*, not to make any Canons, or enter upon Business, without her Leave. However, *Harpsfield*,

and the Lower-House, drew up certain Articles, containing several Popish Doctrines, which they insisted ought to be maintain'd, and desir'd the Bishops to present them to the House of Peers while the State of Religion was under Debate there. The Substance of those Articles were, 1. That Christ was corporally present in the Sacrament. 2. That there was no other Substance in it, but his Body and Blood. 3. That the Mass was a propitiatory

The Convocation assert their Popish Principles.

A.D. 1559 pitiatory Sacrifice for the Dead and the Living. 4. That to St. *Peter* and his Successors, belonged the Government of the Church. And 5. That the Power of treating of the Doctrine, Sacraments, and Order of Divine Worship, belong'd only to the Pastors of the Church; and to the four first of these, they had prevail'd on a Majority of the Members of both Universities to set their Hands.

A Dispute
between
the Popish
and Protest-
tant Di-
vines.

The Queen hereupon order'd a Conference to be held in *Westminster* Abby on the last Day of *March*, on the following Topicks. 1. Whether it was not contrary to the Word of God, and the Custom of the antient Church, to pray, and administer the Sacraments in an unknown Tongue? 2. Whether every Church had not Authority to appoint Ceremonies and Ecclesiastical Rights? And 3. Whether it could be prov'd by the Scriptures, that in the Mass, there was a propitiatory Sacrifice for the Dead and the Living? There were nine Popish Bishops and Doctors, and as many Protestant Divines to be concern'd in the Dispute, which was to be manag'd in Writing; the Bishops being to read and deliver in their Papers first, and then the Protestants to answer them in the same manner.

The Po-
pish Bps
refuse to
continue
the Dispute

The Privy-Council, a great many Temporal Peers, and the whole House of Commons were present at this Dispute: The Popish Doctors read their Papers first, but refus'd to deliver them in, as had been agreed on, and finding the Applause run altogether on the Protestant Side, refus'd to dispute any more: The Bishops of *Winchester* and *Lincoln* said, the Doctrine of the Catholick Church was already establish'd, and ought not to be disputed, except in a Synod of Divines: That it was too

great

great an Encouragement to Hereticks, to hear them thus discourse against the Faith: before the unlearned Multitude: That the Queen had incur'd the Sentence of Excommunication by suffering it, and talk'd of excommunicating her; whereupon the two Bishops were sent to the Tower. The Protestants, on the other hand, observ'd, that the Truth was so manifestly on their Side, that their Adversaries durst not suffer these Points to be further enquir'd into.

A.D. 1559

A. 1 Eliz.

Threatens the Queen with Excommunication.

Bishops of Winchester and Lincoln committed

The Oath of Supremacy being tender'd to the Bishops and Clergy, soon after the rising of the Parliament, every one of the Bishops, except Dr. *Kitchin* Bishop of *Landaff*, refus'd it, and upon their Refusal were committed to Prison. Bishop *Burnet* suggests, that they imagin'd, if they were unanimous in refusing it, that the Queen would be oblig'd to dispense with them, and durst not at one Stroke venture to deprive all the Bishops of *England*; but they were mistaken, it seems; most of them were releas'd out of Prison, however, in a little time (except *Bonner*, *White*, and *Watson*) Dr. *Heath* Archbishop of *York* was suffer'd to reside at his own House in *Surry*: *Tonstal* and *Thirlby* were, after some time, sent to *Lambeth*, where they resided with Archbishop *Parker* in the Palace, and had the Respect paid them due to their Characters: The rest of the Popish Bishops and Doctors, either resided in the Houses of some Bishops, or were suffer'd to go beyond Sea. Most of the Monks return'd to a secular Life, and the Nuns went abroad.

Oath of Supremacy tender'd to the Clergy.

The Bps imprison'd for refusing it.

A general Visitation being now resolv'd on, A Visitation. Injunctions were drawn up, and given to the Queen's Commissioners, of the following Tenor,

A D. 1559 nor, viz. That no Priest or Deacon should marry without Allowance from the Bishop of the Diocese, and two Justices of the Peace, and the Consent of the Woman's Parents and Friends. And all the Clergy were requir'd to use Habits; according to their Degrees in the Universities, the Queen declaring, that this was not done for any Holiness in them, but for Order and Decency. No Man might use any Charm, or consult with such as did. All were to resort to their own Parish Churches, except on extraordinary Occasions. Inn-keepers were to sell nothing in the Times of Divine Service. None were to keep Images, or other Monuments of Superstition in their Houses. None might preach, but such as were licens'd by their Ordinary. In all Places they were to examine the Causes, why they had been in the late Reign Imprison'd, Famish'd, or put to Death upon the Pretence of Religion, and all Registers were to be search'd for it. In every Parish the Ordinary was to name three or four discreet Men, who were to see, that all the Parishioners did duly resort on *Sundays* and *Holidays* to Church, and those, who, upon Admonition, did not amend, were to be return'd to the Ordinary. On *Wednesdays* and *Fridays* the Common Prayer and Litany was to be us'd in all Churches. All slanderous Words, as Papist, Heretick, Schismatick, or Sacramentarian, were to be forborn under severe Pains. No Books might be printed without a Licence from the Queen, the Archbishop, the Bishop of *London*, the Chancellors of the Universities, or the Bishop or Archdeacon of the Place where it was printed. All were to kneel at Prayers, and shew a Reverence when the Name of *Jesus* was pronounc'd.

A. 1 Eliz.

The
Queen's
Injunctions.

pronounc'd. Then follow'd an Explanation *A.D. 1559*
of the Oath of Supremacy, in which the Queen
declar'd, that she did not pretend to any Au- *A. 1 Eliz.*
thority for the ministring of Divine Service in
the Church ; and that all that she challeng'd,
was, that which had at all times belong'd to the
Imperial Crown of *England* ; that she had the
Soveraignty and Rule over all manner of
Persons under God, so that no Foreign Power
had any Rule over them ; and if those, who
had formerly appear'd to have Scruples about
it, took it in that Sense, she was well pleas'd
to accept of it, and did acquit them of all Pe-
nalties in the Act. The next was about Altars
and Communion Tables ; she order'd, that
for preventing of Riots, no Altar should be
taken down, but by the Consent of the Cu-
rate and Church-wardens ; that a Communion
Table should be made for every Church ; and
that on Sacrament-days, it should be set in
some convenient Place in the Chancel ; and at
other times should be plac'd where the Altar had
stood. The Sacramental Bread was order'd
to be round and plain, without any Figure on it,
but somewhat broader and thicker than the
Casket formerly prepar'd for the Mass. Then
the Form of bidding Prayer, was prescrib'd
with some Variation from that in King *Ed-*
ward's Time ; for, whereas to the Thanksgiving
for God's Blessings to the Church in the Saints
departed this Life, a Prayer was added, *That*
they with us, and we with them, may have a
glorious Resurrection ; now those Words, *they*
with us, as seeming to import a Prayer for
the Dead, were left out.

This was the first *High Commission* granted The first
by the Queen for the Reformation of the *High Com-*
Church and Clergy, the Preamble whereof *mission.*

A.D. 1559 sets forth, That God having set the Queen over the Nation, she could not render an Account of that Trust, without endeavouring to propagate the true Religion, with the right Way of worshipping God in all her Dominions: Therefore, she intending to have a general Visitation of her whole Kingdom, empower'd the Commissioners, or any two of them, to examine the true State of all Churches; to suspend or deprive such Clergymen as were unworthy, and to put others into their Places; to proceed against such as were obstinate, by Imprisonment, Church Censure, or any other legal Way. They were to reserve Pensions for such as would not continue in their Benefices, but quitted them by Resignation; and to examine the Condition of all that were imprison'd on the Account of Religion, and to discharge them, and to restore all such to their Benefices as had been unlawfully turn'd out in the late Reign.

The Bishops and Clergy depriv'd for Nonconformity.

THE Visitors having every-where introduc'd the Common-Prayer into the Churches again, made their Report to the Queen of the Obedience given to her Laws and Injunctions; and it appear'd, that of 9400 benefic'd Men in *England*, there were only fourteen Bishops, six Abbots, twelve Deans, twelve Archdeacons, fifteen Heads of Colleges, fifty Prebendaries, and eighty Rectors of Parishes, that lost their Benefices on account of Religion; but there must certainly be a great many more turn'd out afterwards upon other Accounts; for it appears there was such a Deficiency of Parish-Ministers soon after, that the Bishops were obliged to appoint Laymen-Readers in a great many Parishes for want of Ecclesiasticks. For a more particular Account of the Depriva-

Deprivations of the Bishops, &c. their insolent Behaviour to the Queen, and her unparalleled Indulgence to them notwithstanding, I refer the Reader to *Strype's Annals*, Vol. I. p. 140, 146.

NOR were the Papists the Queen's Enemies alone, there were several Zealots of the *Geneva* Stamp that gave her a great deal of Uneasiness, who were not to be satisfy'd with any Model of Church-Government but their own, and look'd upon the *English* Common-Prayer, &c. to be no better than Popery; *threatning the Queen with sudden Destruction*, if she did not enter into their Measures. Of these *Knox*, the furious *Scot*, and *Goodman*, were the most remarkable.

Knox return'd from *Geneva* to *Scotland* in May 1559, and incited the *Scotish* Nobility to undertake the Reformation of Religion there, according to the *Geneva* Plan, without the Concurrence of their Queen; maintaining, that if Kings and Princes refus'd to reform Religion, their Subjects might do it themselves; and he wrote to some of his Acquaintance in *England*, exhorting them not to conform to the *English* Service, which he stil'd *the Dress of Popistry*.* This Man also declar'd against the Government of Women; asserting, that a Woman could not, by the Law of God, sway the Sceptre, and govern Men, to whom they ought to be in Subjection by the Scripture. Other *Geneva* Divines also asserted, that it was lawful to rebel against their Princes, and even to put them to Death, if they apprehended they governed tyrannically. The broaching of which pernicious Doctrines oc-

A.D. 1559

A. 1 Eliz.

The Puritans troublesome to the Government.

Knox incites the Scotish Nobility to rebel, and compel their Queen to alter Religion.

He exhorts the Protestants in England not to conform.

Declares against the Government of Women.

* *Strype's Annals*, Vol. I. p. 122, & seq.

A.D. 1559 *caſion'd many of the English Exiles, who had been of Knox's Congregation of Geneva, to be frown'd on at their Return home. Knox had the Assurance to write to Secretary Cecil, after his Return to Scotland, in Defence of his Doctrine againſt the Government of Women; and in his Letter ſays, That he did no more doubt of the Truth of the Propoſition, than he doubted this was the Voice of God, viz. In Dolour ſhalt thou bear thy Children; tho' he pretends to ſoften the Matter afterwards, where he ſays, he look'd upon Queen Elizabeth to be ſet up by God's extraordinary Providence, and therefore it might be lawful to obey her. And in July this confident Man wrote a Letter to the Queen herſelf, wherein he tells her, She was not to plead her Right to the Crown by Deſcent or Law; and if ſhe did, her Felicity would be ſhort, flatter who liſted; pretending to propheſy her Deſtruction, if ſhe did not adhere to his Notions in relation to the Church, and the Government of Women.*

Which makes the Queen cautious of encouraging the Geneva Divines.

After this Specimen of the Principles of the Geneva Divines, probably all the World will be of Opinion Queen Elizabeth was very much in the right not to give them too much Encouragement; and that ſhe was extremely indulgent, in admitting ſuch Numbers of them into Eccleſiaſtical Preferments as ſhe did (there being no leſs than five hundred of them in Benefices at one time) while they refus'd to conform to the Church eſtabliſh'd by Law, and maintain'd Principles deſtructive both of Church and State. They might, however, poſſibly have been indulg'd by the Government to this Day, if they had not afterwards been found conſpiring againſt the State, and threatened to dethrone her Majeſty, unleſs ſhe would

would come into their Plan of Church-Government ; which, after all, the several Sects could never agree on among themselves.*

While the Queen was busied in re-establishing the Protestant Religion in her Dominions, the *French* and *Spaniards* agreed on Terms of Peace on the other side the Water ; tho' *Philip* shew'd himself so much a Man of Honour, that he would not sign the Treaty till he had given the Queen an Opportunity of making a Peace with *France*, which was at length concluded, on the following Terms, viz. That *France* should be obliged to restore *Calais* to *England* at the end of eight Years ; and if it was not then restor'd, the *French* King should pay to the Crown of *England* 500,000 Crowns, and be obliged to restore the Town, whether the said Sum was paid or not ; and that seven foreign Merchants, not Subjects of *France*, should be engag'd for the Performance of these Articles ; and that till such Security was given, five *French* Noblemen, agreed on, should remain as Hostages in *England*, for the Performance of them. This Treaty was concluded on the 2d of *April*, between *France* and *England* ; and on the same Day, another Treaty was sign'd between the Ministers of *England* and *Scotland*, the principal Articles whereof were, That neither of the Parties should attack the Territories of the other, nor give Aid or Encouragement to any other Power to attack them.

That neither Party should receive or entertain the Rebels or Fugitives of the other :

* It is observable, Mr. *Rapin* says little or nothing in his History of this Reign, of the rebellious Attempts of his Brethren of the *Geneva* Stamp.

A.D. 1559 That the Fortifications of *Aymouth* in *Scot-*
land, and all others that had been erected since
A. 1 Eliz. the Year 1549, should be demolish'd; and that
 all other Rights and Pretensions between the
 two Kingdoms should remain as they were.

But still the Dauphin and Queen of *Scots*
 continued to stile themselves King and Queen
 of *England*, and quarter'd the Arms of *Eng-*
land; nor would be diverted from it, notwith-
 standing the Representations of the *English*
 Ambassador on that Subject, which occasion'd
 Queen *Elizabeth* ever after to look upon the
 Queen of *Scots* as her Enemy, and to treat
 her as such when she fell into her Hands. Nor
 was the *French* King satisfy'd with his Son and
 Daughter's assuming the Title, and bearing the
 Arms of *England*, but was preparing to send
 over another Body of Troops to *Scotland*, in
 order to invade *England* on that side, and make
 a Conquest of it; but was suddenly cut off
 by an unlucky Accident, and all his Projects
 frustrated. *Philip* King of *Spain* having mar-
 ried the Princess *Elizabeth* the *French* King's
 Daughter, and the Duke of *Savoy* his Sister,
 in the Month of *July*, these Weddings were
 celebrated with great Splendor at *Paris*; and,
 amongst other Sports, were Jufts and Tourna-
 ments; at which the *French* King assisting in Per-
 son, he was unfortunately wounded in the Eye by
 the Splinter of a Lance, and died soon after, leav-
 ing his Son *Francis* the Dauphin to succeed him,
 who was at that time under seventeen Years of
 Age; but as the young King and Queen were
 entirely under the Direction of the Duke of
Guise and the Cardinal of *Lorraine*, their Un-
 cles, the Design against *England* was soon af-
 ter reviv'd, *French* Forces were sent over to
Scotland, in order to render them absolute
 Masters

The French
make Pre-
parations
to invade
England
from Scot-
land.

The French
King
kill'd.

Succeeded
by Francis
the Dau-
phin, a Mi-
nor.

The French
continue to
send Forces
to Scotland.

Masters of that Kingdom in the first place, *A.D. 1559*
 that they might afterwards attack *England* *A. 1 Eliz.*
 with Advantage from thence.

The *French* fortify'd *Leith*, and were daily *The Pro-*
 introducing fresh Forces into *Scotland*, till they *testants*
 became very terrible to the Natives, especially *there im-*
 the Protestants, who were now a Majority of *plore the*
 the Kingdom; whereupon they deputed the *Assistance*
 Earl of *Maitland* to *Queen Elizabeth*, entreat- *Queen Elizabeth.*
 ing her to send them a Detachment of *English*
 Troops, to enable them to make Head against
 the *French*, to whom the Queen gave a very
 favourable Answer for the present, furnish'd
 the Malecontents underhand with Troops and
 Money, and in the beginning of the following
 Year concluded a formal Treaty with them.
 But before I proceed in this Relation, it will
 be necessary to take a View of some Occur-
 rences that happen'd in the mean time.

Notwithstanding the Queen's Declaration in *Several*
 Parliament against a married State, *several Matches*
 Foreign Princes address'd themselves to her; *propos'd*
 and first the Archduke of *Austria*, Son to the *to the*
 Emperor. During this Treaty, the Arch- *Queen.*
 duke, who was a *Roman* Catholick, insist'd *The Arch-*
 to have a publick Church allow'd him, where- *duke.*
 in Mass might be celebrated; afterwards he
 agreed to be content with a private Chapel,
 and even promis'd to attend the Queen at Di-
 vine Service after the manner of the Church
 of *England*; but the Queen would hear of no
 other Terms than his conforming entirely to
 the Church of *England*; whereupon the Treaty
 was suspended for some time.

In *September* following, the Prince of *Swe-* *K. of Swe-*
den came to *England*, to renew the Courtship *den*,
 between the King his Brother and her Majesty:
 He was splendidly entertain'd in the *English*
 Court,

A.D. 1559 Court, but dismiss'd without hopes of succeeding, tho' there were not the same Objections to his Brother, as to the Archduke of *Austria*, on account of Religion.

A. 1 Eliz.



Dr. Parker
created
Archbi-
shop of
Canterbury

In the mean time, Archbishop *Parker*, who had so long stood out, and refus'd the See of *Canterbury*, was in a manner compell'd to accept it by the Queen; and a *Congé d'Elire* having been sent down to *Canterbury*, he was elected by the Chapter the first of *August*. On the ninth of *September* a Warrant was seal'd for his Consecration, directed to the Bishops of *Durham*, *Bath and Wells*, *Peterborough*, and *Landaff*, and to *Barlow* and *Scory* (then only stil'd Bishops) requiring them to consecrate him; but three of the Bishops refusing to officiate, another Warrant pass'd the Seals the sixth of *December*, directed to the Bishop of *Landaff*, *Barlow* Bishop elect of *Chichester*, *Scory* Bishop elect of *Hereford*, *Coverdale* late Bishop of *Exeter*, *Hodgskins* Bishop Suffragan of *Bedford*, *John* Suffragan of *Thetford*, and *Bale* Bishop of *Offory*, empowering them, or any four of them, to consecrate him. By vertue whereof *Barlow*, *Scory*, *Coverdale*, and *Hodgskins*, met at the Church of *St. Mary-le-Bow* on the ninth of *December*, where, according to Custom, the *Congé d'Elire*, with the Election and Royal Assent, being prov'd before them, he was consecrated in *Lambeth* Chapel on the 17th of the same Month, by the same Bishops, according to the Book of Ordination made in the Reign of King *Edward VI*, only the Ceremony of putting the Staff in his Hands was left out of the Office.

Other Bi-
shops con-
secrated by
him.

After which the Archbishop consecrated *Grindal* Bishop of *London*, *Cox* Bishop of *Ely*, *Horn* Bishop of *Winchester*, *Sandys* Bishop of *Worcester*,

Worcester, Merick Bishop of Bangor, Young A.D. 1559 Bishop of St. David's, Bullingham Bishop of Lincoln, Jewel Bishop of Salisbury, Davis Bishop of St. Asaph, Guest Bishop of Rochester, Berkley Bishop of Bath and Wells, Bentham Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, Allen Bishop of Exeter, Par Bishop of Peterborough; Barlow and Scory had the Bishopricks of Chichester and Hereford; and some time after Young was translated to the Archbishoprick of York, Pilkington was made Bishop of Durham, and Best Bishop of Carlisle was translated to Chester.

As to the ridiculous Story of the *Nags-Head* Consecrations, I refer the Reader to Bishop *Bramhall*, *Burnet*, *Strype*, &c. where he will find it abundantly confuted. The Instruments of Bishop *Parker's* Election, Consecration, &c. are still preserv'd in *Corpus Christi* College in *Cambridge*, and in the Register of *Canterbury*. The Reader will find a very particular Account of the rest of the Protestant Bishops that were prefer'd at this time, and of the Condition of their Bishopricks, in *Strype's Annals**, and his *Life of Archbishop Parker*, wherein they are sufficiently vindicated from the Calumnies and Aspersions thrown on them by the Papists on one hand, and the Puritans on the other.

A particular Account of the first Bishops in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth.

The Queen having been press'd by the Nobility of *Scotland*, stil'd the *Lords of the Congregation*, to support them against the Tyranny of the *French*, as has been intimated already, she concluded a Treaty with them at *Berwick* on the 27th of *February* 1560; whereby she agreed to take *Hamilton Duke of Chateleraud*,

A Treaty concluded with the Lords of the Congregation in Scotland.

* *Strype's Annals*, Vol. I. p. 155, & seq.

A.D. 1559 and his Adherents, the Lords of the Congregation, under her Protection ; to maintain the Kingdom of *Scotland* in its Rights and Liberties, while the Queen of *Scotland* remain'd married to the King of *France*, and engaged to send Forces into *Scotland* to drive the *French* out of that Kingdom ; but it was provided, that if the *English* took any Places in *Scotland*, they should either be demolish'd, or put into the Hands of the Duke of *Chatelerand*.

The Duke and his Adherents promis'd, on their parts, to join the *English* Forces, and declare such of their Countrymen as join'd with the *French* their Enemies ; to send 3000 Men to the Queen of *England's* Assistance, if she should be invaded in the South ; and to assist her with all their Forces if she should be attack'd in the North ; that the Duke of *Argyle* should assist the *English* in reducing the North of *Ireland* ; and that the Duke of *Chatelerand* and his Adherents should give Hostages to the Queen of *England* for the Performance of their Part of the Articles.

The *French* propose to invade *England*. In the mean time, *Martagues* the *French* General who brought the last Reinforcement to *Scotland*, propos'd the Invasion of *England* directly, and proclaiming *Mary* Queen of *Scots* Queen of that Kingdom ; being of Opinion, that all the *English* Catholicks would immediately have join'd him ; but the Queen Regent looking upon the *French* Army to be too inconsiderable for such an Undertaking, they were employ'd in pursuing the Lords of the Congregation into the Mountains ; when, on a sudden, the *English* Fleet appear'd at Sea, and brought a Reinforcement of Troops to the Lords, and another Army under the Command of the Lord *Grey*, entered *Scotland* by the

the way of *Berwick* ; whereupon the Lords of the Congregation assembled all their Forces, and having join'd the *English* Army, the *French* Generals thought fit to retire and shut themselves up in *Leith*, where they were soon after besieged, and the Queen Regent retir'd to the Castle of *Edinburgh*, in expectation of a further Reinforcement of Troops, which were embarking in *France*, under the Command of the Duke *D'Elbæuf* ; but these being dispers'd in a Storm, and driven back, the *English* and *Scots* carried on the Siege of *Leith* without Interruption.

A.D. 1560

A. 2 Eliz.

The French

retire on the Approach of the *English* Army, and are besieged in *Leith*.

The *French* Ministry hereupon sent an Embassy to Queen *Elizabeth*, representing the ill Example of supporting Rebels against their lawful Sovereign ; the Ambassadors protesting at the same time, that their Master would look upon it as a Breach of the Peace between *France* and *England*, if she did not withdraw her Forces from thence : To which the Queen answer'd, that their Master had first broken the Peace by sending Forces to *Scotland*, with an Intent to invade *England*, and their Queen's taking upon her the Title and Arms of *England* ; whereupon the *French* finding her Majesty was not to be frighten'd with their Menaces, offer'd to deliver up *Calais*, if she would withdraw her Troops ; but she answer'd, she should not purchase that pitiful Fishing-town at so high a rate. Still the Siege of *Leith* continu'd, being bravely defended by a numerous Garrison ; but as there was no possibility to relieve the Town, and the *French* Ministry standing in need of all their Troops at home, having discover'd a Conspiracy among the *Hugonots*, to take the Administration out of the Hands of the *Guises*,

The French offer to deliver up *Calais*, if the Queen would withdraw her Troops from *Scotland*.

A.D. 1560 the Heads of the Popish Party ; they propos'd the entering into a Treaty of Peace with the Queen of *England*, and offer'd a Truce till it should be concluded ; which being consented to, the Plenipotentiaries of *France* and *England* met in the City of *Edinburgh* ; during which Negotiation the Queen Regent of *Scotland*, Mother to the Queen of *France*, dy'd in the Castle of *Edinburgh* on the 10th of *June*.

A. 2 Eliz.
They propose a Truce, which is accepted.
The Queen Regent of *Scotland* dies.

At the opening of this Treaty, it seems, the Ministers of *France* objected against treating with the Lords of the Congregation, because they were Subjects to the Queen ; however, by the Mediation of the Ministers of *England*, this Difficulty was got over, and they agreed at length to make the following important *Concessions*, instead of a Treaty (*viz.*)

Concessions made by the Q. of Scots to the Lords of the Congregation. That the *French* Forces should return home in 24 Days, in Ships provided by the Queen of *England*. That the Fortifications of *Leith* and *Dunbar* should be demolish'd. That the King and Queen of *France* and *Scotland*, should grant the Lords of the Congregation, and their Adherents, a General Pardon, to be ratified by the States of *Scotland*, and the King and Queen in *August* next.

A formal Treaty was at the same time concluded between *France* and *England*, of the following Tenor (*viz.*)

Articles of Peace between France and England. That the King and Queen of *Scotland*, should not for the future, assume the Title of King and Queen of *England* or *Ireland*, or bear the Arms of those Kingdoms.

That the Acts and Instruments, wherein they were so stil'd, should be alter'd ; and that the King and Queen of *France* and *Scotland* should

should duly perform the Concessions above-A.D. 1560
 mention'd made to the *Scotish* Lords.

Soon after the Conclusion of the Treaty, the *French* and *English* Forces evacuated the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and the Fortifications of *Leith* and *Dunbar* were demolish'd; the General Pardon was proclaim'd, and confirm'd by the States, who also made several Laws for the Establishment of the Protestant Religion, which were afterwards confirm'd by the King and Queen. However, King *Francis* and his Queen, did not think fit to ratify the Treaty concluded at *Edinburgh*, between the Ministers of *England* and *France*; being apprehensive, as some Writers suggest, that the first Article of that Treaty would exclude the Queen of *Scotland* from making any Claim to the Crown of *England*, even after the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*.

A. 2 Eliz.



The Protestant Religion established in *Scotland* by Law. The *French* refuse to ratify the Treaty with *England*.

In the mean time, the Duke of *Holstein*, The Duke of *Holstein*
 Uncle to the King of *Denmark*, came over into *England*, and made his Addresses to the Queen, but was put off with the same Answer as other Pretenders were, viz. That she had no Thoughts of Marriage. The *Scots* soon after propos'd the Queen's marrying the Earl of *Arran*, Son to the Duke of *Chatele-land* and nearly related to that Crown, whereby he might strengthen the Protestant Interest, and unite the two Kingdoms; but this Suit was rejected: There were also several of the Queen's own Subjects, who entertain'd Thoughts of being happy in their Sovereign's Affections: Among whom were the Earl of *Arundel*, a Nobleman of an ancient Family, but advanc'd in Years. Sir *George Picering* was another Gentleman of a good Family, an elegant Taste, and one who had acquitted

courts Q. Elizabeth.

The Earl of *Arran* propos'd to the Queen for a Husband.

Several *English* Noblemen in hopes of obtaining her.

A.D. 1560 acquitted himself well in several foreign Negotiations; but none of the Queen's Subjects enjoy'd so much of her Favour as *Robert Dudley*, the youngest Son of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, whose Shape, Mien, and outward Accomplishments, seem'd to have captivated the Queen's Heart: In the very first Year of her Reign, she made him Master of the Horse, and Knight of the Garter, and afterwards created him Earl of *Leicester*, continuing to heap her Favours upon him for a considerable time; but she was not however so far taken with his Address, as to admit him Partner of her Bed; nor was she entirely guided by him in her Councils. The Lord Keeper *Bacon*, and Secretary *Cecil* seem to have had the greatest Influence on the Queen in Matters of State; however, such was the Ascendant *Dudley* had at Court, for some time, that most People, who had any Expectations from thence, made their Application to this Favourite.

Misunderstandings between the King of *Spain* and the Queen.

The Lord Viscount *Montague*, Ambassador in *Spain*, being order'd by her Majesty to propose the renewing the ancient Alliance between the two Crowns at this time, was answer'd very coldly by *Philip*, That he could not approve of the Alterations in Religion the Queen had made in *England*, or of her intermeddling in the Affairs of *Scotland*, without acquainting him with it; and to shew, that she was not for the future to expect any great Friendship from him, he return'd back the Ensigns of the Garter by the Ambassador. The Queen refusing soon after to permit some of her Subjects of the Popish Religion to remain in the *Low Countries* and enjoy their Estates, *Philip* was so exasperated, that he

sue'd

suffer'd several *English* Merchants to be apprehended by the Inquisition in *Spain*, and some of them were burnt; however, he seem'd still to make a Merit of it, that he had hitherto prevented the Pope's publishing the Bull of Excommunication against the Queen, tho' press'd to it by the Court of *France* in behalf of the Queen of *Scots*, who laid claim to her Dominions; but this *Philip* was induc'd to do, more to serve his own Interests, than to oblige Queen *Elizabeth*; dreading nothing more, than to see *England* united to the Crown of *France*; nor does Pope *Pius IV.* himself seem very forward to publish the Bull of Excommunication, and proceed to Extremities against her, for we find him at this time, inviting her Majesty to be reconcil'd to the Church of *Rome*, and even offering to repeal her Mother's Divorce, to confirm the *English* Liturgy, and to permit the Communion to be receiv'd by the Laity in both Kinds; but the Queen appearing determin'd to make no Concessions to the See of *Rome*, or alter the Religion establish'd. The Pope sent several Jesuits and Friars * into the Kingdom, ordering them to assume the Characters of Protestant Divines; to preach the Doctrines of *Calvin* in some Places, and those of *Luther* in others; to start wild and extravagant Notions, and thereby endeavour to divide and distract the Church of *England*: The Names of several of these Missionaries are to be met with in *Strype's Annals*; and it appears, that the Queen was oblig'd to publish a Proclamation, to prohibit Anabaptists and other Hereticks

A.D. 1560
A. 2 Eliz.
~

The Pope endeavours to be reconciled to the Queen.

Jesuits sent to preach in *England* to disturb the Establish'd Church.

Proclamation against Anabaptists.

* *Strype's Annals*. Vol. I. p. 220.

A.D. 1560 coming into *England* at this time. Another Proclamation was issu'd, forbidding the People to destroy the Monuments in Churches; And against demolishing Monuments in Churches. for these could not escape the Fury of some Zealots, who look'd upon it as Idolatry to retain any kind of Images or Pictures in Churches, tho' never intended to be worship'd; which Opinion possibly they took, either from the *Jews* or *Turks*, who are extremely scrupulous in these Matters; but nothing gave so much Offence to the Puritans of those Times, as the Queen's retaining a Crucifix in her own Chapel, purely to put her in mind of our Saviour's Passion, which they never left clamouring against, till she disus'd it, tho' she had order'd them to be remov'd out of all other Churches and Chapels, that they might no longer be the Objects of the ignorant People's Adoration.

The *Irish*
in Rebel-
lion.

Some Regiments were sent to *Ireland* this Year, to reduce *Shan O Neal*, who was in Rebellion there, and he thought fit to make his Submission the following Year: In the mean time the Queen call'd in the Coin, which had been adulterated by her Father *Henry VIII.* and restor'd it to its Purity; settled the Price of Provisions, that the Poor might not be impos'd upon; repair'd and encreas'd the Royal Navy, and fortified the Towns on the Borders of *Scotland*.

Civil Wars
in *France*.

While the Queen was busied in these Regulations at home, great Alterations happen'd in *France*. The Protestants, who were now very numerous in that Kingdom, being persecuted with great Fury by the *Guises*, who had the Administration of the Government in their Hands, form'd a Conspiracy to seize them at *Amboise*, where the King then resided, and to place

place the King of *Navarre*, and the Prince of *Conde*, of the Blood Royal, at the Head of the Government, these Princes being deem'd Favourers of the Protestant Religion; but this Conspiracy was discover'd before it could be executed, and no less than twelve hundred put to death, who were suppos'd to be concern'd in the Plot. Not long after, the States of the Kingdom being assembled, the Prince of *Conde*, who appear'd amongst them, was apprehended, and condemn'd to die, for being concern'd in the late Plot, and would infallibly have been executed, if *Francis* the *French* King had not died on the 5th of *December*, and prevented it; but by this Event, the Prince obtain'd his Liberty. *Francis* was succeeded by his younger Brother *Charles IX*; whereupon *Katherine de Medicis*, his Mother, took upon her the Regency, by the Consent of the King of *Navarre*, first Prince of the Blood. She carried it with a pretty even Hand between the two great Parties of Protestants and Papists, that at this time contended for the Empire, sometimes favouring one Side, and then the other, as her Interest required. The *Guises* and *Montmerency* the Constable were at the Head of the Papists, and the Prince of *Conde* and the Admiral *Coligny* at the Head of the Protestants; the King of *Navarre* not joining either Party at first.

A.D. 1560
A. 2 Eliz.

The Prince of *Conde* condemn'd to die.

Francis the *French* King dies. Succeeded by *Charles IX*.
Kath. de Medicis Regent.

France being thus divided, and on the point of entering into a Civil War, the Queen of *England* had very little to fear from thence; and what was still more advantageous to *Elizabeth*, *Katherine* of *Medicis* had no manner of Regard for her Daughter-in-law the *Scottish* Queen, but rather studied to do her ill Offices, which

She does not favour the *Scottish* Queen.

A.D. 1560 which *Mary* was so sensible of, that she immediately resolv'd to leave *France* and return to *Scotland*, and that Queen *Elizabeth* might be induc'd to be reconcil'd to her, and not oppose her Return, she laid down the Title and Arms of *England*, which she had hitherto borne.

Queen of
Scots for-
bears stil-
ling herself
Queen of
England.
Q. *Eliz.*
insists she
should for-
mally re-
nounce
that Title.

The Queen of *England*, however, was not satisfied with the Queen of *Scots* barely quitting that Title for the present, but order'd the Earl of *Bedford*, who was sent to the Court of *France*, with Compliments of Condolance on the Death of *Francis*, to press the Queen of *Scots* to ratify the Treaty of *Edinburgh*, whereby she renounc'd the Title of Queen of *England* in exprefs Terms; but *Mary* answer'd, that Treaty concerning her principally as Queen of *Scotland*, she could not return any positive Answer till she had consulted the States of that Kingdom.

The Prior of St. *Andrew's*, *James Stuart*, Brother to the Queen of *Scots*, coming over to *France* about this time, to make the Queen a Tender of his Service; she order'd him to return to *Scotland*, and prepare Things for her Reception, empowering him to assemble the States, and enact such Laws, as should be for the Benefit of the Kingdom, by virtue of which, she caus'd the Reformation to be establish'd, or at least to be tolerated, by Law in *Scotland*, and the Monasteries to be dissolv'd.

The Re-
form'd Re-
ligion esta-
blish'd in
Scotland.

And now the Queen of *Scots* being about to return to her own Kingdom, sent to Queen *Elizabeth* for a Safe-Conduct, that she might not be interrupted in her Passage; to which *Elizabeth* answer'd, That if she would ratify the Treaty of *Edinburgh*, and in pursuance thereof,

thereof, renounce her Claim to *England*, she A.D. 1561
 was at Liberty to pass thro' her Kingdom, A. 3 Eliz.
 where she would be receiv'd with the highest
 Marks of her Esteem and Affection; but this
Mary again refus'd till she had consulted her No-
 bility, and ventur'd home by Sea, without a Pass
 from *Elizabeth*, arriving in *Scotland* on the Q. Mary
 21st of *August* 1561, where she found the arrives in
 Reform'd Religion in a manner establish'd, Scotland.
 and tho' she was a zealous Catholick herself,
 she still committed the Administration of Af-
 fairs to her natural Brother *James Stuart*, the
 Head of the Protestant Party, creating him
 soon after Earl of *Murray*. *Mary* also sent Sends an
 the Earl of *Maitland* to Queen *Elizabeth*, to Embassy to
 notify her Arrival, who carried with him a Let- Q. Eliz.
 ter from the Nobility, intimating, that the
 readiest way to establish a good Understand-
 ing between the two Kingdoms, would be to
 declare *Mary* presumptive Heir of *England*. The Scots
 To which *Elizabeth* answer'd, That the de- desire their
 claring a Successor to her Kingdoms, was the Queen
 way rather to dissolve than settle a good Un- may be de-
 derstanding; that People were apt to court the clar'd pre-
 rising Sun; and should she consent to settle sumptive
 the Crown on the Queen of *Scots*, she should Heir of
 destroy her best Security, and dig her own England.
 Grave; and she wonder'd, now the Queen of
Scots was return'd, she deferr'd to disclaim all
 Title to her Crown, as she had promis'd to
 do, and again demanded the Ratification of
 the Treaty of *Edinburgh*. The Reason Queen Elizabeth
Elizabeth insisted so strenuously on the Ratifi- insists on
 cation of this Treaty, and the Queen of *Scots* Mary's re-
 Renunciation of the Crown of *England*, which nouncing
 was one of the Articles of it; was, because her Claim
 she was conscious, that all the Popish Princes to England.
 of *Europe* look'd upon herself as illegiti-
 mate,

A.D. 1561 mate, and that the Queen of *Scots* was in reality Queen of *England* at present ; and *Mary's* refusing to gratify her in this Instance, gave *Elizabeth* a Suspicion, that she had laid a Plot to usurp her Throne by the Assistance of the Pope and the Catholick Princes.

The Queen
invited a-
gain to be
reconcil'd
to Rome.

The Queen was again press'd this Year by Letters from his Holiness, and several Popish Princes, to return into the Bosom of the Church, and refer Matters of Religion to the Council of *Trent*, which they propos'd should be open'd again for her Satisfaction, and desir'd she would send her Ministers thither ; the Pope also sent the Abbot *Montinego* his Nuncio to the Queen on the same Errand, but he thought fit to stay in *Flanders* till he had demanded Leave of the Queen to come over, which was never granted him ; however, the Queen in answer to some of the Letters she had receiv'd, said, she would be very glad to see a General Council assembled, but could not look upon one summon'd by the Pope as such, and therefore would send no Minister to any such Council ; which Resolution of the Queen's, 'tis said, extremely disgusted the King of *Spain*. And as the Queen was con-

The Queen
provides a-
gainst an
Attack
from the
Popish
Powers.

scious, that neither this Prince, or any other Popish Power, were her Friends, she endeavour'd by all imaginable Ways to engage the Hearts of her own Subjects, that she might depend on them, if she should be attack'd ; she took Care, that Justice was every where duly administer'd ; and that all People were punctually paid, that had any Dependance on the Court ; particularly, she order'd, that the Monks, who had been turn'd out in the Reign of her Father *Henry VIII.* should duly receive their Pensions from those, who were possess'd

possess'd of the Abby Lands. She also order'd Gun-powder to be made in *England* at this time; cast abundance of Great Guns; stor'd her Arsenals with small Arms; and took all proper Measures to defend herself, in case she should be attack'd; and this without burdening her Subjects by any Taxes. Such was her frugal Management, that she did all these Things out of her own Revenue. The Money that other Princes lavish'd away upon Favourites and greedy Courtiers, and in Shows and Festivals, she apply'd to the Support of the Government, which extremely endear'd her to her Subjects; and she was so fortunate this Year, to discover a Copper-mine near *Reswick* in *Cumberland*, sufficient to supply the Demands of the whole Nation in that valuable Metal.

A.D. 1561

A. 3 Eliz.

And yet levies no Taxes.

Her extraordinary Oeconomy.

A Copper Mine discover'd.

Still the King of *Sweden* continu'd his Courtship, it appears; for he made the Queen a Present of fine Horses this Year, and several other Things of Value, and intended to have come over in Person, if the Queen had not written to him to desire him to put off his intended Voyage: Some Persons of inferior Quality about the Court, who pretended to know her Majesty's Mind, had inform'd this Prince, that he would infallibly succeed if he came to *England*, which being discover'd in time, some of the Authors of this Advice were taken up, who confess'd they had done it to get a little Money of the King of *Sweden*'s Agents.

The King of *Sweden* continues his Courtship.

Some zealous Reformers about this time procur'd an Order for the defacing all Pictures remaining in Churches, and writing Passages of Scriptures in the room of them; and the Queen shew'd so much regard to this Set of Men, that

Pictures in Churches defac'd.

A.D. 1561 that she refus'd to use a Common-Prayer Book, which her Chaplain had brought her, with the
A. 3 Eliz. Cuts in it.

St. Paul's
burnt by
Lightning.

Our Historians also relate, that this Year there happen'd a great deal of very terrible Thunder and Lightning; particularly on the 4th of *June*, when the Lightning set fire to the Spire of *St. Paul's Cathedral*, and consum'd it with all the Roof of the Church, only the Arches and Walls, which were of Stone, remain'd standing: *St. Paul's*, before this Accident, was the highest Building in the World, if we reckon to the Top of the Spire, which was 520 Feet from the Ground. The Roof of the Church, by the Contribution of the Queen, and other pious People, was repair'd before the End of the Year, so as Divine Service might be perform'd in it, but the Spire was never erected afterwards.

A.D. 1562

A. 4 Eliz.

A Plot against the Queen in favour of the Queen of Scots.

The Poles imprison'd

The Pope's Emissaries, and the Agents of *France* and *Spain*, were very busy the beginning of the following Year, in fomenting a Conspiracy in *England*, in favour of the Queen of Scots, of which the *Guises*, the Heads of the Popish Faction in *France*, were the principal Contrivers: *Arthur Pole*, and his Brother *Edmond*, Grandsons of the Duke of *Clarence*, with *Anthony Fortescue*, were apprehended for being concern'd in it; but as they were not try'd till the Spring following, I shall defer giving a further Account of this Plot here.

The Countess of *Lenox* confin'd.

Margaret Countess of Lenox, Niece to *Henry VIII.*, with her Husband the Earl of *Lenox*, were also confin'd for holding a Correspondence with the Queen of Scots. And the Lady *Katherine Grey*, Sister to *Jane Grey* beheaded

beheaded in the late Reign, was committed to the *Tower*, for having enter'd into a Marriage Contract with the Earl of *Hertford* (by whom she was big with Child) without the Queen's Leave. She was the next Heir to the Crown, according to the Will of *Henry VIII*, which made *Elizabeth* very jealous of her. The Earl also was committed to the *Tower*, on his Return from *France*; and the Lady being deliver'd of a Son, the Earl found Means, by bribing his Guards, to see his Lady again, after which she was with Child by him a second time; but as they could produce no Certificate of their Marriage, the Queen caus'd the Archbishop of *Canterbury* to give Sentence against them, That their Cohabitation was unlawful, and that they ought to be punish'd; against which Sentence, *John Hales*, a learned Civilian, argu'd, *That their very Consent made them Man and Wife*, for which he was committed. The Lady being afterwards deliver'd of another Son in the *Tower*, the Queen was so incens'd at the Governor, for suffering the Earl and the Lady *Katherine* to come together, that she turn'd him out and committed him, and afterwards caus'd the Earl of *Hertford* to be impeach'd in the *Star-Chamber*. 1. For having debauch'd a Virgin of the Blood-royal in the Queen's Palace. 2. For having broke Prison: And 3. For having abus'd the Lady a second time. To which, the Earl protested, that he was actually married: He acknowledg'd however, that he had pass'd thro' some Doors of the Prison to pay his Lady the Respects and Obligations of a Husband; and appeal'd from time to time, against the Archbp's Sentence for several Years (tho' at length he was prevail'd on to retract the

A.D. 1562

A. 4 Eliz.

The Lady

*Katherine**Grey* im-

prison'd

for con-

tracting

Marriage

with the

Earl of

Hertford.

They are

divorc'd

after hav-

ing two

Sons.

The Earl

impeach'd.

His De-

fence.

A.D. 1562 the same.) He was fin'd 5000 *l.* for every Offence mention'd in the Articles. The Lady *several Years* afterwards, on her Death-bed, begg'd the Queen's Pardon for having married without her Knowledge, and recommended her Husband and Children to the Queen's Mercy; from whence it is generally concluded, that the Earl and the Lady *Grey* were legally married, and indeed their Children afterwards inherited their private Estate, tho' they never succeeded to the Crown, in pursuance of the Statute and King *Henry's* Will, which limited the Succession to them. Queen *Elizabeth*, 'tis said, was so incens'd to the last degree, to see this Lady the Mother of two Sons, who, if they had been acknowledg'd legitimate, must have succeeded to the Crown, and perhaps was jealous they might be set up against her during her Life; the Doctrine, exploding the Government of Women, prevailing pretty much at this time; however this severe Usage of so near a Relation, seems to be one of the greatest Blemishes of the Queen's Reign.

Q. Eliz.
look'd up-
on *K. Grey*
as her Ri-
val, which
occasion'd
this Seve-
rity.

An Inter-
view a-
greed on
between
the Queens
of *Scots*
and *Engl.*
But put off.

Notwithstanding the Practices of the *Guises*, and other Popish Princes, to advance the Queen of *Scots* to the Throne of *England*, there appears to be a more than ordinary Intimacy between the two Queens at this time; *Cambden* relates, that *Elizabeth* and *Mary* had appointed an Interview to adjust Differences between them; but that afterwards the Queen of *Scots* was advis'd not to put herself into the Power of the Queen of *England*, unless she might first be declar'd Heir of that Kingdom by Act of Parliament. Not long after, the Cardinal of *Lorrain* propos'd to the Emperor

Emperor the marrying of his second Son, the Archduke of *Austria*, to the Queen of *Scots*, for whom he, and his Brother the Duke of *Guise*, engag'd to obtain the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*; of which Queen *Elizabeth* receiving Advice, wrote to the Queen of *Scots*, that if she listen'd to this Advice of the *Guises*, the profess'd Enemies of the Crown of *England*, in this Match, it would not only dissolve the good Understanding between them, but probably exclude her from all Hopes of succeeding to the Crown of *England*, and advis'd her to make Choice of such a Husband out of the *English* Nobility, as might be acceptable to her, and lay the Foundation of a lasting Peace between the two Kingdoms; for till then, she should not limit the Succession of the Crown.

A.D. 1562
A. 4 Eliz.
The *Guises* propose a Match between the Queen of *Scots* and the Archduke of *Austria*.
Q. Eliz. writes to her to decline it and marry an *English* Man.

In the meantime, the *Guises*, having massacred several Protestants in *France*, these People had recourse to Arms, and surpriz'd the City of *Orleans*; but being unsuccessful afterwards, they sent the *Vidame* of *Chartres* to implore the Queen of *England's* Protection, who concluded a Treaty with them; wherein it was stipulated, That in Consideration the Protestants had agreed to put *Havre de Grace* into her Hands, she would furnish them with a hundred thousand Crowns, and a Body of six thousand Men: Soon after which, she publish'd a Declaration, setting forth, That she did not send these Troops to *Normandy*, with an Intent to recover that Province, the Inheritance of her Ancestors; but to preserve the *French* King in his Minority from the Practices of the *Guises*, and deliver his Subjects from Tyranny and Oppression: That her own Security also prompted her to defend

The Civil War in *France*.

The Protestants implore Assistance of *Q. Eliz.*

A.D. 1562 *Normandy*; inasmuch as the Design of the Duke of *Guise* was, after he had extirpated the Protestants of *France*, and subdu'd that Province, to invade *England* from thence. The Queen having order'd the Payment of the hundred thousand Crowns to the Prince of *Conde*, and sent the six thousand Men to his Assistance, under the Command of *Ambrose Dudley*, Earl of *Warwick*, in pursuance of the abovesaid Agreement; that Earl, according to his Orders, put three thousand Men into *Diepe*, and the rest into *Havre de Grace*; soon after which, he receiv'd Advice of a Battle, fought between the Hugonots and Catholicks, near *Dreux*, and where both Parties claim'd the Victory, tho' neither had much Reason to boast; and as the Prince of *Conde*, General of the Hugonots was made Prisoner by the Catholicks, so *Montmerency*, the Catholick General, was taken by the Hugonots. But to return to *England*; the Papiests having dispers'd abundance of scurrilous Libels reflecting on the Protestant Religion, the celebrated Dr. *Jewel*, Bishop of *Salisbury*, publish'd his famous *Apology for the Church of England*, which was translated into several Languages, and gave universal Satisfaction to the Impartial both at home and abroad.

She sends them Money and Forces.

Battle of *Dreux*.

Bishop *Jewel's* *Apology for the Church of England*.

A.D. 1563 The Parliament, assembling on the 12th of *January*, address'd the Queen again to marry, and in the mean time to limit the Succession of the Crown, dreading the Consequences of her dying without Issue, before such a Settlement should be made. To which the Queen return'd no Answer at first: However, she sent the Commons word, on the 16th of *February*, that she had not forgot their Petition; but advis'd the Young-heads to follow

A. 5 Eliz.
The Parliament meets.
Addresses the Queen to marry.

follow the Example of the Antients (in for-
bearing to press this Subject, I presume) and
at the latter End of the Session, she sent them
a Message, That the Matter being of Importance,
she must take further Time to advise about it.

A.D. 1563

A. 5 Eliz.

The first Act that pass'd in this Session was,
*For the Assurance of the Queen's Power over all
Estates*; whereby all Persons maintaining the
Pope's Authority, were to incur a *Præmunire*
for the first Offence, and be adjudg'd guilty of
High Treason for the second Offence; and all
Persons, Ecclesiastical or Temporal, in any Be-
nefice or Office, were oblig'd to take the Oath
of Supremacy, the Refusers to incur a *Præ-*
munire for the first Refusal, and to be adjudg'd
guilty of High Treason for the second Refusal;
provided, that the Oath be not tender'd a se-
cond time to any but to Ecclesiastics having
Preferments, or that have had such Prefer-
ments, and the Officers of the Ecclesiastical
Courts.

An Act for
maintain-
ing the
Queen's
SupremacyThe Oath
of Supre-
macy re-
quir'd.

By 5 *Eliz. cap. 15.* It is enacted, that
Persons publishing false Prophecies, to the In-
tent to incite Sedition and Rebellion, or make
any Disturbance in the Realm, shall suffer one
Year's Imprisonment, and forfeit the Sum of
10 *l.* and for the second Offence, shall be im-
prison'd for Life, and forfeit all their Goods
and Chattels.

An Act a-
gainst false
Prophecies.

By 5 *Eliz. cap. 16.* It is enacted, that if
any Person use, practise, or exercise any In-
vocations or Conjurations of wicked Spirits,
for any Intent or Purpose; or practise Inchant-
ments, Charms, or Sorcery, whereby any Per-
son shall be kill'd or destroy'd, he shall suffer
as a Felon without Benefit of Clergy.

An Act a-
gainst
Witchcraft

A.D. 1563 The 5 Eliz. cap. 23. is an Act for the due Execution of the *Writ de Excommunicato Capiendo*; and Forfeitures are inflicted on the Party not surrendering himself upon Proclamation.

Writ de Excom^o Capiendo.
The Clergy grant 6 s. in the Pound. Cap. 24. is a Confirmation of a Subsidy of six Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy, to be levy'd on their Spiritual Promotions, within the Term of three Years.

The Commons grant a large Supply. Declaring their Inducements for it. By the 5 Eliz. cap. 4. The Commons, in Consideration, 1. Of the Queen's restoring the Church of *England*, and delivering them from a Foreign Power. 2. Of her reducing the Nation to a State of Peace, which she found in War. 3. Of her delivering the Realm from an Invasion that was intended, and preserving the Liberties of *Scotland*. 4. Of her repairing the Fortifications, and furnishing the Nation with Arms and Ammunition, and providing a Royal Fleet for their Defence. 5. Of restoring the Coin to its Purity. And lastly, In Consideration of her raising Forces in Defence of the *French* King against his discontented Subjects; and, of the Justice, and other blessed Effects of her Majesty's Government. They grant her two Fifteenths and Tenths, to be levy'd of their moveable Goods and Chattels, to be paid within the Space of two Years. And for the Considerations aforesaid, they also grant her Majesty, a Subsidy of two Shillings and eight Pence in the Pound, to be paid at two several Payments, by all Persons, out of their Goods and Chattels; and four Shillings in the Pound out of their Lands, &c. to be paid at two Payments.

A Tenth and Fifteenth described. Mr. *Cambden*, in mentioning this Act of Supply, for the Information of his Readers, observes, that a Tenth and Fifteenth, is a certain

tain Tax on every City, Borough and Town; A.D. 1563
 not upon every Man in particular, but a gene-
 ral Sum, in Proportion to the Tenth or Fif- A. 5 Eliz.
 teenth Part of the Wealth of the respective
Places. And a Subsidy is a Tax, impos'd A Subsidy
 on every *Single Person*, according to the Value defin'd.
 of his Goods and Lands. Give me leave to
 add, that this, and the Supply granted in the
 first of this Queen, were the largest, that I
 have ever observ'd to have been granted to
 the Crown before this Time, to be paid within
 so short a Space of Time, by the Laity. The These the
 Subsidy on *Goods and Chattels*, amounting to greatest
 two Shillings and eight Pence in the Pound, Taxes that
 and that on Lands and Tenements, to four ever were
 Shillings in the Pound; but then it must be rais'd.
 consider'd, that the Queen's Occasions for
 Money, appear to have been many and great;
 from the Preamble of the Act; and there were
 no other Taxes levied for the Space of five
 Years.

While the Parliament was sitting, the Con-
 vocation review'd the Articles of Religion,
 and reduc'd them to the Number of XXXIX,
 being the same we have at present.

When the Queen sent the Earl of *Warwick*
 with six thousand Men to *Normandy*, as has
 been related, she order'd *Chaloner*, her Am-
 bassador in *Spain*, to inform King *Philip*,
 that this Army was intended to prevent the
Guises transplanting the War into *England*,
 and to take possession of *Havre de Grace*,
 which had been deliver'd up to her, till she
 should receive Satisfaction for *Calais* (for the
 Prince of *Conde* had stipulated to deliver up
Calais, if he did not repay the 100,000
 Crowns that were lent him.) To which *Phi-*
lip answer'd, If *Calais* was the whole De-
 mand,

A.D. 1563 mand, he was satisfi'd ; but if it was made a Religious War, he must abide by the old Religion ; and the *Spanish* Ambassador in *England* frequently told the Queen, that the King of *Spain* his Master, neither could, nor would desert his Brother, the King of *France* : To whom, her Majesty made no other Reply, than that *Every Man must serve his own House, and I mine.* About the same time, the *French* Hostages, which had been given for the Payment of Five hundred thousand Pounds, and Restoration of *Calais*, finding a War upon the Point of breaking out between the two Kingdoms, attempted to make their Escape, but their Design was discovered and prevented.

Tryal of
the *Poles*,
and their
Confederates
for
High
Treason.

While the Parliament sat this Spring, the Tryals of *Arthur Pole*, *Edmond Pole*, *Anthony Fortescue*, and others already mentioned to be charg'd with High Treason against the Queen, came on.

The Indictment sets forth, That they had conspir'd to depose Queen *Elizabeth*, and set the Queen of *Scots* upon the Throne, and to levy War against her Majesty, within the Realm ; and that to effect these Treasons, they intended to go over to *France*, and require Aid of Queen *Katherine de Medicis*, Regent ; of the King of *Navarre*, and the Duke of *Guise*, the Queen's avow'd Enemy ; and to propose a Marriage between *Edmond Pole* and the Queen of *Scots* : That they design'd to land in *Wales* the following Year, with a *French* Army, consisting of five thousand Men, and to proclaim the Queen of *Scots* Queen of *England* ; who, upon her Advancement to the Throne, was to create the said *Arthur Pole* Duke of *Clarence* : That *Prestall* and *Cosyn*, two others of the Conspirators, had
invok'd

invok'd an evil Spirit to assist them in perpetrating their Treasons, and did also consult with the *French* and *Spanish* Ambassadors how to effect them : That *Preſtall* and *Cofyn* actually went to *France* ; and that *Fortescue* had hir'd a Boat to convey him and the rest of the Conspirators thither.

The Prisoners were all found guilty of High Treason ; and it appear'd, that the Plot was encourag'd by the *French* and *Spanish* Ambassadors, who had their Instructions from the Duke of *Guise*, the prime Mover in all Plots against her Majesty ; however, the Queen was pleas'd to grant all the Prisoners her Pardon.

But to return to the War in *France*. After the Battel of *Dreux*, the Duke of *Guise* took upon him the Command of the Catholick Army, and laid Siege to *Orleans*, in which the Hugonots had their grand Magazine. On the other hand, the Admiral *Coligny*, General of the Hugonot Army, after the Prince of *Conde* was made Prisoner, not being in a Condition to raise the Siege of *Orleans*, by way of Diversion, invested *Caen*, and took it, together with *Bayeux*, and several other Places in *Normandy*, by the Assistance of the *English* Auxiliaries : The Duke of *Guise*, in the mean time, having reduc'd *Orleans* to the last Extremity, was shot by one *Poltrot*, said to have been employ'd by the Admiral to assassinate him, nor would the Catholicks ever be persuaded to the contrary, notwithstanding all his Endeavours to clear himself of that Fact ; but however that was, upon the Death of the Duke of *Guise*, the Prince of *Conde* being offer'd his Liberty by the Queen Regent, who gave him Hopes also of marrying the Queen of *Scots* ;

A.D. 1563

A. 5 Eliz.

Orleans
besieg'd.The Hu-
gonots take
Caen, &c.
by the As-
sistance of
the *English*.
The Duke
of *Guise*
assassinated

A.D. 1563 *Scots*; he on a sudden, deserted his old Friends the *English*, and made his Peace with the Regent, without so much as mentioning his Allies, and both Papists and Hugonots join'd their Forces to drive the Earl of *Warwick* out of *France*: Whereupon the Queen of *England* fitted out a large Fleet, and sent over a further Reinforcement of Troops, determining to keep *Havre de Grace* till *Calais* should be restor'd her, as had been stipulated; but the Plague carrying off great Part of the Garrison of *Havre*, and some of the Troops sent thither being cast away in a Storm, the Queen order'd the Earl of *Warwick* to surrender the Place, which he did, after a brave Defence, upon Condition that he should be at Liberty to withdraw the Garrison, and carry off every Thing that belong'd to the *English*; but these Troops unhappily brought the Plague to *England* with them, which spread it self all over the Kingdom, and destroy'd in *London* alone, upwards of twenty thousand People.

A. 5 Eliz.

The Papists and Protestants make Peace in *France*, and drive out the *English*.

The Plague obliges the *English* to surrender *Havre de Grace*.

A Truce between *France* and *England*. The Courts of *France* and *Scotland* at Variance.

Soon after the withdrawing the *English* Garrison of *Havre de Grace*, a Truce was concluded between the two Crowns.

The Duke of *Guise* being dead, and the Queen-Mother having the Administration of the Government entirely in her Hands, detain'd the Dowry of the Queen of *Scots*, dismiss'd the *Scotish* Guards, and kept back the Revenues belonging to *Hamilton* Duke of *Chattelerand*; so much was the Regent prejudic'd against her Daughter-in-law, and the whole *Scotish* Nation for her sake: But the Court of *France*, being afterwards apprehensive, that this Usage of the Queen of *Scots* should induce her to throw herself into the Arms of

of the Queen of *England*, promis'd not only to pay her all Arrears, and to be more punctual for the future, but to restore the *Scots*, and give them new Privileges. They again also propos'd to her the Archduke of *Austria* for a Husband, which she communicated to the Queen of *England*: Hereupon her Majesty gave the Queen of *Scots* the same Advice she had done before, to marry an *English* Nobleman, and recommended her Favourite, *Robert Dudley*, to her Choice; engaging, if she would marry him, to procure an Act of Parliament to settle the Crown upon the Queen of *Scots*, in case she herself should die without Issue.

A.D. 1563
A. 5 Eliz.
They are
reconcil'd.
The Arch-
duke of
Austria
propos'd to
the Queen
of *Scots* for
a Husband.
Robert
Dudley pro-
pos'd to
her by *Q.*
Elizabeth.

The Court of *France*, and particularly the Cardinal of *Lorrain*, to defeat this Scheme, put the Queen of *Scots* in mind, how much beneath her it would be to marry an *English* Nobleman; suggesting, however, at the same time, that *Elizabeth* probably design'd him for herself, and therefore could not be in earnest in this Proposal; and, if she was, one Parliament might undo what another did; besides, if *Elizabeth* should have Children, there was an End of the Project, and therefore advis'd her to rely on her Friends in *France*; but the Queen of *Scots*, it seems, took the middle Way, she neither encouraged the Courtship of the Archduke of *Austria*, or admitted that of *Dudley's*.

She refuses
both.

The latter End of this Year, died *Frances Brandon* Dutchess of *Suffolk*, on whose Issue the Crown of *England* was settled by Act of Parliament, and the Will of *Henry VIII.*, after the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*. She had three Daughters by her Husband the Duke of *Suffolk*; the eldest, *Jane*, was beheaded in

The Dut-
chess of
Suffolk, on
whom the
Crown was
settled, dies.
Her
Daughter
Jane be-
headed.

A.D. 1563 the late Reign; her second Daughter, *Katherine*, was then a Prisoner in the *Tower* (perhaps dead, says *Rapin*) for having enter'd into a Marriage-Contract with the Earl of *Hertford*, eldest Son of the late Duke of *Somerset*, without the Queen's Leave; but, upon her falling sick, the Queen gave her Leave to remove into the County, to her Uncle the Lord *John Grey's* in *Essex*. She dy'd in *Sussex* in the Year 1568, * and did not dye in the *Tower* before her Mother, as *Rapin* imagines. This Lady had, 'tis true, very hard Measure; first to be imprison'd for entering into a Marriage-Contract with the Earl of *Hertford*, and then to be divorc'd, and adjudg'd guilty of Fornication, by the Archbishop, for want of such a Contract; when it appear'd, by both their Confessions, that they had contracted Matrimony in Words of present Time; and the only legal Sentence, that could have been pronounc'd in this Case was, That they should solemnize their Marriage in the Face of the Church, if it was not already done: Had the Contract been in Words of future Time, yet a Cohabitation afterwards makes it a real Marriage, by the Civil Law, and the Laws of *England*; but Queen *Elizabeth* had so much of her Father in her, that the Bishop did not think fit to dispute her Majesty's Pleasure, after she had intimated, they should be separated.

The third As to *Mary*, the third Daughter of the Sister married to the Dutchess of *Sussex*, she was something deform'd, and married to *Keys* the Groom-Porter, an inferior Person; from whence some of our Historians would infer, that her Po-

* *Strype's Life of Archbishop Parker*, p. 119.

sterity could have no Pretence to the *A.D. 1564*
Crown.

The Truce that had been made the preceding Year, between *France* and *England*, concluded at length in a Peace, which was sign'd on the 22d of *April*. The principal Articles whereof were, That all Hostilities should cease: That the one Nation should not harbour the Rebels of the other: That there should be a free Trade between the two Nations, &c. and that the Claims and Pretensions of each Prince should remain in the State they were. Besides which, it was stipulated by a separate Article, That *France* should pay the Crown of *England* a certain Sum at several Payments (what the Sum was, *Cambden* does not mention) and that the *French* should also pay the Queen the Sum of * Six hundred and twenty thousand Crowns down, on the delivery of the Hostages: This, 'tis observ'd, *Rapin* calls *Rapin's* a *small* Sum; nor does that faithful Historian partial Ac- count of it. mention any other Money that was stipulated to be paid by *France*; so very impartial is he, when he relates a Fact, wherein the Honour of his own Country is concern'd: He thought it might be a Reflection on their Monarch, to purchase a Peace of the petty Kingdom of *England*, at so dear a rate; but the Court of *France* had not forgot the Conquests of *Henry V.* in *France*, and were glad to clap up a Peace, while the Hugonots were united with them, lest they should give the *English* another Invitation into *Normandy*.

The King of *Spain*, observing what Countenance the Queen of *England* had given the Protestants in *France*, and being himself

* *Cambden's* Comp. Hist. Vol. II. p. 394.

A.D. 1564 about to extirpate all those of that Persuasion out of the *Netherlands*, propos'd to drive the *English* Merchants and Factors from thence, lest his Subjects should be encourag'd by them to defend their Religion against his Encroachments and the Tyranny of *Rome*: Whereupon the *English* Manufactures were prohibited, their Factors hardly dealt with, and their Goods seiz'd; insomuch, that the Court of *England* thought fit to remove the Staple of their Woollen Trade to *Embsden* in *Friezland*, and to prohibit all Commerce with the *Low Countries*. This encouraged the *French*, who had stipulated for a free Trade in the late Treaty, to propose the succeeding the *Flemmings* in the Woollen Trade; but the Queen did not think fit to listen to it, a Trade with *France* being always found disadvantageous to this Nation: On the other hand, the *Flemmings*, not being able to subsist without the *English* Commerce, the King of *Spain*, and his Governors of the *Low Countries*, found themselves under a Necessity of granting our Merchants their own Terms, and the Inter-course between *England* and *Flanders* was restor'd; however, the *English* thought fit to continue their Trade to *Embsden*, in case of another Rupture.

The Trade between *England* and the *Low Countries* inter-cepted.

Commerce with *Flan- ders* re-new'd.

The Queen vi- sits *Cam- bridge*.

The Trade with the *Low Countries* being settled, the Queen this Summer visited several Parts of the Kingdom, and among others, the University of *Cambridge*, where she was splendidly entertain'd; here she went to the Schools and heard their Disputations, and had Plays acted before her in the Evening: Having survey'd the several Colleges, she thank'd them for the kind Reception they had given her, in a *Latin* Speech, taking Notice of the Variety of

of good Learning, in which they abounded, A.D. 1564
 encourag'd them to continue their Studies, A. 6 Eliz.
 and promis'd them her Countenance and Protection.

As the Nation was in terrible Apprehensions, that Popery would be restor'd by the Queen of *Scots*, if she should succeed to the Crown; several great Men were for asserting the Title of the *Suffolk* Family. — *Hales* She dis-
 had writ a Treatise to support it, for which counte-
 he was sent to the *Fleet*. The Lord *Grey* was nances the
 prosecuted for encouraging him; and even Title of
 the Lord Keeper *Bacon* was frown'd upon, the *Suffolk*
 and banish'd the Court, by *Dudley's* Instiga- Family.
 tion, on Suspicion of his being concern'd in
 the Treatise written by *Hales*. Nay, it ap-
 pears, from a Letter written by Queen *Eliza-
 beth* to the Queen of *Scots*, that the Members
 of Parliament were so set upon confirming
 the Succession of the *Suffolk* Family, that she
 was oblig'd to put off their Meeting, and ad- Offers to
 vises *Mary* therefore to marry the Lord *Robert settle the*
Dudley, promising her, if she follow'd her Crown on
 Direction in this Affair, she would engage to the Queen
 influence the Parliament to settle the Crown of *Scots* if
 upon her; and that *Dudley* might appear to the she marri-
 greater Advantage, he was in *October* created ed *Dudley*.
 Baron of *Denbigh* and Earl of *Leicester*. *Dudley*
 created E.
 of *Leicester*.

There was a third Party in the Nation, The Fa-
 who were for preferring the Title of *Marga- mily of*
ret, the Wife of *Matthew Stuart* Earl of *Le- Lenox pre-*
nox, Aunt to the Queen of *Scots*, and Daugh- ferr'd by
 ter of *Margaret* Queen of *Scotland*, by her some.
 second Husband *Archibald* Earl of *Angus*.
 The Earl of *Lenox* being oblig'd to leave
Scotland in the Reign of *Henry VIII*, that
 King gave the Earl his Niece, the said Lady
Margaret, in Marriage, and they resided in
England.

A.D. 1564 England till this time, having Issue, *Henry*
A. 6 Eliz. Lord *Darnley*, a young Nobleman the Peo-
 ple of *England* were fond of, on account of
 his having been born and educated amongst
 them: A Gentleman (says *Cambden*) whose
 Person might well become the Honour of a
 Crown ; extremely handsome, and of a Tem-
 per as well mix'd, as his outward Proportions.
 The Queen of *Scots* was extremely jealous,
 that Queen *Elizabeth* might pass by her, and
 get the Crown settled upon this Nobleman,
 who was the next in Succession. To prevent
 which, she invited the Earl of *Lenox*, his
 Father, to return to *Scotland*, under pretence
 of restoring him his Estate ; and on his Arri-
 val offer'd to marry his Son the Lord *Darn-*
 ley, as well to prevent his being set up against
 her, as to strengthen her own Title ; of which
 Queen *Elizabeth* being inform'd, endeavour'd
 to dissuade her from that Match, and again
 recommended her Favourite the Earl of *Lei-*
cester to her. To which the Queen of *Scots*
 seem'd so far to consent, that she sent her
 Brother the Earl of *Murray*, and Secretary
Lidington, to *Berwick*, in *November*, to treat
 with the Earl of *Bedford* and *Randolph*, who
 were deputed by Queen *Elizabeth* to nego-
 tiate this Affair.

But treats
 however
 with the
English
 Ministers
 about the
 Marriage
 of *Leicester*.
 The *English* Ministers, at the opening this
 Treaty, represented, that if the Queen of
Scots married *Leicester*, the Queen of *England*
 would adopt her her Daughter, and get the
 Crown settled on her by Act of Parliament, as
 soon as the Marriage was over. To which
 the *Scots* answer'd, That it was beneath their
 Queen to marry a new-created *English* Earl,
 without any other Settlement but that of Ex-
 pectation, when she had been offer'd *Charles*,
 the

the Emperor's Son; the Prince of *Conde*; the Duke of *Ferrara*, &c. They observ'd also, That it was beneath Queen *Elizabeth* to offer so mean an Alliance to her near Kinswoman; and said, If she would give a Proof of her Affection for the Queen of *Scots*, she must suffer her to follow her own Inclinations, and confirm her Title to the Crown by Parliament.

Cambden observes, that it was Queen *Elizabeth*'s principal View to fix the Succession of both Crowns on an *English* Bottom, while the Queen of *Scots*, on the other hand, was desirous they might devolve on a Person of *Scotish* Extraction. And that the Earls of *Murray* and *Lidington* were determin'd to break off any Match, which was likely to interfere with the Power they exercis'd over their Queen: That the Earl of *Leicester* also secretly directed the Earl of *Bedford* not to be too forward in promoting the Match between the Queen of *Scots* and him, and was thought to assist the Lord *Darnley* in his Pretensions, in hopes of enjoying Queen *Elizabeth* himself; which seems the more probable, because the Lord *Darnley* was permitted to go to *Scotland* the next Year for 8 Months, which he could not have done, without the Concurrence of *Leicester*, who was now in full Favour at Court; and without whom, nothing of Consequence was transacted. *Elizabeth* might design *Leicester* for the Queen of *Scots*, but he had flatter'd himself with making a grander Conquest.

The Lord *Darnley* arriving at *Edinburgh*, in *February* 1565, the Queen no sooner saw him, but she was taken with his Person and Address; and was confirm'd in her Resolution of

A.D. 1564
A. 6 Eliz.
The different Views of the two Queens.

The Lord *Darnley* permitted to return to *Scotland*.

A.D. 1565 of marrying him, as soon as a Dispensation could be obtain'd from *Rome*; for they were too nearly related, by the Canon Law, to marry without; and at the same time, she dispatched Secretary *Lidington* to Queen *Elizabeth*, to desire her Consent. This Matter being debated in the Privy Council of *England*, it appears, that Earl *Murray* had already suggested to some of the Members, That the Queen of *Scots* propos'd, by this Marriage with Lord *Darnley*, to strengthen her Title, and then revive her Claim to the Crown of *England*; and as there was a Prospect of Heirs by this Match, it would give her a great Advantage of Queen *Elizabeth*, and the Nation would be induc'd to favour her Pretensions; which might probably end in the Ruin of Queen *Elizabeth*, and the Destruction of the Protestant Interest in both Kingdoms.

The Council's Advice to Queen *Elizabeth* thereupon. The Council hereupon advis'd her Majesty to marry forthwith, and fix the Succession in her own Issue, whereby she would greatly encourage the Protestant Religion, and give a fatal Blow to Popery. They advis'd her also, to detach some Troops to the Borders of *Scotland*, and threaten War, in case the Match proceeded; and, that the Countess of *Lenox*, the Lord *Darnley's* Mother, and her Son *Charles*, should be closely confin'd, and both Father and Son should be recall'd from *Scotland*, on Pain of forfeiting their Estates: That the *Scots*, who oppos'd the Marriage, should be encourag'd, and the Earl of *Hertford* and the Lady *Katherine Grey*, countenanced at Court, being the Persons the Queen of *Scots* was most jealous would rival her in the Succession.

Queen

Queen *Elizabeth*, having weigh'd the Advice her of Council, dispatch'd Sir *Nich. Throckmorton* to the Queen of *Scots*, to dissuade her from marrying Lord *Darnley*, and to propose *Leicester* to her once again ; and finding her Minister did not succeed in this Negotiation, she had an Interview * with the Queen of *Scots*, this Summer, in her Progress thro' the *Northern Counties* ; but if we may pass a Judgment on this Conference from what follow'd, *Mary* was already determin'd, and not to be diverted from her Purpose of marrying Lord *Darnley* by any Expedient the Queen of *England* cou'd offer. Whereupon the Earl of *Lenox* and the Lord *Darnley* were recall'd, but they civilly excus'd their Absence ; and Lord *Darnley* being created Duke of *Rothsay*, was, with the Consent of most of the Nobility of that Kingdom, married to the Queen of *Scots* on the 28th of *July*, and immediately after proclaim'd King : *Hamilton* Duke of *Chatelebrand*, and Earl *Murray*, in order to prevent this Marriage taking Effect, broke out into Rebellion, infomuch that the Queen was oblig'd to raise Forces to protect her while it was solemniz'd: These Noblemen, for their Justification, pretended to be in Doubt whether a *Papist* cou'd be advanced to the Throne ; whether a Queen of Scotland cou'd marry whom she pleas'd ; and whether the States of the Kingdom might not impose a Husband on her by their own Authority. Religion was urg'd as another Reason for their having recourse to Arms ; but the King and Queen falling upon the Malecontents before they cou'd receive any Succours

A.D. 1565

A. 7 Eliz.



An Interview
between the
2 Queens.

Queen of
Scots married Lord
Darnley.
Earl of
Murray,
&c. raise a
Rebellion
to prevent
it.

* *Strype's Annals*, Vol. I. p. 510.

A.D. 1565 from *England*, they were defeated, and obliged to take Refuge in that Kingdom.

A. 7 Eliz.

They are oblig'd to take Refuge in *England*.

Queen *Elizabeth* expostulates with the Queen of *Scots*, and desires Earl *Murray* may be restor'd to Favour. Queen of *Scots* Answer.

About two Months after the Marriage, the Queen dispatch'd *Tamworth*, a Gentleman of her Privy-Chamber, to the Queen of *Scots*, to expostulate with her upon this hasty Match; and to demand the Return of the Earl of *Lennox* and the Lord *Darnley* to *England*, and to desire that the Earl of *Murray* might be receiv'd into Favour; but *Mary* understanding the Purport of *Tamworth's* Message, refus'd him Audience. However, she wrote to Queen *Elizabeth*, declaring that neither she, nor her Husband should transact any thing to the Prejudice of the Queen of *England*, or the Tranquillity of her Kingdom, but were ready to conclude such an Alliance with her, as might be for the Advantage of both Nations; and if ever they shou'd succeed to the Crown of *England*, they shou'd make no Alterations in the Religion, Laws, or Liberties of the *English*, provided the Queen wou'd limit the Succession of the Crown to her and her Issue by Act of Parliament. And as to her Marriage, Queen *Elizabeth* had no Reason to be disoblig'd at it, since she had, by her Advice, made Choice of an *Englishman* (Lord *Darnley* was born in *England*) and not a Foreigner, and one who was descended of the Blood Royal of both Kingdoms, and the first Nobleman in *Britain*. It seem'd strange, she said, that her Majesty wou'd not suffer her to enjoy one whom God and the Laws had entirely made her own, and that she shou'd deny her the Liberty of keeping *Lennox* at home who was a Subject of *Scotland*; and as to *Murray*, her profess'd Enemy, she begg'd the Queen wou'd leave her Subjects to her own Disposol, since she did

not

not pretend to intermeddle with her *English* Subjects.

A.D. 1565

This Year *Cecily*, Sister of the King of *Sweden*, and Wife of the Marquis of *Baden*, made the Queen a Visit; and being brought to Bed of a Son soon after her Arrival, the Queen stood God-mother, giving him the Name of *Edward Fortunatus*, and settled a handsome Pension on his Mother: About the same time *Donald Maccarty*, an *Irish* Lord of a great Estate, surrendered it to the Queen, and receiv'd it back again to hold of the Crown of *England*; whereupon her Majesty invested him in the Earldom of *Glercairn*, and made his Son Baron of *Valencia*, to engage him to serve against *Desmond*, who was in Rebellion in that Kingdom; and Sir *Henry Sidney* was made Lieutenant of *Ireland*; and sent over, at the same time, to reduce *Desmond* to his Duty.

A. 7 Eliz.
King of
Sweden's
Sister ar-
rives in
England.

Irish Af-
fairs.

The *Puritans*, it seems, being possess'd of many Livings, and other Preferments in *England*, at this Time were extremely troublesome to the Government, refusing to wear the Ecclesiastical Habits, or conform to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church of *England*. And in *Cambridge*, *Cartwright* and his Brethren had so debauch'd the Fellows and Students, that there was scarce any College conformable but *King's*, no less than three hundred agreed to throw off their Surplices on one Day at *St. John's College*; and Secretary *Cecil*, Chancellor of this University, was so disturb'd with the factious Spirits amongst them, that he was about relinquishing that Office, as appears by his Letters collected by Mr. *Strype*.

The *Puri-*
tans trou-
blesome.

In *Cam-*
bridge and
London.

A.D. 1565

A. 7 Eliz.

The Duke
of *Austria*
renews his
Amour
with the
Queen.

The Duke of *Austria* again renewing his Addresses to Queen *Elizabeth*, I find it was generally expected at this time that it wou'd have been a Match ; two Things however obstructed it. The Queen, in the first place, insisted, That the Duke shou'd come over, that she might have some knowledge of his Person, before she wou'd come to any Resolution ; and the other was, That he shou'd entirely conform to the Protestant Religion. As to the rest of the Articles, they were agreed to have been the same as those concluded between King *Philip* and her Sister *Mary*.

Tumults
in the Ne-
therlands
on the set-
ting up the
Inquisiti-
on.

About this time it was, that the *Spaniards* set up an Inquisition at *Antwerp*, in order to extirpate the Protestant Religion out of the *Low Countries*, which gave that People such terrible Apprehensions, that at length they threw off the *Spanish* Yoke ; and erecting an Independent State, put themselves under the Protection of Queen *Elizabeth* : *Scotland* also

Scotland in
Confusion.

about this time became a Scene of Confusion. The Duke of *Lorain* had recommended one *David Rizzo*, an *Italian*, to the Queen, for her Secretary, with an Intention to keep her firm to the Catholick Interest. This Agent being observ'd to have a great Influence on Affairs of State, and to oppose *Murray*, *Hamilton*, and the rest of the disaffected Lords, they determin'd to accomplish his Ruin, and had laid a Plot to make both the Queen and *Rizzo* Prisoners, and to take the Administration of the Government into their own Hands ; but being disappointed in this Project, they found Means to represent to the King, that he was become a mere Cypher ; that *Rizzo* transacted every thing, and was frequently alone with the Queen, when neither he himself, nor any

any other Person cou'd be admitted. The Queen, upon her Marriage with Lord *Darnley*, exprefs'd a very great Esteem and Affection for him; she order'd he shou'd enjoy the Stile of King; which his marrying the reigning Queen did not entitle him to; and that his Name shou'd be set before her own on the Coin, and in all Acts of State. These Condescensions in her Majesty exceedingly elated her young Consort, and as he had the Title of King, he soon began to aspire after the Power, and to assume the Administration of the Government; which the Queen not being able to dissuade him from by fair Means, she resum'd her Sovereign Authority, order'd the King's Name to be put after her own in all Acts and Instruments, and at length caus'd it to be totally refus'd. The disaffected Lords observing this Misunderstanding between the King and Queen, found Means to insinuate to his Majesty, by their Friends, That the only way to recover his Authority and Influence was, to dispatch *Rizzo* out of the way, and recall their Brethren the fugitive Lords, who were fled to *England*, to both which the young King was weak enough to consent. The Earl of *Morton* had the principal Management of this Affair, tho' he did not actually embrace his Hands in Blood. It was the Lord *Ruthen*, and *George Douglas* base Son to the Earl of *Angus*, who condescended to become Assassins, that they might rid the Court of the hated *Rizzo*.

The King being perswaded to be present at the Murder, to render the Breach between him and the Queen the wider, his Majesty came into the Queen's Apartment one Evening, as she was sitting at Table with the Countess

A.D. 1566

A. 8 Eliz.

The Occasion of the Misunderstanding between the King and Queen there.

The disaffected Lords put him upon killing *Rizzo* the Queen's Secretary.

An Account of the Murder.

A.D. 1566 Countess of *Argyle*, immediately after whom
A. 8 Eliz. *Rutben* and *Douglas* enter'd with their Ac-
 complices, and seizing on *Rizzo* as he was
 eating at a Side-Table, he hung about the
 Queen's Waist, 'tis said, who endeavour'd to
 save him, till they had disengag'd his Hands ;
 then striking him with a Dagger, they drew him
 out into a Lobby, where they compleated the
 Murder. The Earl of *Morton*, in the mean
 time, guarding the Avenues to prevent the
 Queen's receiving any Assistance ; and her
 Majesty was detain'd Prisoner afterwards a
 considerable time in her own Parlour.

The Queen
 detain'd
 Prisoner.
 Calumny
 of *Bucha-*
nan and
 the Presby-
 terian Par-
 ty highly
 improba-
 ble.

Buchanan and *Rapin*, who follows him in
 the relating this Tragical Event, suggests, that
 there was a Criminal Amour between *Rizzo*
 and the Queen, and that she was then actually
 with Child by him ; but this was more than
 ever the disaffected Lords, her Enemies,
 charg'd her with. Nor can it be suppos'd,
 that Earl *Murray* and his Confederates wou'd
 ever have acknowledg'd the Son, the Queen
 was then big of, their Sovereign, if they had
 entertain'd any such Suspicion ; or, that they
 wou'd not have charg'd her with this Amour,
 when they accus'd her of another with *Both-*
wel before Queen *Elizabeth*. But to proceed,
 the Earl of *Murray*, and the other fugitive
 Lords returning to *Edinburgh* a Day or two
 after the Murder, the Queen, who did not
 then know her Brother the Earl had any Con-
 cern in it, sent to him by *Melvil* to desire he
 wou'd be reconcil'd to her, and not join with
 her Enemies, imagining he wou'd be mov'd
 to take Compassion on her in this Distress,
 whatever Misunderstandings there might have
 been between them formerly ; nor was she
 out in her Conjectures, in appearance at least ;
 for

for when her Majesty met Earl *Murray*, and declar'd how she had been us'd, *Melvil* relates that the Tears ran down from his Eyes ; but still I don't find the Earl made any Attempt towards releasing her out of Prison, how tenderly soever he might seem to commiserate her Circumstances: But she was forc'd to be oblig'd to another Hand for her Deliverance.

A.D. 1566

A. 8 Eliz.



The King at length sensible of the Outrage he had committed, made his Submission to the Queen, and promis'd to abandon the Murderers. Soon after which, having caus'd the Guards to be remov'd which the Conspirators had plac'd about the Palace, he attended her Majesty to *Dunbar*, where she reassum'd her former Authority, and publish'd a Pardon for the Earl of *Murray*, and the rest of the disaffected Lords, excepting only the Earl of *Morton*, the Lord *Ruthen*, *Douglas* and the rest of the Murderers who fled into *England*, where they were protected by Queen *Elizabeth*.

The Queen escapes with the King, and resumes her Authority.

The Murderers protected by Queen Elizabeth.

However, the Queen of *Scots* being brought to Bed of a Son in *June* following, sent *James Melvil* to *England* to notifie the Prince's Birth, and Queen *Elizabeth* soon after dispatch'd Sir *Henry Killigrew* to *Scotland*, to congratulate that Queen on this Occasion. She also committed one *Thornton*, a Reader of *Lincoln's-Inn*, to the *Tower*, upon the Complaints of the Queen of *Scots* for disputing her Title. Thus did these two Queens carry it fair to each other, while they were under-hand contriving each other's Ruin, as some Historians suggest. This Summer Queen *Elizabeth* visited the University of *Oxford*, and was present at their learned Disputations ; and having been magnificently entertain'd, return'd them her Thanks

Prince James, afterwards King of England, born.

The Queen visits Oxford.

in

A.D. 1566 in a *Latin* Speech. The following Winter the Parliament assembling on the first of *November*, it was propos'd to Address her Majesty to Marry, and in the mean time to limit the Succession of the Crown; and when she still seem'd averse to a married State, it was said by some of the Members of both Houses, that the Queen was regardless of her Subjects, and that if she refus'd to settle the Succession, the Parliament might do it without her: All which she bore patiently for the present; but in a Speech at the Conclusion of the Parliament, made them sensible of her Resentment, and insinuated that whatever Affection they might have express'd for her Person and Government on this Occasion, she look'd upon the Projectors of these Schemes as her Enemies: And when the Parliament offer'd her an extraordinary Subsidy if she wou'd declare a Successor, she rejected the Motion with Disdain, and even remitted part of the Supply they had actually granted, declaring she look'd upon the Money in her Subject's Pockets, to be as beneficial to her as if it were in her own *Exchequer*.

The Consecration of Bishops in this Reign declared regular.

By the first Statute made in this Parliament it is Enacted, That the Election, Consecration, Confirmation, and Instalment of Archbishops and Bishops, since the beginning of this Reign, had been duly and legally perform'd: And the Act for the Uniformity of Common-Prayer, and the Administration of Sacraments, and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church is thereby confirm'd.

Supplies granted.

In the same Parliament a Subsidy of four Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy to be paid within three Years, was confirm'd; and one Subsidy, one tenth, and one fifteenth were

were granted by the Laity ; and the Queen's General Pardon was confirm'd. In the mean time, the Queen, being invited to stand God-mother to the Prince of *Scotland*, sent the Earl of *Bedford* thither with a Present of a Gold Font of great Value : The Earl also was order'd to endeavour a Reconciliation between that Queen and her Consort, but not to give him the Title of King. Queen *Elizabeth* also demanded that the Treaty of *Edinburgh* might be confirm'd ; but this last Article the Queen of *Scots* absolutely refus'd, because there were some Things stipulated in that Treaty, which might prejudice her Children's Claim to the Crown of *England*. However, she promis'd to disuse the Arms and Title of *England*, as long as Queen *Elizabeth* and her Heirs should live, tho' she would not renounce her Title to *England*, on failure of Issue of Queen *Elizabeth*, as she apprehended she should have been oblig'd to do, if she had ratified the Treaty of *Edinburgh*.

A.D. 1566

A. 8 Eliz.

A General Pardon.

The Queen stands

God-mother to Pr.

James.

The Q's Demands of the Q. of Scots.

And now the young King of *Scots*, reflecting on the Practices of the Earl of *Murray*, and the rest of the disaffected Lords, to set him at Variance with the Queen, particularly by inciting him to consent to the Murder of *David Rizzo*, propos'd to her Majesty, if we may credit *Cambden*, the making away the Earl of *Murray*, which the Queen abhorring, dissuaded him from ; but the Matter coming to *Murray's* Ears, he resolv'd to be beforehand with the King ; and by the Advice of *Morton*, laid a Plot to take away the King's Life.

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

The King designing

to dispatch *Murray*.

These two Noblemen, according to *Cambden*, engag'd Earl *Bothwell* in their Design, giving him Hopes of marrying the Queen when

The Earl conspires to destroy the King,

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

~~~~~

And throw  
the Odium  
of it upon  
the Queen.  
The House  
blown up  
where the  
King re-  
sided.  
Doubted  
whether  
the King  
was blown  
up or  
strangled.  
Earl *Both-  
well* one of  
the Con-  
spirators.  
Earl *Mur-  
ray* advises  
the Queen  
to marry  
*Bothwell*.

she should be a Widow ; proposing, says that Author, by one and the same Act to murder the King, bespatter and lessen the Queen, suppress *Bothwell*, and get the Regency into their own Hands : He adds, that *Bothwell*, being a Man of ill Principles, and blinded with Ambition, accepted the Terms, and villainously acted the Murder, whilst *Murray* had withdrawn himself to a Country-House, at some distance, the Day before ; not only to avoid Suspicion, but to assist the Conspirators, and derive the Odium and Jealousie of the Fact upon the Queen. Earl *Bothwell*, it seems, caus'd the House where the King lay to be blown up with Gun-powder, pretending it was demolish'd by Thunder and Lightning, and that the King was destroy'd in it ; tho' some relate that his Majesty was found Dead in the Garden, and suppos'd to be strangled before the House was blown up ; but which way soever the King lost his Life, it is generally agreed that Earl *Bothwell* was one of the Regicides ; tho' this was not certainly known till some time afterwards.

Earl *Murray* returning to Court, upon the News of the King's Death, recommended *Bothwell* to the Queen for a Husband, as a Person worthy her Affections, on the score of his Family ; his good Services against the *English*, and his singular Fidelity : Acquainting her, that in the unsettled State of her Affairs, she had need of one of Resolution and Conduct, to assist her in the Government. *Cambden* relates further, That the Queen being in the utmost Consternation, frightened at these two tragical Murders, and calling to mind *Bothwell's* Loyalty and faithful Services to herself and Mother, was prevail'd upon

to



marry him, provided that her Son, the young Prince, might be secur'd in all Events, and *Bothwell* be judicially acquitted of the King's Murder, which some suggested he had been guilty of.

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

Here Mr. *Cambden* produces a Protestation made by the Earls of *Huntley* and *Argyle*, relating to this Murder, of which he himself (*Cambden*) he says, had seen a Copy under their own Hands, directed to Queen *Elizabeth*, wherein they recite, That *Murray*, and others, to conceal their Rebellion against the Queen, whose Authority they would usurp, did calumniate her Majesty as guilty of the Murder of her Husband: But they protested, that *Murray* and *Liddington* were really the Authors and Contrivers of that Regicide; but I refer the Reader to *Cambden* to procure the Instrument at large. \*

A Protest  
of the  
Earls of  
*Huntley*  
and *Argyle*,  
that *Mur-*  
*ray*, &c.  
were guil-  
ty of the  
King's  
Murder.

The next Paragraph I shall take entirely from *Cambden*, whose Authority possibly is still equal to that of *Buchanan*, or his Admirer *Rapin's*. This Author relates, That the sole Concern of the Conspirators now, was to get *Bothwell* clear'd of the Guilt of the King's Murder. A Parliament therefore is call'd upon this very account, and a Proclamation issu'd out for the apprehending such as were suspected of the Fact. And whereas *Lenox*, the deceased King's Father, impeach'd *Bothwell* as the Regicide, and press'd hard that he might be brought to his Tryal in Parliament; this was also granted, and *Lenox* commanded to appear in two and twenty Days, in order to prosecute the Defendant: On the Day appointed *Bothwell* was arraign'd and acquitted

The Con-  
spirators  
get *Both-*  
*well* ac-  
quitted of  
the King's  
Murder,  
and the  
Consent of  
the Nobil-  
ity for the  
Queen's  
marrying  
him.

\* *Cambden's* Compleat Hist. Vol. II. p. 404.

*A D. 1567* by his Judges and *Morton's* Management  
*A. 9 Eliz.* (the Queen of *England* not having sent any  
 Instructions to *Lenox*, who could not appear  
 in the City, where he had so many Enemies,  
 without visible hazard of his Life.) This Bu-  
 siness thus dispatch'd, the Confederacy so ma-  
 nag'd the Matter, as to work up a great part  
 of the Nobility to comply with the Marriage,  
 and to set their Hands to a Writing to that  
 Purpose, for fear, if he had sunk from his  
 Hopes, he should have betray'd the whole  
 bloody Secret. This Match with *Bothwell*  
 (who was created Duke of *Orkney*, or the  
*Orcades*) help'd very much to increase the Sus-  
 picion of the Queen's being accessary to the  
 Murder; and this was heighten'd by several  
 Letters which the Complotters dispers'd and  
 sent about; and they conspir'd in private Ca-  
 bals, held at *Dunkeld*, to depose the Queen,  
 and destroy *Bothwell*. Yet *Murray*, to make  
 himself appear innocent of the whole Intrigue,  
 ask'd the Queen's Leave to go into *France*; and,  
 to remove the least Shadow of Jealousy,  
 recommended his whole Estate to the Care and  
 Management of the Queen and *Bothwell*. He  
 had scarce got out of *England*, when the ve-  
 ry same Persons that had acquitted *Bothwell*  
 of the King's Murder, and gave him their  
 Consent to marry the Queen, under their  
 own Hands, were up in Arms against, and  
 ready to seize him: But in truth they gave  
 him secret Notice to provide for himself, and  
 all lest he should discover the whole Plot af-  
 ter he was taken, and that they might make  
 this Use of his Flight to charge the Queen,  
 with the better Face, with the King's Murder.  
 Next, they went so far as to seize on her  
 Person, and treated her in the vilest and  
 most

most contumelious Manner; and allowing her but poor and ordinary Cloathing, they imprison'd her at *Loth-Levin*, and put her in the Custody of *Murray's* Mother, who having been *James* the fifth's Mistress, insulted basely the captive Queen's Misfortune, and made her Brags that she was the lawful Wife of *James* the fifth, and that her Son *Murray* was his legitimate Issue.

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

The Queen of *England* receiving Advice of the Usage the Queen of *Scots* met with from her Subjects, dispatch'd Sir *Nicholas Throckmorton* to expostulate with the *Scotish* Nobility, concerning their rude and inhuman Treatment of their Queen; but neither he, nor the *French* Ambassadors, were permitted to converse with her: On the contrary, the Ambassadors were told, That the People of *Scotland* had the Power of creating or deposing their Princes (this Doctrine was preach'd up every where by *Knox*, and the rest of the *Presbyterian* Fathers;) and threatening their Queen with Death, they compell'd her to sign three Instruments: By the first of which, she resign'd the Crown to her Son, then about thirteen Months old: By the second, she constituted Earl *Murray* Regent of the Kingdom: And, by the third, other Noblemen were appointed Regents in case *Murray* shou'd refuse the Office. These Instruments were dated the 24<sup>th</sup> of *June*, and on the 29<sup>th</sup> the young King was crown'd: Three Weeks afterwards the Earl of *Murray* return'd to *Scotland*, and took upon him the Administration of the Government; and was so far from releasing the Queen his Sister, that having reproach'd her Conduct, and threaten'd her with Death, he caus'd her to be more closely confin'd;

The Queen of *Scots* compell'd to resign her Crown to her Son, or rather to *Murray*.

Earl *Murray* takes the Administration upon him, and uses his Sister barbarously.

*A.D. 1567* fin'd; commanded her to discard *Bothwell*; to lay aside all thoughts of Revenge; and that she wou'd not call in the *Engliſh*, or *French* to her Assistance, at her Peril; and afterwards, to induce the People to believe he had no Concern in the King's Murder, he caus'd several of *Bothwell's* Servants to be put to Death for it, who, contrary to his Expectations, declar'd at their Execution, That *Bothwell* assur'd them the Earls *Murray* and *Morton* were the chief Agents in the King's Death, and that the Queen had no share in that Fact. *Bothwell* also, ſome time afterwards, declar'd on his Death-bed, with the most solemn Affe-  
*A. 9 Eliz.*  
 ~~~~~  
 Several People at their Deaths charge *Murray* with the King's Murder, and acquit the Queen. *Buchanan* himself re-
 pents of the Ca- lumny.

And yet *Rapin* fol-
 lows him.

He blends *Melvil* and *Buchanan* together, so that it is not easy to distin-
 guish one from the other.

This is the Relation that celebrated Historian *Cambden* gives us of the deposing *Mary* Queen of *Scots*; but Monsieur *Rapin* is pleas'd to fol-
 low *Buchanan*, a Writer never till now credited in this Matter, unless by his Brethren of the *Presbyterian* Stamp. *Rapin* indeed en-
 deavours to support *Buchanan's* Authority by *Melvil's* Memoirs, because *Melvil* agrees with him in some Circumstances, tho' he differs from *Buchanan* in the only material Articles, viz. the Queen's Amour with *Rizzo* and *Bothwell*, and the Murder of the King: And it is observable, that tho' the World were nei-
 ther Strangers to *Buchanan*, or *Melvil*, before *Rapin* wrote, yet *Cambden's* Relation was al-
 ways credited, till this ingenious Refugee, by his Omission of some Passage in *Melvil*, mis-
 reciting and making Additions to others, made him speak a different Language, and by these
 and

and the like Artifices abus'd his easy Rea-
ders. A. D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

Rapin
takes great
Pains to
make
the Queen
of Scots
thought
Criminal.

But to observe further, the great Pains *Rapin* takes to make the Queen of Scots thought Criminal, he relates Vol. VIII. p. 312. Engl. 8vo. Edit. An. 1565, *That the Queen of Scotland had for some time entertain'd an Italian, named David Rizzo, who govern'd her absolutely. P. 313, That he became in a manner first Minister, nothing of Moment being transacted at Court, but through his Conveyance. P. 314, That the Lord Darnley being a Catholick, and Rizzo one of the Pope's Pensioners, there was no room to doubt but that the Council of this Favourite determin'd the Queen to this Marriage. P. 315, He tells us that there was a great Friendship between Darnley and Rizzo. P. 313, That those who paid entire Credit to Buchanan, wou'd be inclin'd to believe that the Queen's Conduct was by no means exempt from Crimes: And p. 322, That she continu'd without Reserve her scandalous Familiarities with Rizzo (after her Marriage) if Buchanan is to be believ'd; and in other Places suggests, that Buchanan ought to be believ'd; particularly he tells us, p. 346, That tho' Buchanan's History had been cry'd down by some, no one had undertaken to confute him in any main Point. Nay, in this very Page he observes, That Melvil supposes those scandalous Familiarities (tho' he says nothing of them) or else there could be no Coherence in what he relates. Again, in the same Page 322, he adds, Melvil manifestly supposes the King's Jealousy, and if he had thought the Queen entirely innocent, he would not have fail'd to clear her. All which amounts to a positive Charge, by *Rapin*, that the Queen was guilty of a criminal Amour with Rizzo,*

to

A.D. 1567 to which he expects all the World shou'd give
 A. 9 Eliz. entire Credit. P. 333, he adds as from *Melvil*, *That the fugitive Lords (among whom Earl Murray was one) taking Advantage of the Discord between the King and Queen, and of the Disposition the King was in with regard to Rizzo, PERSWADED HIM TO BE RID OF THAT FAVOURITE, THAT HE MIGHT BY HIS DEATH PUT A STOP TO THE PROSECUTION OF THE FUGITIVES, WHO PROPERLY HAD NO OTHER ADVERSARY BUT RIZZO. And p. 324, That a Parliament being summoned to meet at Edinburgh, in the beginning of the Year 1566, Rizzo openly solli-cited the Members, as they arriv'd, to procure the Condemnation of the fugitive Lords; and that the King thereupon consulted with Earl Morton (a Friend of the Fugitives) of the best Means to take off Rizzo.*

Remarks
 on the Ca-
 lumnies of
 the Whigs.

It is amazing to see from what trifling Hints a certain Faction, avow'd Enemies to Monarchy, can work up a Story to destroy the Reputation of the greatest Princes. The Royal Family of the *Stuarts* must be made to descend from an *Italian* Fidler, to cast a Slur upon crown'd Heads in general, and on the *British* Monarchs in particular, and to palliate the Rebellion of *Earl Murray* and his Fellow-Saints; by whose Assistance he depos'd the Queen his Sister, and usurp'd the Throne, or at least the Regal Power, tho' for his own Ends he suffer'd an Infant of a Year old to bear the Name of King.

But from their own Relation, there appears to have been other Motives of a different Nature for destroying *Rizzo*, than those assign'd by *Rapin* and his Party, and which render the Story of the pretended Amour between the

Queen

Queen and him of very little Credit. That the King was jealous *Rizzo* advis'd the Queen to restrain his intermedling in Affairs of State is not disputed ; but this is very different from the King's having a Jealousie of a criminal Amour between the Queen and her Secretary : Only the Malice of a Republican could have given the Matter so invidious a Turn. To support the Calumny, indeed, they tell us, That *Rizzo* was often alone with the Queen, when the King was refus'd Admittance ; but if it be remember'd that the Regal Power was lodg'd solely in the Queen ; that upon the King's aspiring to it, * she was oblig'd to assert her Authority, and place his Name after her own in all Acts of State : Is it strange that the King, after this, should be excluded from her Councils ? And that when she was giving Instructions to her Secretary, on any Affairs of Moment, her Husband was not permitted to be present. All this might very well be, and yet the Queen's Reputation remain unsullied, unless among those, whose Interest it was to asperse her, and whose Talent at Scandal was never disputed : It is evident also, from *Rapin's* Relation, that the Reason the fugitive Lords conspir'd the Destruction of *Rizzo*, was his excluding them from the Administration, banishing them their Country, and endeavouring to get an Act of Parliament to confirm their Banishment, and confiscate their Estates ; and the King, becoming discontented, at the same time, on account of his being excluded from the Administration (and not because he suspected an Intrigue between the Queen and *Rizzo*) was induc'd to recall

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

The King of Scots
Spleen to
Rizzo arose from
his being
excluded
from the
Queen's
Councils
by their
own Con-
fession.

* *Cambden's* Compleat Hist. p. 403.

A.D. 1567 the Fugitives, and join with them in their taking off *Rizzo*, that they might again recover a Share in the Government.

A. 9 Eliz.

The King's aspiring after Sovereign Power the Occasion of the Quarrel between him and the Queen.

Cambden charg'd with Forgery and Ignorance by *Rapin*.

Cambden's Authority well supported.

Rapin himself admits, that *Rizzo* advis'd the Queen to marry the Lord *Darnley*, and that there was a great Intimacy between the King and the Minister at first ; which can never be true, if there was that open and scandalous Familiarity between the Queen and her Secretary before the Marriage, as he suggests. He admits also, that the Queen heap'd all imaginable Honours on her Consort at their Marriage ; but he is not so ingenuous to let us into the *Occasion* of the Difference that afterwards happen'd between the King and Queen ; namely, *the King's aspiring to have the Sovereign Power lodg'd in him*. This (as has been already mention'd) occasion'd her ordering his Name to be set after hers in the publick Acts, and giving him some other Marks of her Displeasure ; of which the King was made to believe *Rizzo* was the Adviser. And in this unfortunate Hour it was, the discontented Lords struck in, and put the King upon murdering the Secretary, whom they apprehended their greatest Enemy, as *Rapin* himself confesses. This is really the Fact, however prejudic'd Men may have endeavour'd to disguise it. *Rapin* indeed has the Assurance to charge Mr. *Cambden*, whose Reputation is so well establish'd in our own, and other Nations, with downright *Forgery*, and to assert he had no Authority for what he relates : Tho' the Protests he has produc'd, made by the Earls of *Huntley* and *Argyle*, and which he says, *he saw under their own Hands*, sufficiently support his Testimony : It will be consider'd also, that tho' *Rapin* affirms *Cambden*

den

den had no Authority for what he relates of the Affairs of *Scotland*; That Gentleman assures us he took great part of his Relation from the Letters of Sir *Nicholas Tbrockmorton*, who was Ambassador in *Scotland* at the very time that Queen was depos'd. As to the other Charge exhibited by *Buchanan*, and repeated by *Rapin*, of the Queen's being accessary to the King's Murder; this also is sufficiently refuted by the Protest of the Earls of *Argyle* and *Huntley* above-mention'd; by the dying Words of some of the Conspirators who were executed for that Murder; by those of Earl *Bothwell* himself; and even by *Buchanan*, who liv'd to retract the Calumny. It may be further observ'd, that no Man had better Opportunities of being acquainted with the Transactions in *Scotland*, at this time, than *Cambden*; for in his Preface he assures us, that he had his principal Materials for his History from Lord *Burleigh*, Secretary, and prime Minister to Queen *Elizabeth*; who was not only perfectly acquainted with the State of *Scotland*, but indeed manag'd the *English* Interest in that Kingdom during the whole Reign, and therefore may be rely'd on, rather than the Dreams of a Foreigner, who wrote near two hundred Years after the Facts he relates, and who avowedly founds his History upon the Authority of *Buchanan*, a Person employ'd by Earl *Murray*, the Queen's greatest Enemy, to set a good Face on his Rebellion and barbarous Usage of the Queen, his Sister; and who, if he had not been by-ass'd by *Murray* his Patron, was so violent a Party-man, such an avow'd Advocate for Rebellion, that he can never be believ'd when he speaks of his Sovereign, but by those of his

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

Cambden had the Materials for this History from *Cecil*, who had the Direction of Affairs both in *England* and *Scotland* at this time.

A.D. 1567 own Faction. I say, if we consider that *Rapin* has no other Authority for his Assertions, but his suspected Writer, or his own Conjectures (for as to *Melvil* he makes him speak what he pleases) shall we, upon his Misrepresentations, give up Mr. *Cambden*, acknowledge the Charge of Forgery and Ignorance he bestows upon him, or retort the Charge upon *Rapin*, who is apparently byass'd in behalf of his Presbyterian and Republican Brethren.

A. 9 Eliz.
 Either
Cambden's
 or *Rapin's*
 Reputation
 must
 sink.

Again, is it not evident to all the World, that *Murray* depos'd the Queen his Sister, and usurp'd the Sovereign Power, and that he had no way to justify himself to the World, and defend his Conduct, but by blasting her Reputation: That he was in the Confederacy with Queen *Elizabeth*, against his own Country; and that it was the Interest both of that Princess and *Murray* to encourage and countenance the scandalous Reports that were rais'd of the Queen of *Scots*, to lessen her Credit with her own Subjects, and the neighbouring Powers. Admit this, and we need not be at a Loss to discover the Source of these Misfortunes in which the Queen of *Scots* was involv'd, or of those vile Reflections which have since been cast upon her Memory; but this will be consider'd further hereafter.

It was the
 Interest of
 Queen *Elizabeth*
 and
 Earl *Murray*
 to give
 some
 Countenance
 to
 the Calumnies
 rais'd on
 the Queen
 of *Scots*.
 The *French*
 refuse to
 deliver up
Calais.

In the mean time the *French*, having been eight Years in the possession of *Calais*, refus'd to surrender it to the *English*, according to the Terms of the late Treaty; but, the Civil Wars in *France* breaking out again, not long afterwards the Queen made that Court pay very dear for their perfidious Conduct, by the Assistance she afforded the Protestants in that Kingdom.

Still

Still the Duke of *Austria* continu'd his Ad-
dresses to the Queen, and the Earl of *Suffex*
was sent Ambassador to *Germany*, to settle the
Terms of the Marriage Contract; but the
Earl of *Leicester*, 'tis said, occasion'd the break-
ing off the Treaty again, in hopes of suc-
ceeding himself; however, the Article of Re-
ligion in this, as well as other Treaties of the
like Nature, appears to have been the Queen's
constant Pretence for dismissing her Admirers,
whatever were her real Motives for declining
the Matrimonial State.

A.D. 1567

A. 9 *Elix.*

The Duke
of *Austria*
renews his
Amour
with the
Queen.

But is re-
jected.

In *Ireland* the Rebellion of *Shan O-Neal*
gave the Government some Disturbance at this
time: He had formerly been at the Court
of *England*, and made his Submission to her
Majesty, who had confer'd several Favours
on him, on his promising to defend the Pro-
vince of *Ulster* against the *Highland Scots*, and
so far he was as good as his Word; but
meeting with greater Success than he expected,
he assum'd the Title of King of *Ulster*, and
was guilty of innumerable Oppressions, treat-
ing the *Irish* Nobility and Gentry as his
Slaves and Vassals: Whereupon the Queen sent
Edward Randolph, esteem'd one of the best Sol-
diers in those Days, with seven or eight hundred
Men to attack the Rebel in the *North*, while Sir
Edward Herbert, the Lord-Deputy, march'd
against him from the *South*: *O-Neal's* Troops
were defeated in several Encounters; but in
one of them *Randolph* was kill'd, and the
Lord-Deputy being oblig'd to return to *Lem-*
ster to pacify a Quarrel between the Earls of
Ormond and *Desmond*, who were now at open
War, *O-Neal* renew'd his Ravages. How-
ever, growing intolerably cruel, and putting
his own Men to Death on every trifling Oc-
casi on,

The Re-
bellion of
Shan O-
Neal in
Ireland
suppress'd.

A.D. 1567

A. 9 Eliz.

O-Neal
kill'd.A petty
War be-
tween the
Earls of
Ormond
and Des-
mond.

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

Both the
Papists and
Puritans
very trou-
blesome.
Jesuits and
Popish
Missiona-
ries among
the Puritan
Preachers.

casion, he was deserted by them at length, and obliged to fly to the *Highland Scots*, with some few of his Followers for Protection ; but these People, not forgetting how many of their Friends and Relations he had formerly been the Death of, treacherously inviting *O-Neal* and his Men to an Entertainment, when they were pretty well warm'd with Liquor, massacred every one of them ; an End *O-Neal* richly deserv'd, if he was that cruel, vicious Mortal our Historians make him. In the mean time, the Earls of *Ormond* and *Desmond* came to a Battle, which not being decisive, they afterwards brought their Cause before the Council-Board in *England*, who referr'd them back again to the Lord-Deputy, and he interposing with his Troops, *Ormond* charg'd him with being partial to *Desmond*, procur'd an Order from the Court of *England* to seize his Person, and sent him over, with his Uncle *Desmond*, to *England*, where they were both committed to Custody.

As *Harding*, *Sanders* and others, who pretended to exercise Episcopal Jurisdiction in *England* by the Pope's Authority, were very troublesome to the Government ; so the Puritans created the Queen some Uneasiness at this Time. They us'd all possible Endeavours, according to Mr. *Cambden*, to have the Church of *England* form'd upon the *Geneva* Model, and were too much countenanc'd by some Noblemen, who gap'd after the Church-Lands : Nor was it easy to distinguish the Papist from the Puritan, the Pope having authoriz'd his Missionaries here to put on any Shape, or preach any Doctrines that might tend to divide and distract the Establish'd Church. Mr. *Strype* relates, That *Thomas Heath*, a Jesuit, Brother to the late Archbishop of *York*, and

Lord

Lord-Chancellor in the Reign of Queen *Mary*, A.D. 1568, came into *England* with Instructions to perorate a Preacher of the pure Religion; and, having preach'd about the Country for six Years, applied himself to the Dean of *Rocheſter*, about this time, as a poor Miniſter, deſiring ſome Preferment; and being allow'd a Turn in preaching in the Cathedral, he took an Opportunity of cenſuring the Prayers uſed by the Church of *England*, but had the Miſfortune to drop a Letter in going either to or from the Pulpit, from an eminent Jeſuit at *Madrid*, containing Inſtructions how he ſhould behave himſelf in his Miſſion; which Letter being taken up, and carried to the Biſhop, *Heath* was examin'd thereupon, and confeſs'd his being a Jeſuit; and his Chamber being afterwards ſearch'd, there were found Beads in his Boots, with a Licence from the Jeſuits, and a Bull from Pope *Pius V.* authorizing him to preach what Doctrines that Society ſhould direct for the dividing of Proteſtants, eſpecially *Engliſh* Proteſtants; and in his Trunk were found ſeveral Books againſt *Infant Baptiſm*, with other Papers ſtuff'd with various Blaſphemies: Whereupon he was try'd, and ſentenc'd to ſtand in the Pillory, to have his Ears cut off, and to be imprifon'd for Life; which was executed upon him, and he afterwards died in Priſon, not without ſuſpicion of having poiſon'd himſelf.

The Perſecution being again reviv'd in *France*, at this time, Queen *Elizabeth* interpoſ'd in Favour of the Proteſtants, by her Ambaſſador *Norris*, and procur'd a Peace for them; but ſuch a one, *Cambden* obſerves, as the Court of *France* never deſign'd to keep, any longer than they could prevail with the Queen

Queen *Elizabeth* interpoſes in behalf of the *French* Proteſtants. The Court grant them a treacherous Peace.

A.D. 1568 Queen of *England* to abandon that People ;
 A. 10 Eliz. to which End the Queen-Mother, *Katherine de Medicis*, treated Queen *Elizabeth* with all imaginable Respect, and even propos'd her Son the Duke of *Anjou*, then about 17 Years of Age, to her for a Husband.

The Court of *Spain* endeavour to pick a Quarrel with the *English*. The King of *Spain*, on the other hand, began to look upon Queen *Elizabeth* as an Enemy : He confin'd her Ambassador to a Country Village, and refus'd to suffer the Protestant Service in his Chapel : And in the Gulph of *Mexico*, the *Spanish* Admiral fell upon several *English* Ships, commanded by Sir *John Hawkins*, who was come thither with Negroes for the *Spanish* Plantations, and plunder'd some of them, for which Outrages the Queen could meet with no Redress at the Court of *Spain*. However, she did not think fit yet to resent this Usage, as it deserv'd, and enter into a War with so potent a Prince.

The Queen of *Scots* makes her Escape. In the mean time, the Queen of *Scots* made her Escape from *Lough-Levin*, on the 2d of *May*, to *Hamilton* Castle, whither Numbers of Nobility resorted to her, and unanimously declar'd, That the Resignation extorted from her by Force was void : And having rais'd six or seven thousand Men (forty thousand *Rapin* says) she gave Battel to the Earl of *Murray's* Troops, but was defeated by them. Whereupon she fled towards the Borders of *England*, riding sixty Miles in one Night, till she came to the Seat of *Maxwell* Lord *Herris*, where she took Water, and arriv'd at *Werkington*, in *Northumberland*, on the 17th of *May*, having first sent a Message to Queen *Elizabeth* to acquaint her with her Design of coming to *England*, to put herself under the Queen's Protection. She sent also a Diamond by

by the Messenger, which *Elizabeth* had given her as a Mark of her Friendship : In answer to the Queen of *Scots* Message, Queen *Elizabeth* promis'd her all the Aid and Friendship she could expect from so near a Relation and a Sister : But *Mary* was gone to *England* before she receiv'd the Queen of *England's* Answer, contrary to the Advice of most of her Friends. Here *Rapin* takes the Liberty of contradicting *Cambden*, and questions whether ever Queen *Elizabeth* sent any such Answer as that Author gives us ; but produces no other Authority for his Doubt, than his own trifling Surmises. He adds (as he had often done before) That it was not always safe to rely on *Cambden's* Testimony ; and indeed he frequently affirms, that *Cambden* is never to be believ'd when he speaks of the Queen of *Scots*.

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

Rapin contradicts *Cambden* without producing any Authority for it.

Says *Cambden* is never to be believ'd concerning the Queen of *Scots*.

Cambden proceeds to give us a Letter of the Queen of *Scots* to Queen *Elizabeth*, on her Arrival in *England*, containing a short Narrative of the Usage she had met with from her rebellious Subjects ; wherein she says, her Majesty must be sensible of the Plots that had been fram'd against her by Men whom she had rais'd to an envied pitch of Greatness ; that they had the Confidence to break into her Chamber ; to murder her Servant before her Face, and to imprison her Person when she was big with Child ; and having obtain'd a Pardon from her for this Outrage, afterwards charg'd her with a new pretended Crime : *

The Substance of the Queen of *Scots* Letter to Queen *Elizabeth*.

* Here *Rapin* has miscited the Queen of *Scots* Words, or rather forg'd a Passage, from which he draws Inferences to her Disadvantage, as will appear to any one who takes the trouble of comparing the Letter in *Cambden's* Compleat Hist. Vol. II. p. 411. with the Passage *Rapin* recites, Vol. VIII. p. 378. 8vo Edit.

A.D. 1568 That they cast her into Prison a second time, stript her of her Servants, and terrified her into a Resignation of her Kingdom : That she afterwards made her Escape, and being attended by the principal Nobility of *Scotland*, she offer'd her disaffected Subjects a free Pardon, and to refer their Grievances to a Parliament ; but they detain'd her Messengers, and declar'd her Adherents Traytors : That thereupon, seeing she must either hazard being made a Sacrifice, or a Prisoner again, she took a Resolution of marching to *Dunbritton* ; but they intercepted her Passage, and defeated her Troops ; whereupon she fled to her Majesty's Dominions, promising herself, from her Generosity and Friendship, the Aid and Protection she wanted : She desired therefore a Safe-Conduct, that she might inform her Majesty more at large of her Circumstances, if she should think her worth her Pity or Regard.

Rapin questions if there was such a Letter, and brings a false Quotation to calumniate the Queen of *Scots*.

This Letter *Cambden* affirms he took from the Original, and yet *Rapin* makes a Question whether there ever was such a Letter : And, what is still more shocking, pretending to cite a Passage out of it from *Cambden* (which is printed in *Italick*) he has evidently misrecited *Cambden's* Words, and made him speak what he never thought, as will appear to any one who compares this Passage with the Letter in *Cambden* : And this he did with a malicious Design of making that forg'd Passage an Evidence, that the Queen of *Scots* was accessory to her Husband's Murder, for that is the Inference he draws from it ; and yet this is the Man, or rather the Monster of an Historian our credulous Countrymen run so greedily to view.

But

But to return to the Queen of Scots. The Queen upon receipt of her Letter sent Sir Francis Knolles to her, and promis'd her all the Protection that was due to her Cause ; but declines admitting her to her Presence, because she stood charg'd, she said, with many Mismanagements, and therefore order'd her to be convey'd to *Carlisle*, as to a Place of greater Security, should her Enemies make any Attempt upon her : Whereupon *Mary* sent the Lord *Heris* to the Queen, to desire she might have Leave to remonstrate the Wrongs that had been done her, and clear her Innocence ; or else, that she would give her Leave to depart out of the Kingdom, and crave Assistance elsewhere ; and that she might not live like a Prisoner in *Carlisle* Castle, since her coming into *England* was a voluntary Act, in confidence of that Friendship the Queen had made so many honourable Professions and Promises of, by Letters, Messages, and other Tokens.

Rapin, in his Reflections on this Relation given by *Cambden*, again misrecites his Words, and then draws this Inference from them, *That there is not a single Word in Cambden's Annals relating to the Queen of Scots, but what must be guarded against.* These Letters, join'd with *Heris's* Representations, says *Cambden*, had such an Effect on Queen *Elizabeth*, that she seem'd, at least, touch'd (for who can dive into the Hearts of Princes, of which they who are wise always keep the Key) with an hearty and feeling Sense of her Kinswoman's Disasters ; and the rather was she inclin'd to hear her, because she had freely submitted her Cause to a fair and equal Debate, and engag'd to prove her Adversaries guilty of all the Miscarriages they had unjustly loaded her

A.D. 1563

A. 10 Eliz.

The
Queen's
Answer to
the Queen
of Scots
Letter.
Queen of
Scots con-
vey'd to
Carlisle
Castle.
Her 2d
Letter to
Queen *Elizabeth*.

Rapin cau-
tions his
Readers
again not
to believe
Cambden.

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.


Instances
of Rapin's
unfair
Quotations.

Rapin inconsistent
with himself.

with ; *these are Mr. Cambden's Words.* * Whereas, when *Rapin* pretends to repeat what *Cambden* writes on this Occasion, he makes him say, That *Elizabeth* was touch'd with Compassion (absolutely) without inserting the Word *seem'd*, or any part of the qualifying Parenthesis above-mention'd : Then he observes, that *Cambden* stretches when he says *Mary, in her Letters*, offer'd to prove her Adversaries guilty ; for, says he, she never attempted to prove any such thing : Now, whoever will take the Pains to peruse *Cambden's* Account of this Matter, will find that he never said the Queen of Scots offer'd to prove her Adversaries guilty *in her Letters*. And indeed this would have been very ridiculous in him, when he had produc'd a Copy of the Letters just before, which had no such Passage in them : But *Cambden* says, These Letters join'd with *Heris's Representations*, had such an Effect, &c. Now, if the Queen of Scots offer'd by *Heris* to prove her Adversaries guilty, there was no Occasion to repeat the same thing in her Letters : Doubtless Lord *Heris* was commission'd to say a great deal more than was contain'd in those Letters, or to what Purpose was he sent to the Court of *England*. And whereas *Rapin* here affirms positively, That the Queen of Scots never attempted to prove her Adversaries guilty, this very accurate Author acknowledges, p. 393, That *Mary* demanded *Earl Murray* (her principal Enemy) should be sent to Prison, affirming she could convict him of being Author of the King's Murder ; and p. 385, he makes Queen *Elizabeth* tell

* *Cambden's Compleat Hist.* Vol. II. p. 411. *Rapin*, Vol. VIII. p. 379. 8vo Edit.

Murray it was necessary he should clear himself of the Crimes he was accus'd of. But to proceed, whatever might be Queen Elizabeth's private Thoughts in relation to the Queen of Scots, it is evident she left the Matter to be determin'd by the Council, who came to a Resolution, That it was expedient to detain her as a Prisoner of War; and that she should not be releas'd till she gave Satisfaction for usurping the Title to the Crown, and gave some Answer also concerning her Husband the Lord Darnley's Death, who was a Native and Subject of England.

A.D. 1568
A. 10 Eliz.

 The Council determine to detain the Queen of Scots.

Rapin takes upon him, p. 380, to censure the Queen of England for detaining the Queen of Scots; for this Reason, among others: That she was far from being liable to be suspected of any ill Design against England; and yet, in the very next Page, he affirms, She was a very dangerous Rival to the Queen of England; and, that there was no way left (to secure the Government) but to keep her in England; so very consistent is that Writer with himself.

Rapin again inconsistent with himself.

In the mean time, Earl Murray assembled a Parliament in the young King's Name, gets his Proceedings approv'd, and the Estates of the Queen's Adherents confiscated; whereupon Queen Elizabeth let him know, she was offended at his taking upon him, in this manner, to depose his Sovereign, and summon'd him to send Deputies to answer the Complaints the Queen of Scots made against him and his Party, and to give sufficient Reasons for their deposing of her: And as Earl Murray was not able to maintain himself in the Regency, without Queen Elizabeth's Assistance, he thought fit to obey her Summons, and came

Murray gets his Proceedings confirm'd by Parliament.

Queen Elizabeth summons Murray to answer the Queen of Scots Charge against him.

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

The Differences between the Queen of Scots and her Subjects heard by the English Commissioners at York.

Earl Lidington advises the Scots not to expose their Queen, and make Elizabeth Umpire of their Differences.

to York, the Place appointed, on the 4th of October, attended by seven of his Creatures, who were to act as Deputies, or Commissioners in the Name of the Infant King, among whom was *Buchanan* the Person employ'd to draw up the Charge against the Queen of Scots: Earl *Lidington* also attended as Secretary of Scotland, tho' he was generally look'd upon to be in a different Interest: The Queen of Scots also deputed Commissioners to York to defend her Cause; and the same Day arriv'd *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*, *Thomas Ratcliff* Earl of *Suffex*, and *Sir Ralph Sadler* as Commissioners from the Queen of England, to hear their Differences debated: The 7th of October having being appointed for the Parties to appear, the Queen of England's Commissioners order'd their Commission to be read; after which, the Deputies for the Infant King (or rather for *Murray*) being withdrawn, Earl *Lidington* represented to them that it appeared from the Commission granted by Queen *Elizabeth*, That she design'd nothing else but that the Deputies of Scotland should throw a Blemish on the King's Mother, that she might become Umpire of their Differences: He thought it prudent therefore to wave so scandalous an Impeachment, unless the Queen of England would enter into an Alliance with them, to defend them against the Attacks of the Queen's Friends in France, and elsewhere, who would certainly resent this Treatment of their Sovereign, as well as their King himself when he should arrive at Man's Estate.

This Advice is suggested by some Writers to come from the Duke of *Norfolk*, the first of the English Commissioners.

But

But whoever advis'd the *Scots* to wave the Accusation, each Party prepar'd to make good their Allegations : The Deputies of the Queen of *Scots*, in the first place, entring their Protest, That tho' their Queen were willing to have the Cause between her and her disloyal Subjects heard before the *English* ; yet she did not thereby subject herself to the Jurisdiction of any Person whatever, being a free Princess. To which the *English* Commissioners answer'd, That they did not admit that Protest in Prejudice to the Claim of the Kings of *England*, being superiour Lords of the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

The next Day the Queen of *Scots* Deputies exhibited a Charge in writing, declaring that the Earls of *Morton*, *Marr*, *Glencairn*, *Humes*, *Lindsey*, *Ruthuen*, *Sempil*, &c. had rais'd an Army in the Queen's Name against her Person ; that they had imprison'd her, seiz'd her Treasure, and crown'd her Son *James* Earl of *Murray* usurping the Royal Authority under the Title of Regent.) That the Queen, after eleven Months Imprisonment, had made her Escape, and declar'd upon Oath, that whatever she had done in Prison was extorted from her by Force and Threats ; that she had endeavour'd to agree Matters amicably with her Enemies, but they had fallen upon her in her March towards *Dunbritton*, kill'd many of her good Subjects, imprison'd and ruin'd others, and compell'd her to fly into *England*, where she had crav'd the Queen's Assistance to recover her Crown.

Some Days after *Murray* and his Party put in their Answer ; wherein they shew, That *James Hepburn* Earl of *Bothwell*, suppos'd to have murder'd the Lord *Darnley*, having

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

A Protest of the Q. of *Scots* Commissioners against the Superiority of *England*. Disallow'd by the *English*.

Queen of *Scots* Commissioners charge her Enemies with Rebellion and Usurpation.

The Substance of *Murray's* Accusation of the Queen of *Scots*.

A.D. 1568 having wrought himself into the Queen's Affections, carried her away by a seeming Force, but with her own Consent, to *Dunbar*, and there married her ; at which several *Scottish* Lords being offended, endeavour'd to punish *Bothwell*, and release the Queen from those unlawful Bonds ; but that the Queen sending away *Bothwell*, and threatening Revenge, they were under a Necessity of confining her ; and that she bending under the Weight of a Crown, had *voluntarily* resign'd the Kingdom to her Son, and constituted *Murray* Viceroy ; and that these Proceedings had been approv'd by the Lords in Parliament.

The Substance of the Queen of Scots Reply.

To which the Deputies of the Queen of Scots reply'd, That she was ignorant that *Bothwell* had any Hand in the Murder, and that he had been acquitted in Parliament, by the Consent of those very Persons who now accus'd him, and who had perswaded the Queen to marry him, that he might assist her to sustain the Weight of the Government. That they afterwards, however, rais'd Forces, and attack'd the Queen under pretence of bringing *Bothwell* to a Tryal, to which, when she readily consented, they gave him Notice to make his Escape, and seiz'd her Person, treating her with great Indignity. And whereas they had suggested, that her Troubles induc'd her to resign her Crown, nothing was more false ; she was neither made incapable by Age or Sickness, but had Vigour enough both of Body and Mind to manage the Affairs of her Throne : That she was advis'd indeed by her Friends to resign, to avoid the Fate she had otherwise undergone ; but was inform'd at the same time, by Sir *Nicholas Throckmorton*, the *English* Ambassador, and others, that such

such a Resignation obtain'd by Force was void ; and that she had revok'd it as unjust and extorted, as soon as she obtain'd her Liberty : And as to the Act of Parliament they mention'd, there were not (out of an hundred Lords) more than 12 or 13 present in that tumultuous Assembly which confirm'd her Resignation ; some of whom enter'd their Protests, That nothing ought to have been transacted against the Queen while she was a Prisoner ; and they did therefore request Queen *Elizabeth* that she would assist the distress'd Queen, her Kinswoman, who had receiv'd such injurious Treatment from her Subjects : This is the Substance of what Mr. *Cambden* says, he copied from the Original Papers of the Commissioners.

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

The *English* Commissioners still demanding that *Murray* should give some Reasons for his proceeding in this rough Manner against a Sovereign Queen, and that he should produce more substantial Proofs (for there appear'd no Witness, or any thing, but some forg'd or suspected Papers) *Murray* only said, that he was loth to impeach his Sister further before Strangers, unless the Queen of *England* would engage to protect the young King, and to abandon the Interest of the Queen of *Scots* : Whereupon one or two of the Agents on each Side being summon'd to *London*, Queen *Elizabeth* declar'd she was still of Opinion the Subjects of *Scotland* were much to blame, and desir'd to hear what further they had to offer in their Defence ; but *Murray*, who was now come up, refus'd to proceed in the Accusation of his Sister, upon any other Terms than those he had insisted on at *York* : Queen *Elizabeth* afterwards revok'd her Commission to the Duke

Murray declines producing his Proofs.

The Commissioners adjourn'd to *London*.

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

New

Commis-
sioners ap-
pointed by
Queen Eli-
zabeth.Murray
exhibits a
freshCharge a-
gainst his
Sister, on
very slender
Proofs.Some Bal-
lads, and
*Bucha-
nan's* Book
part of the
Evidence.Queen Eli-
zabeth de-
clares she
believ'd
the Queen
of Scots
innocent.And yet
fides with
Murray.
Murray
treache-
rous to the
Duke of
Norfolk
and the Q.
of Scots.

of *Norfolk*, &c. and appointed other Com-
missioners, before whom *Murray*, notwith-
standing his pretended Squeamishness to ac-
cuse his Sister, drew up another Charge against
her, while he endeavour'd to make good, by
some conjectural Proofs and Circumstances, a
few Affidavits, and the Acts of the above-men-
tion'd Convention ; but the greatest Strefs was
laid on some Love-Letters, Poems or Ballads,
which he said were written by the Queen's
own Hand, which were produc'd to prove
her guilty of her Husband's Murder ; and to
support this Evidence, he gave them a Book
of *Buchanan's*, entitled, *The Detection*, which
met with but little Credit, says *Cambden*, *the*
Book being partial, and the Author look'd upon
as a mercenary Writer ; and for the Letters
and Verses, there being no Name or Date to
them, and suspected to be counterfeited, they
gain'd but little Belief : *Melvil* assures us, that
Queen *Elizabeth* acquainted the Queen of *Scots*,
that she believ'd she was wrongfully accus'd,
and could not enough detest the Insolence of
her Accusers, with whom *Cambden* agrees.
However, *Murray* appears to have been still
in the Queen of *England's* Favour ; for Duke
Hamilton coming from *France* about this time,
and applying to Queen *Elizabeth*, that she
would countenance his Pretensions to the Re-
gency of *Scotland*, as he was the nearest Rela-
tion of the young King, Queen *Elizabeth*
would not consent to it, but maintain'd *Mur-
ray* in the Administration : And indeed Earl
Murray apparently play'd a double Game
while he was at the Court of *England* ; for
we find he pretended to desire a Reconciliation
with his Sister the Queen of *Scots*, gave her
Hopes of being restor'd to her Throne, and
propos'd

propos'd a Match privately between her and the Duke of *Norfolk*, and afterwards discover'd the Secret to Queen *Elizabeth*, and accused his Sister of holding a Correspondence with other Powers, and particularly with the Pope, by one *Ridolph* an *Italian*, who was employ'd to foment an Insurrection in *England*: Whereupon the Queen of *Scots* was remov'd from *Bolton*, which lay in a Popish Neighbourhood, to *Tutbury*, and committed to the Care of the Earl of *Shrewsbury*. 'Tis extremely probable therefore, there was always a good Understanding between the Queen of *England* and Earl *Murray*; as it was the Interest of both of them that the Queen of *Scots* should never be releas'd, they were united in their Endeavours to prevent it.

In the mean time, the *French* Court fell upon the *Hugonots* again, without regarding the Peace that had been so lately made; whereupon they took up Arms in their Defence, and sent to Queen *Elizabeth* for Relief, who furnish'd them with two hundred thousand Crowns, and a Train of Artillery, and warlike Stores: She also supported the Protestants in the *Low Countries* against the Tyranny of the Duke of *Alva*; and such of them as fled to *England* were kindly receiv'd, and plac'd in *Colchester*, *Norwich*, *Maidstone*, *Southampton*, and other great Towns, where they very much improv'd the Woollen and Linen Manufactures.

An Accident happen'd about the same time, which occasion'd a short Rupture between *Spain* and *England*: Some *Italian* Merchants had hir'd several *Spanish* Ships, to carry a considerable Treasure to the *Netherlands*, to be made Use of there as a Bank; but when they came into the *English* Channel, the *Span-*

A.D. 1568

A. 10 Eliz.

Whereupon the Q. of Scots is more strictly confin'd.

The Civil War in France reviv'd.

Queen Elizabeth assists the Protestants.

Several French and Dutch Families take Refuge in England, and improve our Manufactures.

A Rupture between England and Spain.

A.D. 1568 *niards* were chas'd by some *French* Ships, and oblig'd to take Refuge in the Ports of *England*; the Queen supposing, at first, the Money belong'd to the King of *Spain*, order'd it to be taken Care of, and the *Spaniards* to be well us'd; but being inform'd afterwards, that some *Italian* Merchants were the Owners of the Treasure, and that the Duke of *Alva* intended to seize it by Force, and apply it to the maintaining the War against the Protestants in the *Low Countries*, she took it herself, and gave the Merchants Security for it: And when the Duke of *Alva* sent to demand the Money, she let him know, that if the King of *Spain* made it appear it belong'd to him, she would be answerable for it; but absolutely refus'd it till then: Whereupon the Duke of *Alva* seiz'd the Effects belonging to the *English* in the *Low Countries*; and the Queen on the other hand seiz'd those belonging to the Merchants of *Spain* and *Flanders*, and issu'd a Proclamation, containing her Reasons for detaining the Treasure which belong'd to the *Italian* Merchants.

A.D. 1569 The *Spanish* Resident, on the other hand, publish'd several Libels reflecting on her Majesty, for which he was confin'd to his House for some Days; and the Queen complain'd to the King of *Spain* of the Insolence of his Minister. As the detaining this Treasure was like to occasion a War between *England* and *Spain*, and Secretary *Cecil* was deem'd the Adviser of it, the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Marquis of *Winchester*, the Treasurer, and several Noblemen of the first Rank, took this Opportunity to represent him to the Queen as an Incendiary; but their Prejudice to *Cecil* appears to have proceeded really from an Apprehension that he

Cecil accus'd of engaging the Nation in a War with *Spain*.

he inclin'd more to the Succession of the *Sussex* Family, than to that of the Queen of *Scots*: And Queen *Elizabeth* being satisfied of the Fidelity of her Minister, soon oblig'd those Lords to desist from prosecuting him.

In the mean time, the *Spaniards* and *Flemings* had Orders to take the *English* Ships wherever they met with them, and several *English* Merchants were prosecuted in their Courts of Inquisition, and sent to the Gallies; at which the Merchants of *England* were so exasperated, that they fitted out Privateers, and made *Reprisals* on the *Spaniards*; but the Queen, it seems, endeavour'd still to prevent things being brought to Extremity, and therefore publish'd a Proclamation, prohibiting the taking the Ships belonging to the King of *Spain's* Subjects, tho' she knew that Prince was, at that time, tampering with the Duke of *Norfolk* to incite a Rebellion in *England*, as he was with the Earl of *Ormond* to procure an Insurrection in *Ireland*, of which these Noblemen gave her Majesty Advice.

This Year the *Dutch*, and some interloping *English* Merchants, having prejudic'd the Duke of *Muscovy* against the *Russia* Company, that Trade was suspended for some time; but the Queen sending Sir *Thomas Randolph* her Ambassador to *Russia*, with her Compliments to the Duke, that Trade was reviv'd, and greater Privileges granted the *English* Company than formerly: It seems they were permitted to pass from *Archangel* thro' *Muscovy*, and, embarking on the great River *Volyn*, to sail into the *Caspian* Sea, and trade with the *Persians* and *Indians*. They even propos'd to have open'd a Trade with *China* that way, but they were not then acquainted with the Nature of

A.D. 1569

A. 11 Eliz.

He is protected by the Queen. The *Spaniards* commit Hostilities on the *English*.

The Queen prohibits her Subjects making *Reprisals*.

The Trade with *Russia* suspended.

Restor'd, and greater Privileges granted to the *Russia* Company. They attempt to trade thro' *Russia* to *India* and *China*.

A.D. 1569 of those Countries, and the Difficulties of the Voyages: After some fruitless and expensive Attempts, therefore, they were forc'd to desist from that Enterprize; however, this shews the Genius of our Ancestors in that Age for making new Discoveries, and extending their Commerce: And indeed the Foundation of our Trade with the *East* and *West-Indies*, *China* and *Japan*, as well as with the *Northern* Kingdoms of *Europe*, was laid in this Reign.

A. 11 Eliz. It was in this Year also, that our Merchants establish'd their Factory at *Hamburg* in *Germany*, on their Trade being interrupted with the *Low Countries*.

The Trade with *Hamburg* establish'd.

Treaty between *Q. Elizabeth* and the *Duke of Muscovy*.

The Treaty, which the Duke of *Muscovy* propos'd to enter into with the Queen of *England*, on the Revival of the Trade of the *Russia* Company, had some Articles in it very extraordinary; particularly, that if the Duke should be driven out of his Dominions, the Queen of *England* should receive and entertain him, with his Wife and Children, in a manner becoming so great a Prince; assign him a convenient Residence, grant him the free Exercise of his Religion, and suffer him to depart whenever he saw fit: And that the Duke would afford the Queen the like Refuge, if she should be driven from her Throne. For, as this *Russian* Prince was one of the greatest Tyrants that ever reign'd, and might justly expect to be depos'd; so he was inform'd, that the Queen was surrounded with foreign and domestick Enemies, and might stand in need of the like Retreat and Protection.

From the kind Reception that Earl *Murray*, Regent of *Scotland*, had met with at the *English* Court, and her Majesty's accommodating

dating him with a great Sum of Money, it was reported, that he had agreed with Queen *Elizabeth* to send the young King to *England*, to put *English* Garrisons into the Castles of *Edinburgh* and *Sterling*: And that the Queen had agreed to set *Murray* on the Throne of *Scotland*, in case the King died without Issue, and was to hold that Kingdom of the Crown of *England*. These Reports obtain'd such Credit, that Queen *Elizabeth* found herself under the Necessity of publishing a Proclamation to confute them; wherein she observes, that these Rumours had been rais'd by those who were Enemies to both Kingdoms; declaring also, that there was as little Foundation for another Report that was current at that time, viz. That the Earls of *Hertford* and *Murray* had mutually oblig'd themselves to assist each other in seizing the Crowns of *England* and *Scotland*. On the contrary, Queen *Elizabeth* protested she would be very glad to see Matters accommodated between the Queen of *Scots* and her Son; and propos'd to *Murray* and his Party, either the restoring her to her Throne, or the admitting her to share the Government with her Son; or lastly, that she might return to *Scotland*, and be suffer'd to live privately: But the Sincerity of these Proposals is very much suspected by some Historians, *Murray* and his Party being so much at the Queen of *England's* Devotion, that they would not, nor indeed durst, have refus'd her any of these Demands, if she had insisted strenuously on their Compliance.

And now the Proposal which *Murray* first made the Duke of *Norfolk* at the Congress at *York*, of marrying the Queen of *Scots*, was again reviv'd; several *English* Noblemen and Courtiers

A.D. 1569
A. 11 Eliz.
 Reports concerning a Treaty between Q. *Elizabeth* and E. *Murray*.

Q. *Elizabeth* makes Proposals to the *Scots* concerning the restoring their Queen.

The Proposal for the Duke of *Norfolk's* marrying the Queen of *Scots* reviv'd.

A.D. 1569

A. 11 Eliz.



Courtiers engaging to promote it, and none more than the Earl of *Leicester*, who had promis'd to break the Matter to Queen *Elizabeth*, and obtain her Consent ; but he is generally thought to have been a Spy upon *Norfolk*, and to have encourag'd him in this Attempt to procure his Ruin : Certain it is, *Leicester* neglected to demand the Queen's Consent till the Matter was become publick, and the Queen had heard of it from several other Hands, and very probably from *Leicester* himself in a private way.

Terms of-
fer'd the
Queen of
Scots.

In the mean time the Duke of *Norfolk's* Friends had propos'd to the Queen of *Scots* the following Terms, which were written with *Leicester's* own Hand, viz. That she should attempt nothing to the Prejudice of the Queen of *England* and her Heirs as to the Succession : That there should be an Offensive and Defensive Alliance between the two Kingdoms ; and that she should establish the Protestant Religion in *Scotland*, and pardon her Subjects that had opposed her. To these the Queen of *Scots* readily agreed, except the Article of Alliance, which she said she must consult the *French* King in before she resolv'd on.

Queen *Elizabeth* re-
primands
the Duke
of *Norfolk*
for at-
tempting
this Mar-
riage.

Queen *Elizabeth*, having been acquainted with every Step that was taken in this Affair, advis'd the Duke of *Norfolk* to be very careful on what Pillow he laid his Head ; but he not seeming to understand her, she afterwards reprimanded him severely for attempting to marry the Queen of *Scots* without her Knowledge, and commanded him on his Allegiance to give over his Addresses ; which the Duke promis'd her he would, and seem'd to slight the Alliance, declaring, he thought himself little inferior in Point of Estate to a King of

Scotland.

Scotland. However, finding the Queen still jealous of him, and that *Leicester*, and the rest of the Court, began to slight him, he retir'd in some Disgust to his Seat in *Norfolk*, without taking Leave of her Majesty. Having remain'd in *Norfolk* some time, he return'd to Court by the Advice of his Friends, and threw himself upon the Queen's Mercy; but Earl *Murray* sending Advice from *Scotland*, about the same time, that the Duke had threaten'd his Life if he did not promote the Match, and declar'd that he would never forsake the Queen of *Scots*, and that he had privately concerted Measures with the Bishop of *Ross*, the Queen of *Scots* Agent, to obtain his Ends, Queen *Elizabeth* caus'd the Duke to be apprehended; and having reproach'd him with retiring from Court without Leave, with an Intention to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, she order'd him to be sent to the *Tower*. The Bishop of *Ross*, and *Ridolph* the Pope's Agent, were also committed to the Custody of Secretary *Walsingham*, and the Earl of *Pembroke*, who was thought to have a great Share in promoting this Project, was confin'd to his House: Several other Noblemen confess'd they had advis'd the Match, and begg'd her Majesty's Pardon, declaring, that all of them had determin'd to make the Queen acquainted with the Matter before it was concluded. There were, at the same time, several Pamphlets publish'd against the Match, and the Title of the Queen of *Scots* to the Crown of *England*; but Queen *Elizabeth* still permitted the Bishop of *Ross*, and others, to write in Defence of the Queen of *Scots* Title.

A.D. 1569

A. 111 Eliz.

The Duke
retires
from
Court.He is sent
to the
Tower.

A.D. 1569

A. 11 Eliz.

~~~~~

The Earls  
of *Nor-*  
*thumber-*  
*land* and  
*Westmor-*  
*land* raise  
a Rebelli-  
on.

The Pope, and the King of *Spain*, having employ'd their Agents this Year to incite an Insurrection among the Papists in *England*, and promis'd to support them, there appear'd a great Disposition in the People to a Rebellion every-where ; of which the Court being appriz'd, sent to the Earl of *Sussex*, who commanded her Majesty's Forces in the *North*, to have a particular Eye upon the Earls of *Westmorland* and *Northumberland*, two Roman Catholick Noblemen, who were most suspected to be in the *Spanish* Interest ; and the Queen receiving still fresh Advice of their Disaffection, commanded them both to come to Court without delay : Whereupon the Earls expecting that their Designs against the Government were discover'd, immediately had recourse to Arms, pretending their Design was only to restore the Religion of their Ancestors, to remove evil Counsellors, and to procure the Duke of *Norfolk*, and some other Peers, who had lately been dismiss'd from Court, the Favour of the Queen, to whom they still vow'd inviolable Fidelity.

The Rebels amounting to about five thousand Men, Horse and Foot, had design'd in the first place to have attack'd *Tutbury* Castle, and to have set the Queen of *Scots* at Liberty ; but the Government being acquainted with their Intentions, caus'd the Queen of *Scots* to be remov'd from *Tutbury* to *Coventry*, a Place of greater Strength ; which the Rebels being inform'd of, and that the Earl of *Sussex*, and some other of the Queen's Generals were about to surround them with numerous Forces, the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmorland* fled, with some of their Followers, to the Borders of *Scotland*, and the rest of the

Rebels

They fly  
into *Scot-*  
*land*.



Rebels thereupon dispers'd without coming to an Engagement ; but several of them being apprehended, sixty-six petty Constables were hang'd up for an Example at *Durham*, together with one *Plomtree* a Priest : Several more were executed at *York* and *London*, and the Earls, with about forty or fifty more of noble Extraction, who had made their Escapes, were outlaw'd, and their Estates confiscated.

*Leonard Dacres*, Son of the Lord *Dacres*, being at Court at the Time of this Insurrection, offer'd the Queen his Service against the Rebels, who knowing him to be a popular Man in the *North*, and not suspecting his Fidelity, granted him a Commission to raise Forces ; by virtue whereof he drew together a Body of near three thousand Men near the Borders, with whom, instead of opposing the Rebels, he intended to have join'd the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmorland* ; but the Earls being fled before *Dacres* could assemble his Friends, he ventur'd to take the Field with the Troops he had rais'd, and gave Battle to Lord *Hunsden* Governour of *Berwick*, who was order'd to attend his Motions ; the Engagement was very bloody on both Sides ; but the Queen's Troops at length proving victorious, *Dacres* fled, and made his Escape into the *Low Countries*. Whereupon the Peace of the Country was restor'd, and the Queen publish'd a General Pardon for all that had been concern'd in the Rebellion.

In the suppressing these Insurrections, it must be acknowledg'd, the Queen was no less indebted to an able Ministry than her good Fortune. It appears from several Letters in *Strype*, that the People were ripe for Rebellion in almost every County in *England* : Even

*A.D. 1569*  
*A. 111 Eliz.*  


An Insurrection by  
*Leonard Dacres*.

He is defeated.

The Nation generally disaffected.

A.D. 1569

A. 11 Eliz.



The Vigilance of the Ministry defeats every Conspiracy.

The Queen assists the French Protestants.

the Justices of the Peace and Magistrates could not be depended on. We find them generally revolting to Popery; insomuch, that Orders were sent down to several Counties, requiring them to subscribe the Act of Uniformity, and to resort to Divine Service in their respective Churches, which many of them refus'd: On the other hand, the Puritans were discontented, because the Queen would not establish the *Geneva* Form of Worship, and increas'd the Disaffection of the People to the Government: But such was the Vigilance and Penetration of the Ministry, that every Conspiracy was discover'd and defeated before it could be brought to a Head: The Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmorland* would have been join'd from all Parts of *England*, if they had not been push'd on precipitately to declare themselves before their Friends were ready; but being forc'd to take the Field with a handful of Men, before they could be join'd by their Accomplices at home, or reinforced from abroad, all their Plots were defeated, and the Government became more firmly establish'd than ever.

The Queen, having suppress'd these Insurrections at home, was call'd upon by the persecuted Protestants of *France* for her Assistance; and tho' she did not think fit to declare War against the *French* King, she lent the Queen of *Navarre* a large Sum of Money on her Jewels, and suffer'd a Troop of an hundred Voluntier Gentlemen (among whom was the celebrated Sir *Walter Raleigh*) to embark for *France*, and serve in the Protestant Army. She also gave a very hospitable Reception to such *French* and *Dutch* Protestants as fled for Refuge to *England*, and, with the

Bishops

Bishops and Clergy, contributed largely to their Support, which one would have thought should have reconcil'd Puritans to the Establishment.

A.D. 1569  
A. 11 Eliz.  
~~~~~

About the same time *Edmund* and *Peter Boteler*, Brothers to the Earl of *Ormond*, were incited by the Pope and *Spaniard* to raise an Insurrection in that Kingdom, on account of Religion; but the Earl of *Ormond* being sent over into *Ireland* to suppress this Insurrection, prevail'd on his Brothers to lay down their Arms; after which the rest of the Rebels dispers'd.

A Rebel-
lion in *Ire-*
land sup-
press'd.

The Earl of *Murray*, the better to make his Court to Queen *Elizabeth*, march'd in *January* with a Body of Troops to the Borders of *Scotland*, in search of the *English* Rebels that were fled thither, and, among others, seiz'd on the Earl of *Northumberland*, who was betray'd by the Person that pretended to conceal him; but the Regent was no sooner return'd from this Expedition, than he was shot by one *Hamilton*, as he rode thro' the Streets of *Lithquo*: After which the Assassin made his Escape by a Back-door, and went over to *France*: *Hamilton*, it seems, had been depriv'd of his Estate, imprison'd, and hardly us'd by the Regent on account of his adhering to the Queen, which put him upon this desperate Attempt.

A.D. 1570
A. 12 Eliz.
~~~~~  
E. *Murray*  
takes the  
Earl of  
*Northum-*  
*berland*.

E. *Murray*  
assassina-  
ted.

The Regent being dead, the Queen's Party were in hopes that the whole Kingdom of *Scotland* would have united in her Cause against the *English*, whom they endeavour'd to provoke by ravaging the Borders, expecting that this would have produc'd a general War between the two Nations: But Queen *Elizabeth* having order'd the Earl of *Sussex* hereupon to assemble

The *Eng-*  
*lish* Bor-  
ders ra-  
vag'd by  
the Queen  
of *Scots*  
Party and  
the Rebels.

*A.D. 1570* assemble an Army, and march into *Scotland*, declar'd at the same time, that she had no Quarrel with the *Scotish* Nation, and should only take Revenge on the *English* Rebels, and those who had been guilty of the late

*The E. of Suffex* invades *Scotland*.  
*The E. of Suffex* accordingly the Earl of *Suffex* advanc'd as far as *Edinburgh*, burning and demolishing several Towns and Castles belonging to the Queen of *Scots* Friends, tho' he did not seem to have Instructions to suppress that Party entirely, it not being the Interest of his Mistress, the Queen of *England*, to have this Kingdom united, and in a State of Tranquillity. While the *English* Army remain'd in *Scotland*, the King's Party made choice of the Earl of *Lenox* Grandfather of the young King for their Regent, being given to understand that this Choice would be acceptable to Queen *Elizabeth*.

*D. Hamilton, &c.* stand out for the Queen.  
 On the other hand, Duke *Hamilton*, the Earls of *Huntley* and *Argyle*, who acted as Lieutenants to the Queen of *Scots*, having received a considerable Supply of Arms, Ammunition and Money from the Duke of *Alva*, kept up the Spirits of their Party, and

*The Kings of France and Spain* interceed for the Queen of *Scots*.  
 the Ambassadors of *France* and *Spain* never ceas'd to solicit Queen *Elizabeth* to set the *Scotish* Queen at Liberty; but she answer'd, it would be a most egregious Folly in her to set that Queen at Liberty, who, by unlawful Artifices, had so openly attempted to possess herself of the Throne of *England*, and desir'd the Kings of *France* and *Spain* would give her Leave to provide for her own, and her People's Security: And now the Popish Prin-

*The Pope's Bull* against *Q. Elizabeth* publish'd.  
 ces, finding that the Queen of *Scots* Liberty was not to be obtain'd by their Sollicitations, encourag'd the Pope to publish the Bull that had



had pass'd the preceding Year against the Queen, wherein he declares her Majesty and her Adherents Hereticks, and to have incur'd the Sentence of Excommunication. That the Queen was depriv'd of her Throne, and absolves all her Subjects from their Allegiance, forbidding them to obey her on pain of Excommunication. Some *Norfolk* Gentlemen, about the same time, enter'd into a Conspiracy to set the Duke of *Norfolk* at Liberty; but it was discover'd, and *John Throckmorton* and two others executed for it: *John Felton*, who set the Bull above-mention'd upon the Bishop of *London's* Palace Gate, also was apprehended and hang'd: This Man boldly own'd the Offence at his Execution, looking upon it as a meritorious Act, and was esteem'd a Martyr by the Papists.

A.D. 1570

A. 12 Eliz.



A Conspiracy discover'd in *Norfolk*. *Felton* hang'd for setting up the Pope's Bull.

The Publication of the Bull had not the Effect that was expected from it; few of the Papists themselves seem'd to regard the Bull, or indeed to be pleas'd with it, as it gave the Government a Handle to use them more severely. In the mean time, the Duke of *Norfolk*, having humbled himself to the Queen, and confess'd his Imprudence, was releas'd out of the *Tower*, and suffer'd to live in his own House under the Care of Sir *Henry Nevil*: *Thomas* and *Edward Stanley*, two of the younger Sons of the Earl of *Derby*, form'd another Plot not long after to set the Queen of *Scots* at Liberty, and the *Scots* of the Queen's Party, at the same time, renew'd their Ravages on the *English* Borders. Whereupon the Earl of *Suffex* march'd again into *Scotland*, took several Places, and compell'd Duke *Hamilton*, and the Earls of *Huntley* and *Argyle* to give him Security to forbear all Acts of Hostility,

Duke of *Norfolk* releas'd out of the *Tower*.

A Plot to set the Q. of *Scots* at Liberty.

E. of *Suffex* marches into *Scotland* again, and makes Duke *Hamilton*, &c. submit.

A.D. 1570 Hostility, and not to assist the *English* Rebels for the future.

A. 12 *Eliz.*

Proposals made the Queen of *Scots* by the Court of *Eng-land*.

Propositions were made to the Queen of *Scots*, about this time, by the Court of *Eng-land* for an Accommodation, to which, if she would have consented, it was suggested that Queen *Elizabeth* would restore her to her Throne; but the Sincerity of the *English* Court, upon this Occasion, is suspected by several of our Historians. The most material Articles, propos'd to the Queen of *Scots* on this Occasion were, that she should renounce her Claim to the Crown of *England*, during the Life of *Elizabeth* and her Issue: That she should engage in no Alliance against *England*, or entertain any foreign Troops: That she should deliver up the *English* Fugitives, and make Reparation for the Ravages on the Borders: That the Murders of the Lord *Darnley* her Husband, and *Murray*, should be enquired into: That her Son should be sent into *England* as an Hostage: That she should not marry an *English* Man without the Queen's Consent, nor any other without the Consent of the States of *Scotland*.

The Queen of *Scots* Answer.

These Demands were generally agreed to, only the *Scotish* Queen would not consent to renounce her Alliance with *France*; nor could she deliver her Son, she observ'd, as an Hostage, he not being in her Power; neither was the Article concerning her Marriage approv'd by her, whereupon the Negotiation was broke off. To which the Bishop of *Ross's* Practices with the Pope, the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Alva*, for the Deliverance of his Mistress, did not a little contribute; at least, these Negotiations furnish'd *Elizabeth*

with

with a Pretence for putting an End to the Treaty with her. A.D. 1570

The Puritans were extremely troublesome in the University of *Cambridge* this Year, particularly \* *Cartwright*, Fellow of *Trinity College*, who endeavour'd entirely to subvert the Government of the Church, declaring, That there ought not to be either Archbishops, Archdeacons, Deans, Chancellors, or any other Officers, of whom mention was not made in Scripture. That all Clergymen ought to be upon the Level, and that the Offices of Bishop and Deacon, as retain'd in this Church, were not to be allow'd. That all Ministers ought to be elected by their respective Congregations, &c. Whereupon it is remarkable, that *Grindal* Archbishop of *York* (whom our modern Presbyterians pretend was a Puritan) among others, wrote to Secretary *Cecil* Chancellor of this University, to suppress these Incendiaries, whose Tenets, he said, were of dangerous Consequence to abolish external Policy and Distinction of States in the Ecclesiastical Government: Advising that *Cartwright* and his Adherents should be silenc'd in the Schools and Pulpits, and reduc'd to Conformity, or else expell'd: For it appears, that nothing less would satisfy these Saints, than the subverting the Constitution, and establishing the *Geneva* Model in the room of it.

There were others of them that were for reducing all Mankind to a Level, as well Laity as Clergy; but it is remarkable, their Friend and Disciple *Rapin* says not one Word of the Disturbance the Puritans gave the Government at this time.

*A. 12 Eliz.*

The Puritans very factious and troublesome to the Government.

Condemn'd by *Grindal*.

*Rapin* is silent as to the Behaviour of the Puritans of those times.

\* *Strype's Annals*, Vol. I. p. 627, &c.

A.D. 1571

A. 13 Eliz.

The Royal  
Exchange  
built.Secretary  
Cecil crea-  
ted Baron  
Burleigh.The Scots  
assert the  
deposing  
Doctrine.

Sir *Thomas Gresham*, the Queen's Merchant, having finish'd the *Exchange* in *Cornhill*, her Majesty was pleas'd to honour him so far as to go and take a View of that magnificent Building in *January* this Year, and to name it *The Royal Exchange*; soon after which she created her faithful Secretary Sir *William Cecil* Baron of *Burleigh*.

And now *Elizabeth*, having requir'd the *Scots* to give more satisfactory Reasons for deposing their Sovereign than they had hitherto done; the Earl of *Morton*, and several other Deputies, were sent from *Scotland* to justify their Conduct in that Affair, who deliver'd in a kind of Memorial in Writing, insisting, that by the Laws of *Scotland* (which were never heard of till this Occasion) the People of that Nation were superior to their King; nay, they would have it a universal Law, for which they cited *Calvin's* Opinion, That the Magistrates had every-where a Power of restraining the Ambition of Kings; and that it was lawful to imprison and depose bad Kings; and said it was owing to the Clemency of the People of *Scotland*, that their Queen had not been put to Death by them; with many other Expressions of the like Nature, such as turbulent Spirits, says *Cambden*, insolently invent against the Majesty of Princes. The Queen having read the Paper, declar'd she could see no Cause for this severe Usage of their Queen, and requir'd them to enter into Measures for composing the Differences in *Scotland*; whereupon some Conferences were held at the Lord *Bacon's* House, between the Deputies of the *Scots*, and others from their Queen, at which the *English* Ministers assisted, but they came to nothing.

Q. *Eliza-  
beth* de-  
clares they  
had no  
Reason to  
depose  
their  
Queen.



In the mean time, the Queen of *Scots* Party, in *Scotland*, were grievously oppress'd, and several of them put to Death. The Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, Brother to Duke *Hamilton*, was hang'd, under the Pretence of his being accessary to the Lord *Darnley's* Murder, tho' he was not allow'd a legal Tryal.

The Queen of *Scots*, finding there was now no Hopes of obtaining her Liberty from the Queen of *England*, sent Dispatches to the Duke of *Norfolk*, to the Pope, and the King of *Spain*, to procure her Enlargement by Force or otherwise; which having been copied over by *Higford*, the Duke of *Norfolk's* Secretary, were forwarded to *Spain* by the Pope's Agent *Ridolph*, who had remain'd several Years in *England* under the Character of an *Italian* Merchant: This Man found Means to propose to the Duke of *Norfolk* the bringing about a Revolution in *England*, declaring, That the King of *Spain* would assist him with ten thousand Men, if he would appear at the Head of the Party.

The Bishop of *Ros*, who resided at *London* as the Queen of *Scots* Ambassador, had form'd another Scheme for the Restoration of his Mistress, viz. That the Duke of *Norfolk*, with a select Company of Gentlemen, should seize Queen *Elizabeth*, during the Sitting of the Parliament, and make her Prisoner; on which he did not doubt, but a Majority of the Nation would declare for the Queen of *Scots*; but the Duke would not give Encouragement to it. In the mean time, the *French* King *Charles IX.* having made Peace with the *Hugonots*, and married the Emperor *Maximilian's* Daughter, renew'd the Project of mar-

A.D. 1571

A. 13 Eliz.

The Adherents of the Q. of *Scots* oppress'd.

The Q. of *Scots* applies to *Spain*, &c. to restore her with the Privy of the D. of *Norfolk*.

The Bishop of *Ros* forms another Project in behalf of the Q. of *Scots*.

A.D. 1571

A. 13 Eliz.

The  
Match be-  
tween Q.  
*Elizabeth*  
and the  
Duke of  
*Anjou* pro-  
pos'd  
again.  
The De-  
signs of  
each Par-  
ty.

rying his Brother the Duke of *Anjou* to the Queen of *England*, and several Conferences were held between the Ministers of both Crowns upon this Subject: But the Queen refusing to allow the Duke the Exercise of his Religion, nothing was concluded on at that time. Here Mr. *Cambden* insinuates, that the *French* King was never sincere in this Treaty, but only pretended to amuse his own Subjects the Protestants of *France*, that they might have no Suspicion of his Designs against them, and to divert the Queen of *England* from marrying the King of *Navarre* a Protestant Prince. On the other hand, it was suppos'd that the principal Design of Queen *Elizabeth*, in entering on this Treaty was, to induce the *French* King to be favourable to his Protestant Subjects, and to enable her to defeat the Designs of the Queen of *Scots*: But whatever were the

The Duke  
of *Norfolk*'s  
Treaty  
with the Q.  
of *Scots*  
discover'd.

Views of these two Princes, in this Treaty, the *English* Malecontents proceeded to hasten the Match between the Duke of *Norfolk* and the *Scotish* Queen, and actually obtain'd the Duke's Consent to it, notwithstanding his solemn Promise to the contrary, which the Ministry discover'd in this manner: *Ridolph*, the Pope's Agent, having been dispatch'd by the Queen of *Scots*, as has been intimated already, to solicit the Aid of the King of *Spain*, and other foreign Powers, meeting with one *Bailiff*, a Servant of hers, as he pass'd thro' the *Low Countries*, sent several Letters to *England* by him directed to the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Bishop of *Ross*, and others in the Secret: But *Bailiff* and his Packet were seiz'd on at his Arrival at *Dover*, from whence the Government obtain'd so much Light into the Conspiracy, that the Bishop of *Ross*, and Hig-

ford

*ford*, the Duke's Secretary, were apprehended, and the Secretary confess'd where the Copies of the Papers were, that had been sent to the King of *Spain*, &c. by *Ridolph*: Upon the Perusal whereof, Sir *Thomas Stanley*, Sir *Thomas Gerard*, *Roston*, and several more of the Queen's Friends, were committed. It appear'd also, that the Queen of *Scots* had sent the Sum of 1500 Pounds, or thereabouts to the *French* Ambassador, who made use of *Higford*, the Duke's Secretary, to remit it to her Friends in *Scotland*; but *Brown*, a Retainer of the Duke's, who was employ'd by *Higford* to carry the Money, discover'd the Matter, and deliver'd the Treasure, with the Letters and Cyphers sent with it, to the Privy Council.

In the Letters, sent to *Spain* and *Italy* by *Ridolph*, the Queen of *Scots* tells her Friends, that the *French* privately oppos'd her Marriage with *Don John* of *Austria*, and promoted the Match with the Duke of *Norfolk* in hatred to the *Spaniards*: That the Duke of *Alva* was of Opinion, the sending the Queen of *Scots* back to *Scotland* would be her Ruin; and advis'd, That she should rely wholly on *Spain*, and procure her Son to be sent thither, if possible, where he might be educated in the Popish Religion, and the *Scots* be thereby depriv'd of all Pretences, who cloak'd the Rebellion under his Name; and that these Advices sent by *Ridolph* should be kept from the knowledge of the *French*.

Upon the Discoveries made by these Letters, and others intercepted from the Pope to the Queen of *Scots*, wherein he tells her, he would be at the whole Expence of the War the *Spaniards* was about to enter into, in her behalf, if she would promise the Restoration of

The Substance of the Queen of *Scots* Letters to *Spain*.

A.D. 1571

A. 13 Eliz.

*A.D. 1571* of Popery. The Duke of *Norfolk* was examin'd, who not knowing what had been discover'd either by his Agents, or the intercepted Papers, deny'd his having any Knowledge of the Plot. Whereupon he was sent to the *Tower* again, on the seventh of *September*, and the Earls of *Arundel* and *Southampton*, the Lord *Lumley*, Lord *Cobham*, and several more, who were suppos'd to be privy to the Plot, were committed to Prison, who confess'd all they knew on hopes given them of a Pardon.

*A. 13 Eliz.*

The Duke of *Norfolk* and others sent to the *Tower*.

The Duke confesses his being privy to the Plot.

These Confessions being produc'd before the Duke, at a second Examination, he was astonish'd, and cry'd out, *I am betray'd and undone by my Confidents*. However, he endeavour'd to extenuate his Crime, and said, he had never consented to any thing that might prejudice the Queen or the Realm, and that he only intended to make use of foreign Troops to reduce the Queen of *Scots* rebellious Subjects to their Obedience. The Duke was afterwards examin'd in the Star-chamber upon Articles, in the Presence of the Nobility, and the Lord-Mayor, and Aldermen of *London*, this being thought necessary to convince the People he was not prosecuted without Reason. The Duke confess'd here all he knew of the matter: And it appearing upon the whole, that the Bishop of *Ross*, the Queen of *Scots* Ambassador, had been the principal Contriver of these Plots, it was resolv'd that he should no longer be reputed an Ambassador, but punish'd according to his Demerits. And when he insisted on his Privilege before the Council, he was told by the Lord *Burleigh*, that the Privilege of an Ambassador would not protect a Person who had conspired against

The Bishop of *Ross* examin'd, who insists on his Privilege as Ambassador.



against the Life of the Prince he was sent to. *A.D. 1571*  
 To which he answer'd, he hop'd they would  
*A. 13 Eliz.*  
 shew him as fair Play as *Throckmorton*, and  
 other *English* Ambassadors had met with in  
*Scotland*, who had notoriously rais'd and fo-  
 mented Rebellions there against the Queen of  
*Scots*, and yet suffer'd no other Punishment  
 than the being sent out of the Country :  
 Whereupon he was committed to the *Tower*,  
 and being examin'd again before the Council,  
 he endeavour'd to excuse the Queen, his Mis-  
 tress, who being a Prisoner, and in the Flower  
 of her Age, could not be thought guilty of any  
 Crime in endeavouring to regain her Liberty :  
 And as to the Duke of *Norfolk*, his intended  
 Marriage had been communicated to several  
 of the Queen of *England's* Council, who con-  
 sented to it ; and if he had promis'd to forsake  
 the Queen of *Scots*, he could not do it, there  
 having been a mutual Engagement of Mar-  
 riage between them before ; and lastly, he ex-  
 cus'd himself as an Ambassador and a Ser-  
 vant, who was bound in Duty not to abandon  
 his Sovereign in Distress, nor would he be  
 brought to confess the Names of the Gentle-  
 men who had offer'd their Service to the Duke  
 to seize the Queen.

While the Ministry in *England* were busied  
 in taking the Examination of the Conspira-  
 tors, the Earl of *Lenox*, Regent of *Scotland* *Two Fac-*  
 for the King his Grandson, held an Assembly *tions in*  
 of the States of that Kingdom at *Stirling* : *Scotland.*  
 And the opposite Faction, at the same time,  
 assembled the Nobility in the Queen of *Scots*  
 Interest at *Edinburgh*, to which Convention  
 they gave the Name of a Parliament. Du-  
 ring their Session, the Laird *Grange*, Gover-  
 nour of the Castle of *Edinburgh*, having form'd  
 a De-

A.D. 1517 a Design of surprizing the Lords at *Stirling*, sent a Detachment of his Garrison thither, who took the Regent out of his Bed, and had brought off the rest of the Lords; but the Soldiers fell to plundering the Town, and thereby gave the young King's Troops an Opportunity of drawing together, and rescuing their Friends. Whereupon *Grange's* Soldiers thought fit to retreat; and not being able to carry off their Prisoner the Earl of *Lenox*, some of the Party murder'd him, and the Earl of *Marr* was afterwards chosen Regent in his stead.

The Earl of *Lenox* the Regent kill'd.

An Act for the Security of the Queen's Person.

The Penalty of declaring who was next in Succession.

The Parliament of *England* assembling on the 2d of *April* this Year, and taking Notice of the several Plots and Conspiracies that had been form'd against her Majesty, pass'd an Act, making it Treason to intend the Destruction or bodily Hurt of the Queen, or to conspire to levy War against her. It was also made Treason to question the Queen's Right to the Crown, or to publish that she was an Heretick, Schismatick, Tyrant, Infidel, or Usurper; or to affirm, that the Laws and Statutes of the Realm do not bind the Succession of the Crown: And that whoever should affirm, by Printing or Writing, that any Person ought to be Heir or Successor to the Queen, *except the natural Issue of her Body*; should suffer one Year's Imprisonment for the first Offence, and incur a *Præmunire* for the second.

Upon these Words in this Act, *The natural Issue of her Body*, *Cambden* observes, the Queen's Enemies were very merry, *Natural Children* in-Law, being such as are born out of Matrimony. The Historian says, he was a young Man at that time, and heard some People say, that the Word *Natural* was in-  
serte

serted by *Leicester*, with a Design one time or other to impose a Bastard of his own begetting on the Nation, for the Queen's natural Issue. *A.D. 1571*  
*A. 13 Eliz.*

Another Act pass'd, making it High Treason to bring over Bulls or Rescripts from *Rome*; or to be reconcil'd, or to reconcile others, to that Church; and whoever reliev'd any such Offenders, or brought *Agnus Dei's*, *Graino's* Crucifixes, or other things consecrated by the Pope, should incur a *Premunire*. Treason to apply to *Rome*.

The Convictions and Forfeitures of the Rebels in the *North* also were confirm'd, and such Forfeitures as had happen'd within the Bishoprick of *Durham* were given to the Queen, tho' they belong'd of Right to the Bishop of that Diocese. And it was enacted, That such of the Queen's Subjects as had withdrawn themselves into foreign Countries, should forfeit their Estates, if they did not return within a limited Time; and all fraudulent Conveyances of their Lands should be void. Persons residing beyond Sea to forfeit their Estates.

By the 13 *Eliz. cap. 10.* It was enacted, That fraudulent Deeds made by Ecclesiasticks, to defeat their Successors of a Remedy for Dilapidations, should be void; and that the Leases made of any Ecclesiastical Living, for more than one and twenty Years, or 3 Lives, should be void. Dilapidations.

And by *cap. 12.* That every Ecclesiastick should subscribe the Articles of Religion, and declare his Assent and Consent to them. That none should be admitted to a Benefice who was now twenty-three Years of Age; and in Deacon's Orders: And that none should be admitted to preach and administer the Sacrament till 24, nor without Testimony of his Faith and Morals. Ecclesiasticks to subscribe the 39 Articles, &c.



*A.D. 1571* By *cap. 20.* That no Lease of a Benefice should be in force where the Incumbent should be absent 80 Days from his Cure in any one Year; and, that such Incumbent absent, should forfeit one Year's Profit of his Living, provided that a Person empower'd to take two Livings might place a Curate in one of them, and make a Lease of it.

*A. 13 Eliz.*  
Residence. Subsidy. By *cap. 26.* A Subsidy of six Shillings in the Pound granted by the Clergy, to be paid within three Years was confirm'd.

By *cap. 27.* Two Fifteenths, and Tenths, and one Subsidy were granted the Queen by the Laity.

Pardon. And by *cap. 28.* The Queen's General Pardon was confirm'd.

An Act was also propos'd in this Parliament, That if the Queen of *Scots* should offend against the Laws of *England* for the future, she should be proceeded against as if she was the Wife of an *English* Peer; but it was drop'd, on the Queen's intimating she did not approve of it.

A further Reformation propos'd by the Commons. Mr. *Strickland*, a Member of the Commons, propos'd a further Reformation in this Parliament, and some Alterations in the Common-Prayers and Ceremonies of the Church; particularly, he was offended with the Cross in Baptism and kneeling at the Sacrament, and mov'd to have these Matters regulated by the two Houses of Parliament. To which it was answer'd, that Matters of Ceremony were to be determin'd by the Queen, and that they were not to encroach on her Prerogative: And *Strickland*, for his exhibiting a Bill, and making a Speech in the *House of Commons* for the Reformation of Ceremonies, was order'd by the Privy-Council to forbear going to the

The Member who propos'd it forbad to take his Place in the House.



the *House of Commons*, till he had appear'd before that Board, and answer'd for his Presumption.

A.D. 1571

A. 13 Eliz.

This put the House into a Flame, being adjudg'd a high Breach of Privilege, and it was mov'd to fend and demand the Attendance of their Member; but the Court Party getting the Debate adjourn'd, the Council in the mean time intimated to Mr. *Strickland*, that he might take his Place in the House, and he accordingly appear'd there the next Day; but the Bill for regulating the Ceremonies of the Church was drop'd.

The House require their Member's Attendance.

The rest of the Acts of this Session will be taken Notice of at the end of the Reign.

Soon after the Rising of the Parliament, *John Story*, Doctor of *Laws*, was brought to his Tryal, being indicted for High-Treason, in having consulted one *Prestal*, a Magician, against the Queen's Life; for having conspir'd the Destruction of her Majesty, and curs'd her daily in his Grace before Meat, while he resided in the Court of the Duke of *Alva*. He was charg'd also with advising the Duke of *Alva* how to invade *England*, and raise a Rebellion in *Ireland*: To which he pleaded, that he was a Subject of the King of *Spain's*, and had serv'd him in the *Low Countries* many Years, and therefore could not be try'd for Treason against this Government; but it appearing he was born here, it was resolv'd, that no Man could relinquish his Country, and abjure his Prince and Nation at his Pleasure; and he was thereupon condemn'd. It appears from *Strype* also, that the Law was executed upon the Doctor with great Rigour, being cut down alive, and butcher'd in a very barbarous manner,

*Dr. Story* executed for soliciting a foreign Invasion.

A Subject born cannot transfer his Allegiance to another Prince.

*A.D.* 1571 manner, there being several Men to hold him while the Executioner ripp'd him up and embowell'd him ; which *Strype* seems to infer was but a just Retaliation for his Cruelties in the Reign of Queen *Mary*, having caus'd more Protestants to be burnt, than any other zealous Papist, except Bishop *Bonner*. About the same time died the celebrated Bishop *Fewel*, who wrote so learnedly in Defence of the Church of *England* against the Papists, being then scarce fifty Years of Age.

Bishop  
*Fewel*  
dies.

The Pa-  
pists for-  
sake their  
Parish  
Churches.

And the  
Puritans.

A Charac-  
ter of the  
Puritans  
by Dr.  
*Whitgift*.

It was observ'd this Year, that abundance of Papists refus'd to resort to their Parish Churches, tho' they were pretty conformable in this respect for the first twelve Years of the Queen : Whereupon the Bishops were order'd to put the Laws in execution against such Absenters ; the Puritans also began to separate from the Church, and set up Conventicles at this time.

The Character Dr. *Whitgift*, afterwards Archbishop of *Canterbury*, gives of these Men was, that they resembled the Pharisees ; that when they walk'd in the Streets, they hung down their Heads and look'd austere, and in Company sigh'd much, and seldom or never laugh'd. Their Temper was, that they sought the Commendation of the People. They thought it an heinous Offence to wear a Cap or Surplice ; but they slander'd and backbit their Brethren, rail'd on them by Libels, contemn'd Superiors, discredited such as were in Authority ; in short, disquieted the Church and State : And as for their Religion, they separated themselves from the Congregation, and would not communicate with those that went to Church, neither in Prayer, hearing the Word, nor Sacraments. They despis'd all

all those that were not of their own Sect as *A.D. 1571*  
 polluted, and not worthy to be saluted, nor *A. 13 Eliz.*  
 kept Company with. And therefore some of  
 them meeting their old Acquaintance, being  
 godly Preachers, had not only refus'd to sa-  
 lute them, but spit in their Faces, wishing the  
 Plague of God to light upon them ; and say-  
 ing, they were damn'd, and that God had  
 taken his Spirit from them.\*

I shall conclude this Year with taking No-  
 tice of a Piece of Justice of the Queen's, who  
 being surrounded with a multitude of Ene-  
 mies, and having had frequent Occasion to  
 borrow Money of her Subjects on Privy-Seals,  
 publish'd a Proclamation, declaring she would  
 repay whatever had been lent, at certain Days  
 mention'd in the Proclamation, and was ac-  
 cordingly as good as her Word.

The following Year, on the 16th of *Janu- A.D. 1572*  
*ary*, came on the Tryal of *Thomas Howard,*  
*Duke of Norfolk*, in *Westminster-Hall*, before *A. 14 Eliz.*  
*George Talbot Earl of Shrewsbury*, High-  
 Steward, and twenty-six more of his Peers: *The Duke*  
 He was indicted for High-Treason, in conspi- *of Norfolk's*  
 ring the Death of the Queen ; to raise a Re- *Tryal.*  
 bellion ; to subvert the Government, and to  
 change the Religion establish'd : And the In-  
 dictment further set forth, that in order to ef-  
 fect these Designs, he had endeavour'd to mar-  
 ry *Mary Queen of Scots*, whom he very well  
 knew laid Claim to the Crown of *England* ;  
 had written several Letters to her, and sent  
 her Pledges, Tokens, and Sums of Money.  
 That he had also remitted Sums of Money to  
 the Earls of *Westmorland* and *Northumber-*  
*land*, and other Rebels, who had been outlaw'd :

\* *Strype's Annals*, and *Life of Archbishop Whitgift*.



*A.D.* 1572 That he had aided and assisted the Duke of *Hamilton*, and the Earl of *Huntley*, her Majesty's declar'd Enemies : That he had, by *Ridolph* the *Italian*, solicited the Pope, the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Alva*, to invade *England*, and had agreed to raise Forces within this Kingdom to join their Army, and depose the Queen ; and that he had receiv'd Letters from the Pope, and the Duke of *Alva*, promising him their Assistance. This Tryal will be found in the first Volume of *State Tryals*, and therefore I shall only take Notice, That if we may credit the Examination of the Bishop of *Ross*, which was read in this Tryal, the Duke really dissuaded the *Scotish* Commissioners from accusing their Queen at *York* ; and that Earl *Lidington*, Secretary of *Scotland*, and Earl *Murray*, first propos'd the Marriage between the Duke and the Queen of *Scots* to him at *York*. The Evidence against the Duke was very full ; only he insisted, that tho' it was admitted he had been in a Conspiracy to marry the Queen of *Scots*, and to restore her to her Crown, that it ought not to be inferr'd from thence, that he had any Design against the Queen of *England*. He also objected, that there ought to have been two Witnesses brought into Court, and given their Evidence *Viva Voce* against him ; but this was over-rul'd, and the Examinations of several Witnesses that were read, held sufficient to convict him ; but in this he certainly had not fair Play, tho' there seems to have been enough prov'd, by Witnesses in Court, to convict him of High-Treason.

He is condemn'd.

The Lord High-Steward having pronounc'd the usual Sentence, the Duke struck his Breast, and



and said: *This is the Judgment of a Traytor, and yet I shall die as true a Man to the Queen as lives. I will not desire you to prefer a Petition for my Life. I do not desire to live. Only I beseech you, my Lords, to be humble Suitors to the Queen's Majesty, that she will be good to my Orphan Children; to permit my Debts to be paid, and to have some Consideration of my poor Servants.*

A.D. 1572

A. 14 Eliz.

There were some Conspiracies afterwards to deliver the Duke out of Prison, for which *Barney* and *Mather* were executed. Whereupon the Queen thought fit to call a Parliament, to advise with them for her own and the Nation's Security; and a little before their Meeting, *Walter Devereux*, Viscount *Hereford*, was created Earl of *Essex*, and *Edward*, Lord *Clinton*, the Admiral, was made Earl of *Lincoln*, *John Pawlet* of *Basing*, Son to the Marquis of *Winchester*, *Henry Compton*, *Henry Cheney*, and *Henry Norris*, were summon'd to the Parliament as Barons.

Plots to release him,

Creations of Nobility.

The Parliament meeting on the 8th of May, a Bill was brought in for examining the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church, in order to new-model them; which gave such Offence to the Queen, that Mr. Speaker declar'd on the 22d of May, it was her Majesty's Pleasure, That no Bills concerning Religion should be prefer'd, or receiv'd in the House, till the Matter had been first consider'd, and approv'd by the Clergy; and whereupon there were no further Attempts of this kind during this Session.

A Bill to new-model the Ceremonies of the Church.

Still the Duke of *Norfolk* remain'd a Prisoner in the *Tower*, having lain under Sentence of Condemnation five Months. Whereupon the Commons came to a Resolution, which

*A.D.* 1572 which they signified to her Majesty; That it was necessary Execution should be done upon the Duke, and he was executed on *Tower-Hill* accordingly the 2d of *June*, when he acknowledged he had been justly condemn'd by his Peers, and that he had treated with the Queen of *Scots* a second time, after he had promis'd the contrary, which, he said, disturb'd his Conscience; but that he never approv'd of the Pope's Designs, or of the Rebellion in the *North*, nor was he ever Popishly affected, since he had any Taste of Religion: As he was preparing for the Block, being offer'd a Handkerchief to cover his Eyes, he refus'd it, saying, *I am not in the least afraid of Death.*

They Address the Q. to proceed Capitally against the Queen of *Scots.* Nor did the Parliament think the taking off the Duke alone sufficient for her Majesty's Security: But both Houses came to a Resolution, That it was necessary to proceed capitally against the Queen of *Scots*; whom they apprehended the Contriver, or at least the Occasion of all the Attempts and Conspiracies against the Queen and Realm of *England*, and address'd her Majesty thereupon, who acknowledged this to be the best and surest way for her Preservation and Safety; yet, for certain Reasons, she desir'd they would defer their Proceedings in the matter to another time: However, the Commons pass'd a Bill, declaring the Queen of *Scots* guilty of High-Treason, and earnestly solicited her Majesty, that she might be executed; but the Queen thought fit to Prorogue the Parliament on the 30th of *June*, to avoid their Importunity, after they had pass'd two Acts for the Security of the Government, viz.

And prepare a Bill accordingly, but are Prorogued.

The

The 14 *Eliz. cap. 1.* Which made it Felony to feize or demolish any Fortrefs of the Queen's, and the holding them, or the Queen's Ships by Force against her, to be High-Treason.

A.D. 1572

A. 14 *Eliz.*

Penalty of seizing the the Q's Forts or Ships. Penalty of rescuing Prisoners for Treason.

*Cap. 2.* makes it Misprision of Treason, to rescue any Person committed for Treason before his Arraignment: And Treason to rescue a Prisoner condemn'd of High-Treason, which was occasion'd by the Attempts that had been made to deliver the Duke of *Norfolk*.

*Rapin*, in treating of the Duke of *Norfolk's* Conspiracy, makes this notable Remark, That the Design of it was to restore the Popish Religion in *England*, and depose the Queen; which no one ever doubted, if he means the Pope and the Catholick Powers that were concern'd in it; but as the Duke died a Protestant, and declar'd he had no such Intention, it is charitable to suppose he had not these Views, tho' this would possibly have been the Consequence of his Attempts in Favour of the Queen of *Scots*.

Soon after the Duke's Execution, the Lord *de la Ware*, and three others, were sent to the Queen of *Scots*, to expostulate with her on her repeated Practices against the Government; particularly, for usurping the Title and Arms of *England*: For treating of a Marriage with the Duke of *Norfolk*, without acquainting the Queen: For endeavouring to free the Duke out of Prison by Force: For inciting the Rebellion in the *North*, supporting the Rebels in *Scotland*, requiring the Pope and *Spaniards* to invade *England*, procuring the Pope's Bull, and permitting her Agents abroad to stile her Queen of *England*. Most part of which Charge the Queen of *Scots* deny'd; but as to

*Q. Elizabeth* reproaches the Q. of *Scots*, with her inciting Conspiracies, &c.



*A.D. 1572* the Treaty with the Duke of *Norfolk*, she said, she was actually contracted to him, and was oblig'd to endeavour to obtain his Freedom, as she was his Wife.

*A. 14 Eliz.*  
The *French* King intercedes for the Q. of *Scots*.

In the mean time, the Factions in *Scotland* continu'd to harrass each other ; the Queen's Party being supported by the *French*, and that of the King's, or rather the Regent's, by Queen *Elizabeth*. The *French* King also was still very importunate with the Queen of *England* for the Freedom of the Queen of *Scots*, representing, that he could not avoid insisting on it as she was his Brother's Widow, and Dowager of *France* : That there was an ancient Alliance also between *France* and *Scotland*, which oblig'd him to appear in her Behalf ; and besides, the *Guises*, her near Relations, who were very powerful in *France*, must not be disoblig'd, nor could he approve of that pernicious Practice of deposing Sovereign Princes ; but the principal Reason for his espousing the Queen of *Scots* Interest, he said, was, That she would otherwise close with the *Spaniards*, and thereby the Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland* and *Ireland*, would be united with the Dominions of *Spain*, in a Confederacy against *France* : But when it was discover'd, that the Queen of *Scots* had, in a manner, already thrown herself into the Arms of *Spain*, the *French* King became more cool in his Intercessions, and endeavours to support her Party.

The Q's Proclamation prohibiting the *Dutch* Malecontents her Harbours.

And, notwithstanding the Queen of *England* was perfectly acquainted with the Attempts of the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Alva* to depose her, and set the Queen of *Scots* upon her Throne, she seems to have been extremely cautious of entering into a War with *Spain* ;



*Spain*; for when the Duke of *Alva* complain'd, that the *Low Country* Rebels were furnish'd with warlike Stores from *England*, and protected in the Queen's Harbours, she immediately issu'd a Proclamation prohibiting the *Dutch* Malecontents to remain in her Ports, which however prov'd of very ill Consequence to the *Spaniards*; for, upon their being oblig'd to quit the *English* Shores, they immediately seized on the *Briel*, *Flushing*, and other Sea-ports in *Holland* and *Zealand*, and so fortified themselves on the Coasts, that it did not lie in the Power of all the Forces the *Spaniards* could raise to expel them. And tho' the Queen did not interpose in the Quarrel at present, she suffer'd her Subjects however to go as Volunteers to these Wars, where some of them join'd the Duke of *Alva*, but many more the Prince of *Orange* and the Malecontents. The *French* also suffer'd the Prince of *Orange* to raise Forces in *France*, tho' Mr. *Cambden*, and other Historians, suggest, that this was but a Feint to deceive the Protestants; for the Court of *France* had, at that time, form'd a Design with the *Spaniards* to extirpate all the Protestants in *Europe*.

But, however that was, either Queen *Elizabeth* was not then acquainted with this League between the *French* and *Spaniards*, or was induc'd to believe it broken, by the *French* King's suffering the Prince of *Orange* to raise Forces in *France*, and by the great Favours he affected to bestow on his Protestant Subjects; for at this very Instant she concluded an Alliance with *France*, wherein it was stipulated, That they should mutually assist each other against all Persons whatsoever, and the Number of Forces each Party was to find was

A.D. 1572

A. 14 Eliz.

They seize  
on the  
*Briel*,  
*Flushing*,  
&c.

*English*  
Voluntiers  
engage in  
the Wars  
of the *Low*  
*Countries*.

The Prince  
of *Orange*  
permitted  
to raise  
Forces in  
*France*.

A Defen-  
sive Alli-  
ance be-  
tween  
*England*  
and  
*France*.

*A.D.* 1572 agreed upon : Which Treaty being concluded the eleventh of *April*, the Duke of *Montmérence* came over to see it sworn ; and the Earl of *Lincoln* was sent to *Paris* with a splendid Equipage to take the *French* King's Oath for the Observance of it.

A Marriage between the King of *Navarre* and the *French* King's Sister.

The Protestants massacred the 24th of *August* at *Paris*.

Not long after which, a Marriage was solemniz'd at *Paris* between the King of *Navarre*, a Protestant, and the Princess *Margaret*, the *French* King's Sister ; from whence the Protestants entertain'd great Hopes they should, for the future, enjoy abundance of Tranquillity, and that the King would no longer make a Distinction between them and the rest of his Subjects. This Prospect, and the Indulgence the Court shew'd them at this time, brought most of the *Protestants* of Figure to *Paris* to be present at these Nuptials ; where, on the Feast of *St. Bartholomew*, being the 24th of *August*, at Midnight, ten thousand of them were massacred, when they least apprehended such Treatment. Nor did the Barbarity end here ; but *Orleans*, *Rouen*, *Bordeaux*, *Lions*, *Tbolouse*, and almost every part of *France* tasted of the same bitter Cup, such Treachery and Cruelty can false Principles inspire even Christians with : And, notwithstanding the common People were entrusted with the Design, and Arms were put into their Hands to execute the Scheme, and no less than sixty thousand were Actors in this Tragedy in *Paris* alone, yet was there not one that betray'd the fatal Secret ; so true sometimes are Confederates in Villany to one another.

Sir *Francis Walsingham*, Secretary of State, was Ambassador at *Paris* at the time of this Massacre, to whose House most of the *English* fled, and were protected ; among whom

was

was the celebrated *Philip Sidney*, tho' three *English* Gentlemen had the Misfortune to be murder'd in other Parts of the Town: Two Days after the Slaughter, *Walsingham* sent his Secretary to the Queen-mother to thank her and the King for the great Care they had taken of his Safety, and for the Preservation of the *English* Nation; and on the first of *September*, the King, sending for the Ambassador, assur'd him he had been constrain'd to do what he did for his own Safety: That the Admiral and the Hugonots had conspir'd against his Life, his Mother's, and Brothers, and he had only just time to prevent their putting their Plot in Execution: That he desir'd nothing more than to continue in Amity with her Majesty, and hop'd she would not take Occasion from the late Tumult to suspect the contrary; but the King, in the first Letters sent to *England*, after the Massacre, having deny'd he had any Hand in it, and ascrib'd the Slaughter altogether to the Faction of the *Guises*, neither of the Accounts were believ'd. The Queen, however, in her Answer to the *French* Ambassador, who had made a very plausible Story to excuse his Prince, told him, That she should determine nothing till she was better inform'd, and hop'd the Fact would appear as he had represented it, for she was very desirous of continuing in perfect Friendship with his Master: However, she could not but reflect on the Manner of this Slaughter, which was not to be allow'd in any Place, much less in the Capital City, where the King might, with the same Force, have apprehended all the Offenders, and brought them to Justice in a legal way, particularly the Admiral, who was then lame in his Bed, and his House surrounded

A.D. 1572

A. 14 Eliz.

Some English Gentlemen murder'd.

The French King excuses this Barbarity to *Walsingham* the English Ambassador.

The Q's Speech to the French Ambassador on the Massacre.



*A.D.* 1572 rounded by the King's Guards: However, she did not ascribe these Murders so much to the King; who was a young Prince, as to those about him, and hop'd he would do Justice on the Authors of this detestable Tragedy, and thereby recover his Honour, which was much blemish'd by it; but if the King should not use his Power to procure Satisfaction for so much Blood barbarously shed, God, who saw the Hearts of Princes, as well as others, and was the Avenger of innocent Blood, would manifest his Justice in due time.

*A. 14 Eliz.*

She refuses to deliver up the Protestants who fled to England.

After this Massacre, abundance of *French* Protestants took Refuge in *England*, and amongst them the Vidame of *Chartres*, a Nobleman of Distinction. And when the *French* King demanded them as Rebels, the Queen answer'd, That when such common Murdering and Slaughter was made throughout *France* of those who profess'd the Protestant Religion, it was natural for them to flee for the Safety of their Lives: That it was also the Privilege of all Realms to receive such miserable People. And tho' the King had publish'd some Edicts for their Protection, it was notorious that those of that Religion were still daily slain and murder'd in his Kingdom: However, when the *French* King desir'd Queen *Elizabeth* to be Gossip to his Daughter, she did not refuse it, tho' her Majesty did not spare to let him know her Thoughts of the Massacre very freely. She did not think it expedient to break with him absolutely, when she daily expected a War with *Spain*. About the same time the Earl of *Northumberland*, who fled to *Scotland* after the Northern Rebellion, was deliver'd up to the Queen by Earl *Morton*, and beheaded at *York*: *Cambden* observes, that *Morton* had been extremely

Earl of Northumberland beheaded,

tremely



remely indebted to the Earl of *Northumber-*  
*land* for the hospitable Entertainment shewn  
 him, when he himself was an Exile in *Eng-*  
*land*; but whoever prov'd grateful to a Man  
 in Adversity? says the same Writer. About  
 his time died the Marquis of *Winchester*,  
 Lord-Treasurer, in the ninety-seventh Year  
 of his Age, having seen one hundred and three  
 Persons descend from him, and was succeeded  
 in his Office of Treasurer by the Lord *Bur-*  
*leigh*. The Queen herself also fell ill of the  
 Small-Pox at *Hampton-Court* the latter end  
 of this Year, but the Ministry took such Care  
 to conceal it, that the People heard nothing  
 of her Sickness till she was recover'd, when  
 her Majesty immediately set about raising For-  
 ces, and putting the Kingdom in a Posture of  
 Defence, having been under terrible Appre-  
 hensions of an Attack from the Popish Prin-  
 ces, her Neighbours, ever since she receiv'd  
 Advice of the Massacre at *Paris*. She could  
 not be ignorant that this Slaughter of the Pro-  
 testants was contriv'd by the Pope, and the  
 Kings of *France* and *Spain*, who were now  
 also uniting their Forces to extirpate the Prote-  
 stants in the *Low Countries*.

And this very Year, when the Nation was  
 in such imminent Danger from the Papists, the  
 Puritans did all that lay in their Power to dis-  
 turb and distress the Government. The Cap,  
 surplice, and other Parts of the Ecclesiastical  
 Habits had hitherto been the principal Ob-  
 ject of their Fury; but now nothing less  
 would satisfy them than \* *the Overthrowing*  
*their proud Enemies* (as they call'd them) viz.  
*those lordly Lords the Archbishops, Bishops,*

A.D. 1572

A. 14 Eliz.

*Winchester*  
 the Treas-  
 urer dies.

Succeeded  
 by Lord  
*Burleigh*.  
 The Queen  
 has the  
 Small-  
 Pox.  
 Recovers,  
 and puts  
 the King-  
 dom in a  
 Posture of  
 Defence.

The Puri-  
 tans dis-  
 turb the  
 Govern-  
 ment.

\* *Styke's Annals*, Vol. II. Anno 1572.

*Suffragans,*

A.D. 1572 *Suffragans, Deans, University Doctors, Bachelors of Divinity, Archdeacons and Chancellors, and the rest of that proud Generation, whose Kingdom must down, they said, hold they never so hard, because their tyrannous Lordship could not stand with Christ's Kingdom: This was part of that precious Libel they entitled, An Admonition to the Parliament. Nor was this all, they insisted, That the Parliament should repeal all the Laws that had been made in relation to the Common-Prayer, the Administration of the Sacraments, and the Rites, Ceremonies, Orders, and Government of the Church, and establish their Geneva Plan in the room of them; which if the Parliament neglected, they threaten'd them with Destruction in this World, and Damnation in the next; for they look'd upon the whole Service of the Church of England to be no better than Popery, and her Bishops and Clergy an Abomination; from whence it is no hard Matter to conjecture what Quarter the Church was to have expected from these demure Saints, if it had been in their Power to hurt her; nay, it is evident, that neither in this, or in any other Country, would they ever tolerate Episcopacy, where they had the Government in their Hands; and indeed in a Libel entitled, A Supplication to the High-Court of Parliament, they tell us in plain Terms, That they would have all these Remnants and Relicks of Antichrist banish'd out of the Church, and not so much as a Lord Bishop (No, not his Grace himself) dumb Minister (No, not dumb John of London himself) no Resident, Archdeacon, Abby Lubber, or any such Loiterer, tolerated in the Ministry. Thus, instead of strengthening the Hands of the Church of England, the great Bulwark against*

They threaten both Houses of Parliament, if they did not destroy the Church, and establish the Geneva Plan in the room of it.

Popery

Popery, at this remarkable Crisis, they contributed with all their Might to destroy her ; in which, if they had succeeded, it is extremely probable, that all the Protestants in *Europe* had, in a short time, been massacred, as many thousands were in *France* this very Year, there being then no other Power on Earth that could have afforded them Protection but the Queen, the great Patroness of that Establishment whom the Puritans so much envied and traduc'd.

A.D. 1572

A. 14 Eliz.

They endanger the whole Protestant Interest by their unreasonable Cavils.

In *November*, this Year, a new Star, or Phænomenon, appear'd in *Cassiopea's* Chair, which *Cambden* says (he himself observ'd) in brightness exceeded *Jupiter* in the Perigee of his Excentric and Epicycle, and that it continu'd in the same Place sixteen Months, being carried about with the diurnal Motion of the Heavens ; after eight Months he perceiv'd it grow less and less, which was suppos'd to proceed from its ascending, till at length it quite disappear'd.

A new Star appears.

While the Hugonots were put in the utmost Consternation by the late Massacre, the Court of *France* endeavour'd to surprize the Towns that had been granted them by the last Pacification, but *Montanban* and *Rochelle* were upon their Guard. Whereupon the two Brothers, the Dukes of *Anjou* and *Alençon*, were sent with a numerous Army to lay Siege to *Rochelle*, whither some *English* Merchants having carried Provisions, the *French* Ambassador complain'd of it to Queen *Elizabeth*, as he did of some *English* Privateers that had join'd *Montgomery* and the *French* Protestants in carrying Relief thither ; but the Queen declar'd, that her Merchants were afraid to trade to any other Ports of *France*, after they had

A.D. 1573

A. 15 Eliz.

The French besiege Rochelle.



*A.D. 1573* seen the Murders daily committed there ; and, that as to the Privateers, they should be call'd to an Account, having no Commission from her : At the same time the Queen-mother of *France* obtain'd Leave for her Son, the Duke of *Alençon*, to come over to make his Addresses to Queen *Elizabeth* ; but he defer'd it, in hopes of seeing *Rochelle* taken first. The Town however, having a numerous Garrison of Gentlemen in it, who fled from the late Massacre, baffled all the Efforts of the two Dukes, and *Anjou* having been chosen King of *Poland*, they were glad of that Pre-  
 The Siege rais'd. tence of raising the Siege, after they had lost twenty-four thousand Men before the Place.

*Alençon* Upon raising this Siege, the Duke of *Alen-*  
 prepare to come to *England*, but is advis'd by the Queen to defer it. *son* was preparing to come over to *England* ; but Queen *Elizabeth* gave him to understand, That the Rage he had lately express'd towards the Protestants of *Rochelle*, would not at all recommend him to the Favour of the *English*, many suspecting he was coming over to prosecute his Courtship with a Sword dy'd in the Blood of those who profess'd the same Religion, and therefore advis'd him to procure a Peace for the Protestants, and give some further Testimony of his Affection towards them, before he thought of embarking for *England* : And we find, that not long after a Pacification was made with the Hugonots in *France*, and the Towns of *Montanban*, *Rochelle*, and *Nismes* were allow'd to be garri-  
 The Court of *France* grant the Hugonots a Peace. son'd by Hugonots, who might enjoy the Exercise of their Religion there, but not elsewhere : And thus Queen *Elizabeth* did the *French* Protestants more Service by her friendly Mediation, than she could have done by Force ; the Prospect whereof possibly was the Reason



Reason, that at the beginning of this Year, *A.D. 1573*  
 she sent over the Earl of *Worcester* to repre- *A. 15 Eliz.*  
 sent her at the Christning of the Princess *Eliz-*  
*abeth*, and made that Court a Present of a  
 Gold Font on the Occasion. And as there  
 was a pretty good Understanding between the  
 Courts of *England* and *France* at this time, so  
 the Duke of *Alva* propos'd the reviving the  
 Commerce between *England* and the *Low*  
*Countries*, which was agreed on.

Commerce  
 reviv'd  
 with the  
*Low Coun-*  
*tries.*

*Scotland* also this Year was reduc'd to a State  
 of Tranquillity, and the Government of that  
 Kingdom put into such Hands, that Queen  
*Elizabeth* had nothing to apprehend from  
 thence. The Earl of *Morton*, the Regent,  
 was entirely devoted to her Majesty, with  
 whom Duke *Hamilton* and Earl *Huntley* were  
 now reconcil'd, and only *Grange*, *Humes*,  
 and *Lidington* held out the Castle of *Edin-*  
*burgh* for the Queen of *Scots*, who being be-  
 sieg'd by the *English* Troops, and receiving no  
 Reinforcements from *France*, were oblig'd to  
 surrender at Discretion. Whereupon *Grange*  
 and his Brother, with some others, were hang'd,  
*Lidington* not long after dy'd in Prison, and  
 the Lord *Humes* was pardon'd, which put a  
 Period to the Civil War in *Scotland*: The  
 Queen, on her coming to an Accommodation  
 with the Duke of *Alva*, made her Subjects  
 Satisfaction for all the Losses they had sus-  
 tain'd by the seizing their Effects, when the  
 Rupture happen'd between *England* and the  
*Low Countries*. She also paid all the Debts  
 that her Father and Brother had contracted  
 there, which gave the World an high Opini-  
 on of her Justice; and by these and the like  
 Means, render'd her Credit so good, that she  
 never was refus'd any Money she wanted.

The Civil  
 War in  
*Scotland*  
 ended.

The Q's  
 Justice.

A. D. 1573

A. 15 Eliz

She protects her Ministers.

Bishop of Ross banished.

The Duke of Alva recall'd from the Low Countries.

The Earl of Essex sent to suppress the Rebellion in Ireland.

Another very laudable Quality in this Princess was, the Protection she afforded her faithful Servants and Ministers; both the Lord-Keeper *Bacon*, and the Lord-Treasurer *Burleigh* had been libell'd this Year as Traytors of their Country, for their steady Adherence to the Queen, and Watchfulness for her Safety. Whereupon she caus'd a Proclamation to be publish'd, declaring the Charge to be fallie and improbable, and maliciously invented by the Enemies of the true Religion and their Country, with a View of depriving the Kingdom of its most faithful Counsellors: And as the Bishop of *Ross*, who had long resided here as Ambassador for the Queen of *Scots*, was found to be the Contriver of most of the Plots against her Majesty, he was at this time banish'd the Realm; tho' he was no sooner got on the other side the Water, than he apply'd himself to the Pope, the Emperor, the Popish Princes of *Germany*, and the *Spaniards*, to restore his Mistress to her Throne, and possibly might have given Queen *Elizabeth* some Disturbance, if the Duke of *Alva* had not been at this Instant recall'd from the *Low Countries*, when he had in a manner reduc'd the *Dutch* Malecontents to the Obedience of the King of *Spain*; he was succeeded by *Don Lewis Luniga de Requesens*, a Governor of a much milder Temper, who chusing to live at Ease, cultivated a good Understanding with Queen *Elizabeth*, and did not intermeddle with the Affairs of *England* or *Scotland*.

The *Irish* having rais'd Insurrections in several Parts of that Kingdom, the Earl of *Essex* offer'd his Service to the Queen to reduce them to Obedience, and even took up ten thousand Pounds, upon his own Estate, to encourage

courage the Enterprize ; but he was oblig'd to return without effecting any thing considerable, which was generally ascrib'd to the Practices of the *Earl of Leiceſter* : However, the *Earl of Eſſex* had the good Fortune, at the latter end of the Year, to defeat *Macphelim*, one of the principal Rebels, and to take him Priſoner.

A.D. 1573

A. 15 Eliz.

The Puritans at home, in the mean time, continu'd to inſult both Church and State, inſomuch that the Queen found herſelf neceſſitated to publiſh a Proclamation againſt them, requiring their Conformity to the Eſtabliſhment. *Sampſon* and *Dearing*, two noted Preachers, particularly were call'd to an Account for ſtriking at the Order of Biſhops, and diſturbſing the Church, under pretence of a further Reformation. *Cartwright* alſo, who had been expell'd the University, continuing his factious Diſcourſes, was order'd to be apprehended : Theſe People, when the Government requir'd them to conform, us'd to ſend over lamentable Complaints of their being perſecuted, to *Geneva* and *Switzerland*, calumniating the Biſhops, and endeavouring to give the Proteſtants abroad an ill Opinion of them ; but it appears, that when the Conformiſts had repreſented things in a true Light, to thoſe Divines that were appeal'd to on the other ſide the Water, the foreign Churches were very far from countenancing the factious Behaviour of the *Engliſh* Puritans. *Gualter* of *Zurick*, in his Letter to *Cox*, Biſhop of *Ely*, thanks him for correcting the Errors he had been led into by the Puritans, and ſays, he had advis'd them not to be contentious about Matters of no moment ; and *Bullinger* writes to the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* from the ſame Place, That as he rejoic'd

The Puritans inſult the Government.

They complain of Perſecution to the reform'd Churches abroad, making falſe Re- preſentations of things. The foreign Churches condemn them.



*A.D. 1573* rejoic'd that God had given our Church such an excellent Princess as *Queen Elizabeth* for the propagating the Gospel, so he express'd much Grief, that there were a sort of Men among us, that, by their unseasonable contending about indifferent Things, put such Obstacles in the way of the Reformation, and made a Schism in the Church; he shew'd how such were in their Church at the beginning of the Reformation, who thought nothing pure enough, and thereupon separated themselves, and set up Conventicles, and this begat various Sects and Schisms; but afterwards their Hypocrisy and Disorders came to be known, and they soon vanish'd, and came to nothing. \*

*Peter Burchet*, a Puritan, maintains the lawfulness of killing the Enemies of the Geneva Plan.

But the most desperate Enthusiast among the Puritan Tribes, was one *Peter Burchet*, a Gentleman of the *Temple*, who held it lawful to kill any one that oppos'd the Establishment of the *Geneva Plan*, and apprehending that Mr. *Hatton*, a great Courtier, was their Enemy, resolv'd to stab him the first Opportunity; but it seems he mistook his Man, and wounded the celebrated Sea-Commander *Hawkins* instead of Mr. *Hatton*; at which the Queen was so incens'd, that she would have proceeded against him summarily by Martial Law; but being acquainted, that Martial Law was never executed in time of Peace, he was try'd for Heresy, when he justified what he had done was agreeable to the Scriptures and the Laws of the Land; but being about to be condemn'd for an Heretick, he promis'd to retract his Opinion; however, shifting it off from time to time, he was committed to the *Tower*, where he resum'd his former Princi-

\* *Strype's Annals*, Vol. II.



ples, and knock'd out his Keeper's Brains with a Billet he snatch'd out of the Chimney. This occasion'd his being try'd and condemn'd for Murder ; and his right Hand being first cut off, and nail'd to the Gallows, he was afterwards hang'd.

A.D. 1573.

A. 15 Eliz.

He is condemn'd, and executed for Murdering his Keeper.

A.D. 1574

A. 16 Eliz.

The Duke of *Alençon* had again obtain'd Leave to come to *England* the beginning of this Year ; but the Queen-mother suspecting he began to incline to the Hugonots, and that he had an Intention to deprive her favourite Son, the King of *Poland*, of the Throne, in case King *Charles* died, whose Health now declin'd a-pace, she confin'd both the Duke and the King of *Navarre*, who was thought to favour his Designs : And, on the 30th of *May*, King *Charles* died in such a manner, as the Hugonots observe, that it was esteem'd a Judgment on him for the late Massacre, the Blood issuing out of all the Passages of his Body, and even from his Pores. He was succeeded by his Brother *Henry III*, who arriv'd from *Poland* the beginning of *September* following, the Queen-mother acting as Regent in the mean time.

The French King *Charles IX.* dies, is succeeded by *Henry III.*

The Civil War reviv'd in *France*.

*Cambden* observes, that Excess in Apparel and magnificent Buildings, were very much affected at this time in *England*, to the great Impoverishment of the Subjects, and that the Queen thereupon put the sumptuary Laws in Execution, and encourag'd a modest Garb, and a frugal way of Life by her own Example.

Excess in Apparel and Buildings in *England*.

The Treaty of *Blois* was ratified this Year between *England* and *France*, at the Instance of the French King, who probably apprehended this to be the most likely Means to prevent

A.D. 1575

A. 17 Eliz.

Queen

A.D. 1575 Queen *Elizabeth's* assisting the Hugonots, whom he attack'd as soon as he came to the Crown :  
 A. 17 *Eliz.* But whether the Queen esteem'd the defensive  
 Q. *Eliza-* Alliance she had made with *France* only to  
*beth* assists relate to foreign Enemies or not, certain it is  
 the Hugo- she made no Scruple of furnishing the Prince  
 nots. of *Conde*, the Head of that Party, with very great Supplies of Money, with which he paid the *Germans* and *Swiss* that march'd to their Assistance. In the mean time, *Requiseus*, Governor of the *Low Countries*, desir'd he might furnish himself with Ships and Seamen in *England* to reduce the Malecontents, who had seiz'd on the Sea-Ports of *Holland*. And, as the Queen thought fit to refuse the *Spanish* Governor that Favour, so neither would she suffer the *Dutch* to make Use of her Harbours, but determin'd to observe an exact Neutrality between the King of *Spain* and his Subjects in the *Low Countries* : Whereupon the Prince of *Orange*, and the Chiefs of the revolted Towns, offer'd to put themselves under the Protection of *France*, which the Queen endeavour'd by all Means to prevent ; and indeed *France*, being now engag'd in a Civil War, could afford them little or no Assistance, which induc'd them to offer the Queen the Dominion of their Country : Her Majesty having taken some time to deliberate on the Matter, thank'd the *Dutch* for the Offer they had made her, and promis'd to mediate for them with the King of *Spain*, but declar'd, she could not in Conscience take Possession of Territories which she knew belong'd to another Prince.

She observes a Neutrality between the King of *Spain* and the *Netherlands*.

She refuses the Dominion of *Holland*.

There happen'd a Skirmish upon the Borders of *Scotland* this Year, wherein the Governor of *Berwick*, and others, were taken Prisoners. Queen *Elizabeth*, notwithstanding the

the Prisoners were soon after set at Liberty, threaten'd to make the *Scots* sensible of her Repentment, and would not be satisfied, till Earl *Morton*, the Regent, came to *England*, and offer'd to submit himself to her Pleasure ; such an Influence had this Princess over the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

We find the Earl of *Essex* still in *Ireland* this Year, struggling with unfurmountable Difficulties. His grand Enemy, the Earl of *Leicester*, kept him there to prevent his Return to Court, and yet would not suffer him to be supply'd either with Troops, or Money, sufficient to carry on the Enterprize, hoping by this Means to see him cut off by the Natives, of which he was frequently in very great Hazard.

Sir *Henry Sidney*, however, being made Lord-Deputy of *Ireland* a third time, by his great Prudence, and the Influence he had in that Country, brought several of the Malecontents in *Ireland* to lay down their Arms without fighting.

The Anabaptists \* were very insolent this Year in *England*, declaring, That the Temporal Government of Kingdoms belong'd only to the Saints, by whom they meant themselves ; whereupon several of this Sect were apprehended and examin'd, but probably were releas'd on their Submission ; for it does not appear that any of them were punish'd.

This Year died that most Reverend Prelate *Matthew Parker*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, in the Month of *May*, being then in the seventy-second Year of his Age, whose Tomb remain'd in *Lambeth Chapel* till the

A.D. 1575

A. 17 Eliz.

The Scots make Satisfaction for some Hostilities on the Borders.

Earl of *Essex* ill us'd in *Ireland*.

Sir *Henry Sidney* made Lord-Deputy a 3d time.

The Anabaptists assert, that Dominion is founded in Grace.

Archbishop *Parker* dies.

\* *Strype*, Vol. II. Anno 1575.



*A.D. 1575* grand Rebellion, when it was demolish'd by  
*A. 17 Eliz.* *Scot* the Regicide, and the Bones of that great  
 Man thrown to the Dunghill, tho' they were  
 afterwards collected again at the Restoration,  
 and buried once more in the Chapel : He was  
 afterwards demolish'd  
 by the Re-  
 gicides. / Succeeded in the See of *Canterbury* by Doctor  
*Grindal* Archbishop of *York*.

The Parliament assembling on the 18th of  
*February 1576*, *Peter Wentworth* Esq; made  
 a very long Harangue in the behalf of Free-  
 dom of Speech, reflecting severely on her Ma-  
 jesty for discountenancing one of their Mem-  
 bers, and ordering him to forbear coming to  
 the House the last Sessions ; for having intro-  
 duc'd a Bill that was unacceptable to the Court,  
 in relation to a further Reformation of Reli-  
 gion ; some of the most obnoxious Words in  
 this Speech seem to be these, viz. *How could*  
*any Prince more unkindly intreat, abuse, and*  
*oppose her self against the Nobility and People,*  
*than her Majesty the last Parliament ?* For  
 which he was order'd into Custody of the Serje-  
 ant at Arms, by the House, and afterwards sent  
 to the *Tower*, where he lay some Weeks, till  
 her Majesty was pleas'd to signify, on his Sub-  
 mission, that she had pardon'd the Offence,  
 and that he might take his Place again.

Nor were the Commons yet discourag'd  
 from meddling with Religion ; for they pre-  
 ferr'd a Bill this Session also, for the further  
 Reformation of the Discipline of the Church ; \*  
 but her Majesty let them know, that she had  
 consider'd of that Matter, before the Meeting  
 of the Parliament, and appointed some Bi-  
 shops to see what was proper to be done in  
 it : But if the Bishops should neglect, or omit

A Bill pre-  
 ferr'd for  
 Reforma-  
 tion of the  
 Church.

The Queen  
 prevents  
 their Pro-  
 ceeding  
 in it.

\* *D'Eaves* Journals of Parliament.



their Duties therein, then her Majesty, by her Supreme Authority over the Church of *England*, would speedily see such good Redress therein, as might satisfy the Expectations of her loving Subjects to their good Contentment with which the House unanimously declar'd they were satisfied, and drop'd their Bill.

There were several good Acts pass'd this Session, which will be mention'd at the end of the Reign. I shall here only mention three that were of a publick Nature, viz. 1. *An Act to confirm a Subsidy given by the Clergy of six Shillings in the Pound, to be paid within three Years.* 2. *An Act for granting a Subsidy, and three Fifteenths, and Tenths, by the Laity.* And, 3. *An Act for confirming the Queen's general and free Pardon.*

A.D. 1576

A. 18 Eliz.

A Subsidy granted both by the Clergy and Laity.

The Speaker of the Commons, on presenting the Subsidy Bill, took an Occasion to represent to her Majesty, how desirous that House was, that she would enter into a married State: To which the Lord-Keeper answer'd, That her Majesty was not unmindful of all the Benefits that would grow to the Realm by such Marriage; neither did she forget any Perils that were like to grow for want thereof. All which Matters consider'd, her Majesty willed him to say, That albeit of her own natural Disposition, she was not dispos'd or inclin'd to marry, neither could she ever marry, were she a private Person; yet, for their Sakes, and the Benefit of the Realm, she was contented to dispose and incline herself to the Satisfaction of their humble Petition; so that all things convenient might concur, that were meet for such a Marriage, whereof there were very many, some

The Queen desir'd to marry.  
Her Answer.

A.D. 1576 touching the State of her most Royal Person ;  
 A. 18 Eliz. some touching the Person of him she should  
 chuse ; and some touching the State of the whole  
 Realm. These things concurring and consider'd, her Majesty assented.

Rapin omits this Session.

I can't avoid observing here, that *Rapin* was very little acquainted either with the Journals of Parliament of this Reign, publish'd by Sir *Simon D'Ewes*, or with the Statute-Book itself ; for he does not so much as mention this Session of Parliament, which began the 8th of *February* 1576, and ended the 15th of *March* following.

The Dutch about to introduce the French.

Take the English Shipping.

The Queen was highly incens'd against the Prince of *Orange*, and the States of the *Low Countries*, at this time, upon their inviting the *French* into the *Netherlands*, and making Prize of the *English* Shipping, under pretence that they carried Provisions to the *Dunkirkers* their Enemies, and traded between *Antwerp* and *Spain*, which Navigation the *Dutch* had formerly in a manner ingross'd ; but since their Revolt from *Spain*, they durst not venture thither : However, such were their Depredations on the *English*, that the Queen found her self oblig'd to fit out a Fleet of Men of War for the Protection of her Merchants, and scour'd the Seas so effectually, that she took no less than two hundred *Dutch* Privateers ; but the Matter was at length accommodated.

200 of their Privateers taken by the English.

The Civil War in the Netherlands.

A Massacre at Antwerp.

In the mean time, the Civil War in the *Netherlands* was carried on with great Fury, nothing but Murder and Devastation were seen all over the Country. *Antwerp*, then the greatest Mart Town in *Europe*, was storm'd and plunder'd by the King of *Spain's* Troops, seventeen thousand of the Inhabitants being massacred without regard to Age, Sex or Religion ;

ligion ; for the Quarrel between the King of *Spain* and his Subjects of the *Netherlands*, was not solely on account of Religion ; he had cancell'd and abolish'd all their Laws and Privileges, introduc'd Armies of Foreigners amongst them, and propos'd to govern them in a despotic Manner : In this Massacre at *Antwerp* several *Englishmen* perish'd, others were plunder'd of their Goods, and the *English* Factors were oblig'd to redeem their Lives with a great Sum of Money. Queen *Elizabeth* however sent an Ambassador to the King of *Spain*, to mediate between him and the *Netherlanders* : And when *Don John* of *Austria* was sent Governor thither, she dispatch'd a Minister to him, to endeavour to accommodate Matters, and to assure him, that if the *Dutch* introduc'd the *French*, she would assist him in driving them out of the *Netherlands*, tho' at the same time she lent the *Dutch* twenty thousand Pounds, upon Condition they should neither change their Religion or their Prince, or admit the *French* amongst them, so very apprehensive was the *English* Court at that time of the ill Consequence it would be to this Nation, to see the *French* possess'd of *Holland* and *Flanders* : Tho' *Spain* was then the most potent Kingdom in *Europe*, the Queen was of Opinion, it was more for the Advantage of *England* to have the *Netherlands* united to *Spain* than *France*.

The *English* being at this time mightily bent upon new Discoveries, some wealthy Gentlemen and Merchants fitted out three Ships about the middle of *June* this Year, and sent them under the Command of the celebrated *Martin Frobisher*, to discover a Passage to *China* by the North-west, who coming into the Latitude

A.D. 1576

A. 18 Eliz.

Q. Elizabeth offers her Mediation between

Spain and the Dutch.

Her Endeavours to keep the French cut of the Netherlands.

Attempts to discover the North-west Passage to China.

of

*A.D.* 1576 of sixty-three, found those Seas so frozen in *August*, that he was oblig'd to return without making any other Discovery, than that the People, who inhabited that part of the World, had broad flat Faces, and tawny Complexions like the *Tartars*.

The Emperor  
*Maximilian*  
dies.

*E. of Effex*  
dies in *Ireland*.

Earl of  
*Leicester*  
marries  
his Widow.

The Emperor *Maximilian*, whom the Queen had always a great Esteem and Affection for, dying about this time, she caus'd his funeral Obsequies to be solemniz'd in *St. Paul's Cathedral*, and not long after receiv'd Advice of the Death of the Earl of *Effex* in *Ireland*. This Nobleman our Historians represent as a very excellent Person ; but he was defeated in all his Enterprizes by the Malice of the Earl of *Leicester*, of which he was so sensible, that he came to *England* the preceding Winter, in order to have procur'd Satisfaction for the ill Offices that had been done him ; but *Leicester* found Means to get *Effex* on a sudden remanded to *Ireland* again, where he dy'd of a Bloody-flux, brought upon him, as 'tis said, by too quick a Resentment of his ill Usage ; some reported that he had been poison'd by *Leicester's* Procurement, to which the World gave the more Credit, because he immediately made Love to the deceas'd Lord's Widow, and not long after made her his Wife : It seems *Leicester* was doubly married to this Lady ; for Sir *Francis Knolles*, the Bride's Father, being acquainted with *Leicester's* fickle Temper, would not trust to a Marriage which had been already celebrated, but had the Ceremony again repeated in his Presence, tho' both of them were so private, that they were conceal'd from the Queen.

The *Irish* continuing still very troublesome, Sir *William Drury* was made President of *Munster*,



*Munster*, and sent over thither, who, in a little time reduc'd that Province to a peaceable State ; but the *Desmonds* made grievous Complaints of his severe Usage of their People to the Lord-Deputy. They were discontented also at the Ceas, that is, a certain Payment of Provisions in kind, which was exacted of them annually, according to ancient Custom, for the Maintenance of the Lord-Deputy's Household, and the Garrison Soldiers ; and when they could meet with no Redress from the Deputy, they sent over their Complaints to the Council-Board in *England* ; but this Ceas being found a Perquisite belonging to the Crown, the *Irish* were imprison'd for their Disobedience in refusing it, till they submitted: However, the Queen commanded her Officers to be moderate in their Demands, and not ruin the People they were sent to protect, by their Oppressions and Extortions, and thereby force them into Rebellion, as was too often the Case of the *Roman* Provinces, and particularly of *Dalmatia* in the Reign of *Tiberius*.

When *Don John* of *Austria* enter'd upon his Government of the *Netherlands*, he had been oblig'd to sign an Act of Pacification, and to send away the *Spanish* and *Italian* Forces by the Direction of King *Philip* ; but at the same time, he determin'd to make an absolute Conquest of the *Low Countries*, when ever he should meet with a favourable Opportunity of effecting it ; which Queen *Elizabeth* being appriz'd of, sent over Sir *Edward Horsey* to him, to admonish him to preserve the Peace of that Country: To which he answer'd, That he was already entering upon Measures to perpetuate the Peace of the *Netherlands*. Whereupon

A.D. 1576

A. 18 Eliz.

*Ireland* reduc'd to a peaceable State.

The Queen orders her Officers to forbear their Extortions.

A.D. 1577

A. 19 Eliz.

Q. Elizabeth endeavours to preserve the Peace of the *Netherlands*.

*A.D. 1577* upon her Majesty dispatch'd Sir *Thomas Leighton* to the Prince of *Orange*, to perswade him  
*A. 19 Eliz.* not to commit any hostile Attempts : But, the Prince of *Orange*, who was perfectly acquainted with *Don John's* Designs, let her Majesty know, that he not only waited for an Opportunity to make a Conquest of the *Low Countries*, but had actually form'd a Design (in which the Pope was engag'd) to marry the Queen of *Scots*, and dethrone her Majesty : And that King *Philip* had been solicited to concur in it, and indeed *Don John's* Ambition had no Bounds ; he had before aspir'd to the Kingdom of *Tunis*, which he was no sooner disappointed of, but he cast his Eyes upon *England* and *Scotland*, not doubting to obtain the Dominion of them by his marrying the Queen of *Scots*, as has been intimated already.

*Don John* But while *Don John* was amusing Queen  
 revives the *Elizabeth* with his pretended Endeavours to  
 War in the perpetuate the Peace of the *Netherlands*, he  
*Low Countries.* had obtain'd Leave of King *Philip* to recall the *Spanish* and *Italian* Troops, who were no sooner arriv'd in the *Netherlands*, but he renew'd the War with the States of that Country, and surprizing *Namur*, and several other strong Places, began to render the Liberties of the *Dutch* very precarious.

*The Dutch* In this Distress the States sent a solemn Embassage to Queen *Elizabeth*, imploring her  
 implore the Protection of Q. Protection ; whereupon she did not only lend  
*Elizabeth.* them one hundred thousand Pounds, but enter'd into a defensive Alliance with them, whereby she engag'd to furnish them with five thousand Foot, and a thousand Horse, to be paid by the States, provided the General was an *Englishman*, and admitted into their Council.

Council of State: And, that nothing relating to War or Peace should be determin'd, without the Concurrence of the Queen or her General. The States on the other side agreed to furnish the Queen with the like Number of Troops, if she should be attack'd: However, her Majesty thought fit to acquaint the King of Spain, at the same time, that she had no Intention to break her Alliance with him; for she had lent the States this Money only to prevent their introducing the *French* into the *Netherlands*, to the irreparable Damage both of *Spain* and *England*; and the Defensive Alliance was intended to protect her against the Attempts of *Don John*, whose Designs the King was not ignorant of.

A.D. 1577

A. 19 Eliz.

Excuses it to the King of Spain.

Among the Accidents of this Year Mr. *Cambden* relates, That at the Assizes held at *Oxford*, no less than three hundred Persons, who were assembled there, were suddenly taken ill, and died; among whom were the High-Sheriff, and several Persons of Quality; but whether this proceeded from some pestilential Vapour, the Stench of the Prisoners, or from what other Cause, was very uncertain. He observes also, that this Year the Laws were first put in Execution against those who brought over the Bulls, or made Profelytes to the See of *Rome*. *Cuthbert Maine*, a Priest, an obstinate Assertor of the Pope's Power, being executed for this Offence at *Launceston* in *Cornwal*, and *Trugion*, a Gentleman who harboured him, had his Estate confiscated, and was condemn'd to perpetual Imprisonment.

300 People die suddenly at the Assizes at *Oxford*.

A Priest executed for maintaining the Pope's Power.

The States of the *Low Countries* finding themselves hard press'd by *Don John* of *Austria*, had, notwithstanding the good Offices done them by the Queen of *England*, in-

A.D. 1578

A. 20 Eliz.

A.D. 1578

A. 20 Eliz

The French  
invited in-  
to the Low  
Countries.

They re-  
tire from  
thence on  
the Arri-  
val of the  
Germans.  
English

Voluntiers  
in the Ser-  
vice of the  
States.

The King  
of Spain  
about to  
invade  
Ireland.

vited the Duke of *Anjou* to come to their Assistance with a Body of *French* Troops, offering to declare him their Protector ; with which Queen *Elizabeth* acquainted *Don John*, exhorting him to make a Truce with the States, lest the *French* should possess themselves of the Country ; but he having lately obtain'd a Victory over the Troops of the States at *Gemblours*, slighted the Queen's Advice. However, the Queen remitting a Sum of Money to Prince *Casimir*, the Elector *Palatine's* Brother, that Prince led a Body of *Germans* into the *Low Countries*, to the Assistance of the States, which disconcerting the Duke of *Anjou's* Measures, he thought fit to retire with his Army to *France* : Nor did the Queen of *England* only pay the *German* Army that came to the Assistance of the States, but suffer'd several Voluntiers of Quality to serve in that Country, who carried over with them a Reinforcement of Troops : And not long after, *Don John*, attacking the Confederates in their Camp, met with a Repulse, to which the *English* pretty much contributed.

The King of *Spain* was highly disgusted at the Queen's assisting the Malecontents in the *Low Countries*, and had form'd a Design, together with the Pope and *Don Sebastian* King of *Portugal*, to invade *Ireland*, in which they were encourag'd by one *Stukely*, an *English* Exile, who gave them hopes of conquering not only *Ireland*, but *England*. Whereupon he was honour'd by the Pope with the Titles of Marquis of *Lemster*, Earl of *Wexford*, &c. and had the Command of 800 *Italians* given him, with which he sail'd to *Portugal* ; but that King, being engag'd in the *African* War at the same time, luckily perswaded *Stukely* to accompany



accompany him thither, before they under'ook the *Irish* Expedition ; and both the King and *Stukely* perish'd in a Battle with the *Moors*. After which, the King of *Spain* was so busied in making a Conquest of *Portugal*, that he postpon'd his Attempts against *England* and *Ireland* for some time, infomuch, that the Queen found she had very little to apprehend from that Quarter.

A.D. 1578

A. 20 Eliz.

He is diverted by the Conquest of *Portugal*.

In the mean time, *Don John*, in the midst of all his ambitious Projects, fell sick and died in the *Low Countries*, and was succeeded in that Government by the Duke of *Parma*, when there being no likelihood of any sudden Action, Prince *Casimir* came over to *England*, and was splendidly entertain'd by her Majesty. But I should have remember'd, that while the Duke of *Anjou* was in the *Low Countries*, he dispatch'd an Agent to Queen *Elizabeth*, to renew the Amour between them, which was seconded by an Embassy from the *French* King ; and the Queen seem'd so far to favour the Addressee of this young Prince, tho' she was now in the 45th Year of her Age, that *Leicester* was out of all Patience, and 'tis said, form'd a Design against the Life of one of the *French* Agents employ'd to negotiate the Matter, on his discovering the Marriage between him (*Leicester*) and the Earl of *Essex's* Widow, which the Queen so highly resent'd, that she was about to have sent *Leicester* to the Tower.

*Don John* dies.

Prince *Casimir* comes to *England*.

Duke of *Anjou* renews his Amour.

*Leicester* under a Cloud.

The Earl of *Morton* still remain'd Regent of *Scotland* ; but had behav'd in that haughty and imperious Manner, that many of the Nobility appear'd to be highly disoblig'd, and were forming Schemes to remove him, of which the Queen receiving Advice, dispatch'd

The Earl of *Morton* displac'd.

*A.D.* 1578 *Randolph* to *Scotland* under pretence of Complimenting the young King, who was now in the 12th Year of his Age; but chiefly, to perswade *Morton* to enter into more moderate Measures; but the Earl, not regarding the Advice as he ought, the Earls of *Argyle* and *Athol*, with some others about the King, advis'd his Majesty to displace the Regent, and take the Government into his own Hands; which his Majesty consenting to, twelve Noblemen were assign'd to assist the King in the Administration, among whom Earl *Morton* was one; but he retir'd in Disgust from Court, and soon after found Means to recover his Post of Regent again, and kept the King in a manner confin'd in the Castle of *Stirling*.

He recovers the Regency again.

*A.D.* 1579

*A.* 21 *Eliz.*

One shot in the Q's Barge.

But to return to *England*. While the Queen was taking her Pleasure on the *Thames* one Evening, attended by *Simier*, the *French* Ambassador, and several other Persons of Quality of that Nation, one of her Watermen was shot thro' both his Arms by a Pistol let off from another Boat; which some suggested was design'd to have kill'd the Queen, and others the *French* Ambassador; but her Majesty was so well satisfied it was an Accident, that she pardon'd the Man in whose Hand the Pistol was found, and said, *She could believe nothing of her Subjects, which Parents would not believe of their Children.*

The Duke of *Anjou* comes over.

*Simier* having receiv'd great Encouragement from the Queen to hope for Success in his Negotiation, the Duke of *Anjou* came over *Incognito* to pay the Queen a Visit, at her Palace of *Greenwich*, and having had several Conferences with her Majesty, return'd home. After which, the Expediency of the Match was debated in Council, and it was the Opinion of most

most Men, that the Treaty was upon the Point of being concluded: However, the People seem'd generally averse to it. They did not only apprehend, that the Return of Popery would be the Consequence of the Marriage, but that *England* was in danger of becoming a Province to *France*; and the Clergy in their Pulpits inveigh'd against the Match, till the Queen found her self oblig'd to silence them.

A.D. 1579

A. 21 Eliz.

The People averse to the Match.

This Year died two very eminent Men in their respective Professions, viz. Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, Lord-Keeper (whereupon the Seals were given to *Thomas Bromley*, with the Title of Lord-Chancellor) and Sir *Thomas Gresham*, the Queen's Merchant, who built the *Royal-Exchange*, and founded *Gresham College*.

Sir *Nicholas Bacon* dies, and Sir *Thomas Gresham*.

And now, to take a short View of the State of *Scotland*, the Duke of *Guise*, who neglected no Opportunity of giving the Queen of *England* Uneasiness, in order to create a Difference between her and the young King of *Scotland*, sent over *Esme Stuart*, Lord *D'Aubigny*, whose Family had long resided in *France*, to pay a Visit to his near Relation King *James* (for he was Son of *John Stuart*, younger Brother of *Matthew Lenox*, the King's Grandfather.) This young Nobleman soon became a Favourite of the King's, and uniting his Interest with *Stuart of Ogilthry*, who was also very much in the King's good Graces, found Means to give his Majesty an ill Opinion of Earl *Morton*, and the rest of the Courtiers who were most attach'd to the Queen of *England*: And the King became so exceeding fond of the Lord *D'Aubigny*, that he settled on him Lands to a very great Value, made him Chamberlain of *Scotland*, and Governor of

*D'Aubigny*, King *James's* Favourite in the *French* Interest.

*A.D.* 1579 of *Dunbritton* Castle, creating him first Earl, and then Duke of *Lenox*; but not without the Murmurs of the People, who did not stick to say, that *D'Aubigny* was sent over to promote the Interest of *France*, and subvert the true Religion. Still the War in *Flanders* continu'd; but the *German* Troops Prince *Casimir* commanded returning home, the Duke of *Parma's* Army became much superior to that of the States, and laid Siege to *Maestricht*; and, what weaken'd the Prince of *Orange* still more, was the Misunderstanding between the Protestant and Catholick Provinces; for *Artois*, *Hainault*, and some other Popish Districts made a separate Peace with the Duke of *Parma*, which induc'd the Provinces where the Reformation prevail'd, &c. *Holland*, *Zeeland*, *Friesland*, and *Utrecht*, to enter into a strict Alliance, afterwards stil'd, *The Union of Utrecht*, from the Place where it was negotiated; but the Duke of *Parma*, in the mean time, made himself Master of the important Town of *Maestricht*.

The Union of *Utrecht*.

*Maestricht* taken by the Duke of *Parma*.

An Insurrection in *Ireland*.

*Spanish* Forces arrive in that Kingdom.

Nor was *Ireland* yet in a State of Tranquillity: *James Fitz-Morris*, who had lately receiv'd a Pardon for his Rebellion, made no better Return for the Compassion that had been shewn him, than to apply to the Pope and the King of *Spain* for Forces to join the Malecontents in that Country, and actually brought over seven or eight hundred *Spaniards* with him, who being join'd with the *Desmonds*, maintain'd the War for some Time against the Queen's Forces, tho' *Fitz-Morris* himself was kill'd in a Rencounter before the end of the Year.

The



The War in *Ireland* continued with various Success most part of the following Year. The Lord-Justice, Sir *William Pelham*, and the Earl of *Ormond* pursu'd the Rebels, and took several Places from them; and *James Dejmond*, being made Prisoner, was condemn'd and executed for High-Treason. On the other hand, the Lord *Arthur Grey* being made Deputy of *Ireland*, and marching against the Rebels, lost abundance of his Men by an Ambuscade; soon after which another Body of seven hundred *Spaniards* and *Italians*, who erecting a Fortification on the Coast for their Security, and being join'd by some of the Native *Irish*, bid Defiance to the Queen's Troops; but the Lord-Deputy, and the Earl of *Ormond* uniting their Forces, oblig'd these Foreigners, and the Rebels that had join'd them, to surrender Prisoners at Discretion, putting every one of them to the Sword, except some of the foreign Officers, for which piece of Cruelty the *English* were severely re- flected on; but they excus'd themselves by as- firming, that the Rebels were so numerous, they were in danger of being cut to Pieces themselves.

A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.

The War continues there with various Success.

The *Spaniards* sur- rendering at Discre- tion, are put to the Sword.

It appears also, that in *England* itself, as well as *Ireland*, the Pope, and the King of *Spain* were perpetually inciting Insurrections against the Queen, making use of such of her Subjects, for that Purpose, as had been edu- cated in the *English* Seminaries abroad, of which our Historians mention three that were establish'd at this time, viz. one at *Rome*, another at *Doway*, and a third at *Rheimes*: Here they were taught, That the Pope's Domi- nion extended over all the Kingdoms of the World: That he had a Power to excommu- nicate

Seminary Priests withdraw the Q's Subjects from their Allegi- ance.

A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.

A Proclamation against harbouring seminary Priests.

The Jesuits, *Parsons* and *Campion*, come into England.

Some Account of them.

cate and dethrone Kings, absolve their Subjects from their Allegiance, and to transfer their Kingdoms to others. Several Priests educated in those Seminaries came over to *England* about this time, under pretence of administering the Sacraments, and preaching to those of the *Romish* Perswasion, and were for some time conniv'd at ; but when the Government understood that they endeavour'd to seduce the Queen's Subjects from their Obedience, and to move intestine Rebellions, and in reality to execute the Bull Pope *Pius V.* had lately issued against the Queen ; a Proclamation was publish'd, requiring all such, as had been sent Abroad to receive a Popish Education, to return and conform themselves ; and that none should entertain, or harbour any Seminary Priests, or Jesuits, on Pain of being prosecuted as Traytors and Rebels : And such Priests were threaten'd with having the Laws put in Execution against them, if they did not speedily depart the Kingdom. Notwithstanding which, *Robert Parsons* and *Edmund Campian*, two *English* Jesuits, came to *England* this Year, with Power and Instructions from *Rome* to incite an Insurrection. Mr. *Cambden* informs us they were formerly Students at *Oxford*, where he was intimately acquainted with them : That *Parsons* was a *Somerseſshire* Man, of a rough Behaviour, fierce and violent, and *Campion*, the Son of a Citizen of *London*, of a very sweet Disposition. These Men, at their first coming over, travell'd from one Popish Gentleman's House to another in Disguise ; sometimes personating the Gentleman, at others the Soldier ; and sometimes were seen in Clergymen's Habits, making it their Business to render the People disaffected, and to reconcile them

them

them to Popery, and wrote, and publish'd several Books in defence of their Religion, which they challeng'd the Protestant Divines to answer; and, to terrify the Queen's Subjects, every-where gave out, that the Pope and the King of *Spain* were about to invade the Kingdom; and to make an entire Conquest of it.

A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.

They threaten the People with an Invasion.

The Queen, to prevent the ill Consequences that these Practices might have upon the People, publish'd a Declaration, setting forth, that she had put her Kingdom into a Posture of Defence, and did not doubt, by the Blessing of God, with the Forces she had rais'd by Sea and Land, to defend her Dominions against all the Attempts of her Enemies Foreign and Domestick. She exhorted therefore her good Subjects to remain firm in their Obedience and Loyalty, threatening to see the Rigour of the Law executed on those who were practising against her Government.

The Queen encourages her Subjects to stand by her.

And threatens her disaffected Subjects.

While the Queen was thus employ'd in defending her self against the Attacks of the Papists, there came from *Holland* and *Germany* Swarms of Fanaticks, calling themselves *The Family of Love*, teaching blasphemous Doctrines, and giving out, that none could be sav'd who were not of their Sect, with whom join'd so many of the *English* Puritans, that the Queen was forc'd to publish a Proclamation requiring the Civil Magistrates to assist the Ecclesiastical in suppressing them.

A new Sect of Puritans call'd, *The Family of Love*.

*Philip*, King of *Spain*, in the mean time, made himself entirely Master of the Kingdom of *Portugal*, which he claim'd as next Heir; he had been oppos'd for some time by *Don Antonio*, natural Son of *Don Lewis*, Brother of the late King *Henry*; by which Accession *Philip*

King *Philip* possesses himself of *Portugal*.



A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.

The vast  
Extent of  
the King  
of Spain's  
Domini-  
ons:

The Eng-  
lish and  
Dutch sur-  
prize  
Mechlin.

E. of Mor-  
ton Regent  
of Scotland  
disgrac'd.

Q. Eliza-  
beth inter-  
poses in his  
Behalf.

lip became possess'd of all the *Portuguese* Set-  
tlements in the *East-Indies*, as he was before of  
great part of *America*, which gave occasion  
to People to observe, that the Sun never set  
upon his Dominions ; but notwithstanding his  
immense Riches and extensive Dominions, the  
*Dutch*, assisted by the *English*, maintain'd  
their Ground against him in the *Low Coun-  
tries*, and this Year Sir *John Norris*, General  
of the *English*, accompanied by *Oliver Tem-  
ple*, and a Detachment of the *Dutch*, surpriz'd  
the City of *Mechlin*, and took it by *Scalado*,  
making a great Slaughter of the Inhabitants,  
and, what is by no means to be defended,  
plundered the Churches, carrying away the very  
Tomb-stones, several of which *Cambden* re-  
lates, that he saw expos'd to Sale in *England*.

*Scotland*, at this time, began to give the  
Queen of *England* some Uneasiness ; the two  
Favourites *Lenox* and *Stuart*, had not only  
work'd the Earl of *Morton* out of the Admi-  
nistration, and out of the King's Favour, but  
had procur'd him to be charg'd with the Mur-  
der of the King's Father. Whereupon the  
Queen sent Sir *Robert Bowes*, Governor of  
*Berwick*, her Ambassador to the Court of  
*Scotland*, to accuse the Duke of *Lenox* of cor-  
responding with *France* and the *Guises*, in or-  
der to subvert the Government both in *Scot-  
land* and *England* ; but the Council of *Scot-  
land* refus'd to hear the Ambassador on this  
Subject. However, King *James* thought fit  
to send the Lord *Humes* Ambassador into *Eng-  
land*, to learn what Intelligence her Majesty  
had receiv'd from *France* to the Disadvantage  
of his Favourite the Earl of *Lenox* : *Humes*  
being deny'd Audience of the Queen, apply'd  
himself to the Treasurer the Lord *Burleigh*,

to



to know the Reason of the Queen's Displeasure: *Burleigh* told him, The Queen was offended they had paid no more Regard to the Representations she made to them by her Ambassador: That *Lenox* was in the *French* and Popish Interest (tho' he profess'd himself a Protestant :) That he would introduce the *French*, probably create another Civil War, and endeavour the Restoration of Popery. But I don't find the Treasurer gave any particular Instances, or produc'd any Proofs of these Designs of the Duke of *Lenox*.

A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.



Another Proclamation was publish'd in *England* this Year against Excess of Apparel, and the wearing Weapons of an immoderate Size: The Ruffs about their Necks, which were so broad a Man could not see his way, were order'd to be contracted: Their Cloaks, which reach'd down to their Heels, were order'd to be cut shorter: Swords were not to be above a Yard in length, nor Daggers above twelve Inches besides the Handles, and the Spikes on the Bosses of their Shields not above two Inches in length.

A Proclamation concerning Apparel and Weapons.

By another Proclamation, the Queen prohibited any new Buildings to be erected in *London* or *Westminster*, or within three Miles of either of these Cities. The Reasons assign'd for which were, that such Numbers of People resorting thither from all Parts of *England*, other Towns run to decay: That the Multitude would in time grow so great in *London*, that it would be difficult to keep them under any Government: That Provisions could not be found to support them; and that every Plague must necessarily sweep away great Numbers of People, when they should become so crowded together: But at this Day the Pre-

Buildings on new Foundations in *London* and *Westminster* prohibited. The Reason of it.

A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.

The Lega-  
lity and  
Expedi-  
ence of  
such Pro-  
clamations  
enquir'd  
into.

rogative of the Crown does not extend so far as to hinder People from building on their own Ground, and I am apt to believe such Proclamations were illegal even then. It is evident the Privy-council took upon them in those Days to issue Orders, and Acts of State, for reforming a great many things, which nothing but an Act of Parliament could legally have certified: Tho' it must be admitted, that some of the Reasons in this Proclamation had their Weight, and a *Law* against the Encrease of Buildings in the Town might have been very expedient; for we find, that it is not in the Power of the Magistrates to restrain the Murders and Robberies that are daily committed in or near the Town since this vast Encrease of the Buildings, much less to disperse the Crowds of People that assemble on publick Occasions; insomuch that some have thought it necessary to keep up a standing Army, not for the *Defence* of the City, but to *prevent their insulting the Government* by their Robs. And if the Plague should visit the Town again, it would possibly sweep away half a Million of People before it left the Place. The Decay of other Towns, occasion'd by the Encrease of *London*, is a Consideration of some moment also; for it is but evident, that several Corporations, Sea-ports, and trading Places have been in a manner abandon'd of late Years, as well as Country-Seats and Villages, most of our Nobility and Gentry residing the greatest part of the Year in Town.

Some Account of  
*Drake's*  
Voyage  
round the  
Globe.

On the 3d of *November* this Year, That accomplish'd Sea-Officer *Francis Drake*, of *Devonshire*, return'd to *Plymouth* in that County, having made a Voyage round the Globe

in

in something less than three Years. He had *A.D. 1580*  
 before visited the *Isthmus* of *Darien*, and march- *A.22 Eliz.*  
 ing over Land, discover'd the great *South*  
 Sea, and the rich Trade the *Spaniards* carried  
 on there; and having met with a Party of  
*Spaniards*, convoying a large Treasure in Gold  
 and Silver from *Panama* to the *North* Seas,  
 defeated them, and brought away all the Gold  
 to *Europe*, whereby he was so enrich'd, that  
 he might afterwards have liv'd in Ease and  
 Plenty at home; but being fir'd with the  
 Prospect of gaining still greater Treasure, and  
 making extensive Discoveries in the *South* Sea,  
 he fitted out five Ships, with the Assistance of  
 other Adventurers, some of whom were Cour-  
 riers, and pass'd thro' the *Straits* of *Magellan*,  
 into the *Pacifick* Ocean, where he seiz'd a  
 prodigious Quantity of Gold, Silver, and  
 precious Stones, that he found in the *Spanish*  
 Ships, or in their Towns upon the Western  
 Coast of *America*. After which he return'd  
 home by the *East-Indies*, and the Cape of  
*Good-Hope* in *Africa*, with one Ship only, ha-  
 ving dismiss'd two of his Squadron before he  
 came into the *South* Sea, lost another, and  
 parted with a fourth in a Storm, which re-  
 turn'd from the *South* Sea thro' the *Straits* of  
*Magellan*, being the only Ship that return'd  
 that way.

The Ship he came home in being brought  
 into the *Thames*, the Courtiers, who were  
 concern'd with *Drake*, prevail'd on the Queen  
 to do him the Honour to dine on board of  
 it: However, the *Spanish* Ambassador began  
 to threaten very high for these Depredations  
 committed on his Master's Subjects in the  
*South* Seas, which *Philip* look'd upon as his  
 Property, as well as the Continent of *Ame-*  
*r.ca.*

The *Span-*  
*niard* de-  
 mands Sa-  
 tisfaction  
 for his De-  
 predations.

*A.D. 1580* *rica.* Whereupon the Queen order'd great part of the Treasure to be sequester'd, in case the *Spaniard* should make out his Claim to it; and afterwards return'd part of it to the King of *Spain*, rather than enter into an open War with him; tho' she might with a great deal of Reason have with-held it, as *Philip* was perpetually fomenting Conspiracies against her, and had actually suffer'd his Subjects to join the *Irish* Rebels. *Drake* also insisted he had suffer'd great Losses from the *Spaniards* in a former Voyage to *America*, and that he attack'd them in the *South* Seas to repair the Damages he had receiv'd from them. He was suffer'd therefore to retain part of the Treasure he had acquir'd, and was afterwards highly prefer'd by her Majesty in the Royal Navy. He was sufficiently mortified, however, by some Courtiers who refus'd the Presents of Gold he would have made them, as being the Fruits of Piracy and Robbery; but it is presum'd many of them were not so squeamish by the Reception *Drake* met with: It was observ'd of *Drake*, that he was the *first* Commander, tho' not the *first* Man, that had sail'd round the Globe, for *Magellans* was kill'd in the Voyage. The Reader will find a further Account of this Enterprize in the 2d Vol. of *Mod. History*, p. 17.

An Earth-  
quake in  
*England*,  
&c.

This Year afforded little else remarkable, unless it were an Earthquake that was felt on the 6th of *April*, and again on the 1st of *May*, almost all over *England* to the Southward of *York*: The Earth was so much mov'd, that in some Places Stones fell from the Buildings, and the Bells founded in the Steeples. The Sea also was observ'd to be extremely agitated, tho' it was very calm before; but it  
does



does not appear there was any great Damage done by it; however, publick Prayers were order'd by the Government on this Occasion, to deprecate the Divine Vengeance: Some small trembling of the Earth also was felt in the *Low Countries* and *Germany*, about the same time.

A.D. 1580

A. 22 Eliz.



The following Year 1581, the Parliament assembled on the 16th of *January*; during this Session, *Paul Wentworth* (Brother to—*Wentworth*, who in the last Session gave her Majesty so much Uneasiness, by preferring a Bill for reforming, or rather abolishing, the Ceremonies of the Church) mov'd the House for a Weekly Fast, to be appointed by their own Authority, and, that they might have a Sermon every Morning at seven a Clock, before the House sat; which several Gentlemen oppos'd, as an Encroachment on the Queen's Prerogative, who alone had Power to appoint Fasts, &c. Whereupon the House divided, and there were 115 Voices for the Fast, and 100 against it. But Mr. Speaker, and Mr. Vice-Chamberlain declar'd some few Days afterwards, that her Majesty was highly displeas'd at their Presumption, in appointing a Fast by their own Authority; \* and mov'd, that they should make their Submission to her Majesty, and acknowledge their Offence; and Mr. Vice-Chamberlain was thereupon order'd to make their Submission, and entreat her Majesty's Pardon in the Name of the House. In the same Parliament *Arthur Hall*, Representative for *Grantham*, having printed a Book reflecting on the Justice of the House of Commons, was sent to the *Tower*, by the Warrant

A.D. 1581

A. 23 Eliz.



The Parliament meet.

The Commons order a Fast by their own Authority.

The Queen reprimands them for it.

They submit.

\* *D'Eaves's Journal, Anno 23 Eliz.*

*A.D. 1581* of that House, sign'd by the Speaker, and order'd to remain a Prisoner there six Months, and until he should retract what he had wrote, and pay a Fine of five hundred Marks ; tho' such Imprisonment after the Rising of the Parliament, and laying a Fine upon a Member by that Body, is generally held illegal at this Day. \*

*A. 23 Eliz.*

A Member fin'd and imprison'd by the House for six Months. Members fin'd for absenting themselves.

Other Absenters order'd to lose their Wages.

In this Session of Parliament, it was also order'd by the Commons, That every Knight of a Shire, who had been absent the whole Session, without the Leave of the House, should pay a Fine of twenty Pounds to her Majesty's Use, and every Citizen, Burgess and Baron ten Pounds for the like Default ; and that every Member who had attended the House, and departed without Licence this Session, should forfeit and lose his Wages : And, for the better Execution of this Order, the Clerk of the Crown was directed not to deliver out any Writ for levying such Wages, without a Warrant from the Clerk of the House.

Treason to withdraw Persons from their Allegiance, or the Protestant Religion.

By 23 *Eliz. cap. 1.* For retaining her Majesty's Subjects in their due Obedience, it was enacted, That all Persons having, or pretending to have, Power, or who should absolve, perswade, or withdraw any of her Majesty's Subjects from their natural Obedience to her Majesty, or should withdraw them for that Intent from the Religion establish'd to the *Romish* Religion, or move them to promise Obedience to the See of *Rome* or any other foreign Power, should be adjudg'd Traytors ; and every Person who should be so absolv'd, or withdrawn, their Procurers and Counsel-

And Treason to be so withdrawn.

\* *D'Ewes's Journal, 23 Eliz.*

lors should incur the Guilt of High-Treason ; *A.D. 1581*  
 and the Aiders and Maintainers of such Of- *A. 23 Eliz.*  
 fenders, and the Concealers of any such Of-  
 fence, should be adjudg'd guilty of Mis-  
 prison of High-Treason.

That every one who should say Mass should be imprison'd for a Year, and forfeit 200 Marks ; and every one hearing Mass should likewise be imprison'd for a Year, and forfeit 100 Marks. *Punish-  
ment for  
saying or  
hearing  
Mass.*

Every Person, absenting from Church one Month, was to forfeit twenty Pounds, and be bound to his good Behaviour, till he conform'd ; and every one, who kept a School, that did not repair to Church, was to forfeit ten Pounds. *Absenters  
from  
Church  
forfeit 20*l*.  
a Month.*

By 23. *Eliz. cap. 2.* it was enacted, That if any Person of his own Imagination should utter any false or scandalous News or Tales of the Queen, he should have both his Ears cut off, or forfeit two hundred Pounds ; and if he utter'd such false Tales as were reported by another, he should have one of his Ears cut off, and forfeit 200 Marks. *Slandering  
the Queen  
Loss of  
Ears.*

And if any Person, by Writing, or Printing, should defame her Majesty ; or if any Person, by setting a Figure, casting a Nativity, Prophefying, Witchcraft, Conjurati<sup>o</sup>n, &c. should seek to know, and set forth how long the Queen should live, or who should reign after her Decease ; or wish, or desire the Death or Deprivation of the Queen ; he should be adjudg'd guilty of Felony. *Felony to  
prophefy  
the Queen's  
Death, or  
who  
should  
reign af-  
ter her.*

By *Cap. 14.* a Subsidy of six Shillings and eight Pence, granted by the Clergy, to be paid in three Years is confirm'd. *A Subsidy  
by the  
Clergy.*

A.D. 1581

A. 23 Eliz.

By the  
Laity.A Pardon.  
Parlia-  
ment pro-  
rogued.Mistakes  
of *Rapin*  
as to this  
Parlia-  
ment.He never  
saw the  
Journals  
or A&S  
of this  
Reign.Argues up-  
on Facts  
that have  
no Foun-  
dation.The Con-  
vocation  
petition for  
Archbi-  
shop *Grin-*  
*dal's* Re-  
flection.

And by *Cap. 15*, a Subsidy of two Fif-  
teenths and Tenths are granted by the Laity.

And lastly, *Cap. 16*, is a Confirmation of  
the Queen's General and Free Pardon.

These, with eleven other publick Acts,  
which will be mention'd at the end of the  
Reign, having receiv'd the Royal Assent, the  
Parliament was prorogu'd on the 18th of  
*March*.

The Authors of *Rapin* tell us, That this  
Parliament met in the beginning of the Year  
1583, when the Duke of *Anjou* was in *Eng-*  
*land*; and relate, that these Acts were made  
before his Eyes, to put him out of Conceit  
with this Kingdom; whereas, in reality, this  
Parliament was held the Year before the Duke  
came over to conclude the Match; from  
whence it is evident, that the Authors of *Ra-*  
*pin* never saw the Journals of Parliament in  
this Reign, or ever dip'd into the Statute-  
Book, notwithstanding they boast of being so  
well acquainted with the Laws and Constitu-  
tion of the Kingdom: And here we find these  
celebrated Writers, according to their usual  
Custom, first supposing Facts without any  
Foundation, and then drawing Inferences from  
them; which, however it may amuse their  
indulgent Readers, tends very little to their  
Instruction.

The Convocation sitting, as usual during the  
Session of Parliament, petition'd the Queen to  
restore their Head Archbishop *Grindal* to her  
Favour, who had fallen under her Displea-  
sure, on account of his encouraging Prophe-  
syings, and had thereupon been suspended  
ever since the Year 1576; which being a  
piece of History scarce touch'd on by our  
Historians,



Historians, will not be unacceptable to the Reader, it is presum'd. \*

At these Prophefying, or Exercises, the Ministers of every Division met together at certain times, and explain'd, according to their respective Abilities, some Passage of Scripture ; after which, one of the *Seniors*, being Moderator, made his Observations on what had been offer'd, and determin'd the Sense of the Place ; and to these Exercises came Crowds of the common People to satisfy their Curiosity.

*A. 23 Eliz.*  
His encouraging  
Prophecies  
the Occa-  
sion of his  
Disgrace.  
Some ac-  
count of  
these Pro-  
phesyings.

Several Inconveniencies were found to be the Effects of these Meetings : Some Clergymen affected to shew their Parts, and to confute and mortify others of inferior Abilities ; and some took these Opportunities of broaching pernicious Doctrines, and leading the People into Errors. Several, who had been silenc'd for their Non-conformity, intruded themselves, and spoke openly against the Liturgy, and the Government of the Church by Bishops ; and it was no uncommon thing for them to revile and calumniate private Persons who differ'd from them, and to traduce the Administration. Laymen also took upon them to wrangle on religious Topicks in these Assemblies, which occasion'd great Confusion ; so that these Exercises, says my Author, degenerated into Factions, Divisions, and Censoriousness. Archbishop *Grindal* however was of Opinion, that they might be so regulated as to become useful to the Church, and accordingly prescrib'd some Rules and Orders for them to act by : As, that they should not be held but by the Appointment of the Bi-

The Arch-  
bishop pre-  
scribes  
Rules for  
them.

\* *Strype's Annals*, Anno 1581. And *Strype's Life* of Archbishop *Grindal*.

A.D. 1581 shop of the Diccese, who should authorize the Archdeacon, or some other grave Divine, to preside therein ; and that none should speak at these Exercises, but such as were appointed by Authority, or treat of any Passages of Scripture, but what were prescrib'd them ; and above all, that no Layman should be suffer'd to speak in those Assemblies, nor should there be any Reflections made on the Government, in Church or State, or on particular Persons.

The Q. requires the Archbishop to suppress them.

But the Queen could not approve of Exercises or Prophefying, however modell'd, apprehending they tended to promote Faction and Sedition, and therefore laid her Commands upon Archbishop *Grindal* to suppress them. She took Notice also of the Numbers of disaffected and factious Preachers, and directed him not to License but few, and such only as were approv'd of for their Learning and Moderation ; she thought it better that the People should be entertain'd with a *Homily* on a *Sunday*, than with the crude, undigested Notions of young hot-headed Divines. To which the Archbishop did not say much at that time ; but, after he came home, wrote a Letter to her Majesty, wherein he represents, that several Bishops did approve of Exercises, or Prophefying, as profitable and beneficial to the Church : That the Clergy thereby became better vers'd in the Scriptures, and free from Idleness ; and he thought nothing beat down Popery like it : That only Men, averse to Religion, and Contemners of Learning, set themselves against it : He desir'd therefore, that Abuses might be reform'd, but that which was good might remain ; adding, That he could not with a safe Conscience consent to the suppressing

He refuses it.

pressing these Exercises, much less send out his Injunctions for their Subversion: Nor could he approve of Licensing but few Preachers, since Preaching was the ordinary Means for the Reconciliation of Men to God and the true Religion; and Obedience to her Majesty, and subordinate Governors, was promoted thereby; and observ'd, that Popery, and the Ignorance of God's Word, thro' the want of good Preaching, had occasion'd the Rebellion in the *North*: But, if it was her Majesty's Pleasure to remove him from the See of *Canterbury*, because he could not comply with her in these Instances, he should, with all Humility acquiesce in it, and render again what he had receiv'd from her.

A.D. 1581

A. 23 Eliz.

The Queen, however, did not alter her Resolution; but being much offended with the Archbishop, caus'd him to be suspended and sequestred, as has been intimated already, and commanded the rest of the Bishops to suppress these Prophecys in their respective Dioceses: The Archbishop remain'd suspended till the present Convocation, *Anno* 1580-1. Nor would her Majesty hearken to that Body, when they petition'd for his Restoration, as has been related; but his Grace remain'd suspended some time afterwards.

And is suspended.

Other Bishops order'd to suppress them.

While the Convocation was sitting, the Parliament having petition'd her Majesty that some Things might be reform'd in the Church, she referr'd the Particulars mention'd by them to the Convocation; among which these were the chief, *viz.* That none should be ordain'd a Minister till he was full twenty-four Years of Age: That there should be no Commutation of Penance: That a more severe Punishment should be inflicted for Adultery, Fornication

Some further Reformation propos'd to the Convocation.



A.D. 1581

A. 23 Eliz.

The Queen  
interposes  
in behalf  
of Earl  
Morton.

cation and Incest: That no Dispensation should be granted for marrying without Bans, unless Bonds were taken with large Penalties: That no Dispensation should be granted for Pluralities: And, that Excommunications might not be incurr'd for Non-appearance, and on every trivial Occasion. But I don't find that the Convocation came to any Resolution on these Heads during this Session.

Earl *Morton* still remaining a Prisoner in *Scotland*, Queen *Elizabeth* sent *Randolph* her Ambassador thither, to interpose in his Behalf; but the King being entirely govern'd by *Lenox*, answer'd, *He would gladly oblige the Queen of England*; but as *Morton* was charg'd with the Murder of his Father, he could not oppose his being brought to Tryal. Whereupon *Randolph* apply'd himself to the States of the Kingdom, representing how desirous her Majesty was of entertaining a good Correspondence with that Nation: That she had always protected them in their Religious and Civil Rights against the Attempts of the *French*; and now they suffer'd the Duke of *Lenox* to impose upon them, to sacrifice them to *France* and the Duke of *Guise*, and throw off their Allies the *English*, who had been so serviceable to them; intimating, that they could not better shew their Gratitude to the Queen of *England*, than by restoring *Morton* to his Liberty; but the States did not think fit to give any satisfactory Answer, either as to the dismissing of *Lenox*, or *Morton's* Liberty: Whereupon the Ambassador apply'd himself singly to several of the Nobility, who had shewn themselves formerly in the *English* Interest, and Friends to *Morton*, proposing the rescuing *Morton* out of the Hands of the Government by force;




to which some of them assented, but alter'd *A.D. 1581*  
 their Minds afterwards (except the Earls of *A. 23 Eliz.*  
*Mar* and *Angus*) when they saw the Ministry  
 raise Forces to defend themselves against any  
 Attacks from *England*, and that *Queen Elizabeth*  
 withdrew the Troops she had sent to  
 the Borders. Whereupon *Randolph*, apprehending  
 the Court of *Scotland* might resent  
 his endeavouring to incite an Insurrection, re-  
 tir'd to *Berwick*, without taking Leave, whi-  
 ther he was follow'd by *Angus* and *Mar*, and  
 a very little time after *Earl Morton* was con-  
 demn'd and executed, when he confess'd that  
*Bothwell*, and *Archibald Douglas*, had ac-  
 quainted him with the Conspiracy against the  
 King, and that he had, after the Murder, en-  
 gag'd to protect *Bothwell* one of the Murde-  
 rers, but deny'd he was actually concern'd in  
 the Murder, or consented to it.

He is con-  
 demn'd  
 and exe-  
 cuted.

In the mean time, a solemn Embassy came  
 from *France* to *England*, to press the Conclusion  
 of the Marriage between *Queen Elizabeth* and *Articles of*  
 the Duke of *Anjou*, and Articles were actual- *Marriage*  
 ly agreed and sign'd by both Parties: By *between*  
 which it was stipulated, That the Marriage *Q. Eliza-*  
 should be celebrated in *England*, within six *beth and*  
 Weeks after the Ratification of the Articles: *the Duke*  
 That the Duke should have the free Exercise *of Anjou*  
 of his Religion in some certain Place to be *sign'd.*  
 assign'd within the Court: That he should  
 make no Alteration in Religion in *England*:  
 That he should enjoy the Title of King, and  
 have his Name us'd in Acts of State; but that  
 the Regal Power, and the Administration of  
 the Government, should remain solely in the  
 Queen: That the *French* King should ratify  
 the Articles within two Months; and that an  
 Alliance should be concluded between *England*  
 and

*A.D. 1581* and *France*. The rest of the Articles were much the same with those agreed between King *Philip* and Queen *Mary*; only a Clause was added, That Queen *Elizabeth* should not be oblig'd to consummate the Marriage, till she and the Duke should thoroughly satisfy each other in certain Points, and certify the *French* King thereof in Writing within six Weeks.

*A. 23 Eliz.*  

 The Duke of *Anjou* chosen Sovereign of the *Netherlands*. While this Treaty was negotiating, the States of the *United Provinces* constituted the Duke of *Anjou* their Sovereign, and declar'd, That the King of *Spain* had forfeited the Dominion of those Countries, which probably they concluded could not be unacceptable to Queen *Elizabeth*, when she was about to take that Prince for her Husband, tho' she had formerly oppos'd it: Besides, the King of *Spain* had lately obtain'd a great Accession of Wealth and Power, by adding *Portugal* to his Dominions; and tho' she did not think it expedient formerly to suffer a *French* Prince to possess himself of the *Low Countries*, the Alteration of Circumstances might induce her to alter her Mind; but however Queen *Elizabeth* might approve of this Conduct of the States, the Sovereignty of the *Netherlands* was no sooner conferr'd on the Duke, but he march'd to their Assistance, and rais'd the Siege of *Cambray*, which was invested by the Prince of *Parma*.

Raises the Siege of *Cambray*.

The Queen excuses her solemnizing the Marriage. Notwithstanding Queen *Elizabeth* had sign'd the Marriage Articles with the Duke of *Anjou*, her Heart seem'd to fail her; for she sent an Embassy to the *French* King, and offer'd several Reasons against celebrating it at this time: She represented, That her Subjects appear'd extremely averse to the Match: That *France* was engag'd in a Civil War, and the Duke

Duke had accepted the Government of the *Low Countries*, and was thereby engag'd in a War with *Spain*, which *England* would, in all probability, be made a Party to; and therefore she must insist on an Offensive and Defensive Alliance with *France*, according to the Articles before the Marriage was consummated. The *French* King answer'd, That he was ready to enter into a Defensive Alliance, but was not oblig'd to conclude an Offensive League by the Articles, nor would he engage in any such Treaty before the Marriage was solemniz'd.

A.D. 1581

d. 23 Eliz.

While things remain'd in this Uncertainty, the Duke of *Anjou* came over from *Flanders*, in hopes to remove all Objections by his Presence: The Queen receiv'd him with the highest Marks of Affection and Esteem; and in *November*, on the Anniversary of her Coronation, was seen to draw a Ring off her Finger, and put it on the Duke's, from whence the Courtiers concluded every thing was concluded on between them. Whereupon great Rejoicings were made by some, while *Leicester*, *Walsingham*, and *Hatton* the Vice-Chamberlain, express'd a very great Concern on this Occasion, looking upon the Ruin of the Kingdom as the certain Consequence of such a Conjunction. The Queen's Women also, when she was retir'd, so terrify'd and vex'd her, according to *Cambden*, that she spent the Night in Doubts and Cares amongst her weeping and lamenting Servants. The next Day she sent for the Duke, and, having had a private Conference with him, he withdrew to his Chamber, where he was seen to throw away the Ring the Queen had given him; and then taking it up again, reflected severely on the

The Duke of *Anjou* comes over in Person.

The Queen puts a Ring upon his Finger.

And yet breaks with the Duke the next Day. His Repentment of it.

A.D. 1581 Inconstancy of the Sex, and particularly of Islanders.

A. 23 Eliz.

The Q's  
Anxiety.

The Ar-  
guments  
for the  
Marriage.

Nor was the Queen's Anxiety much less than the Duke's, according to *Cambden*; for pondering in her troubled Mind, says that Author, the Motives for the Match suggested by *Burleigh* and *Suffex*, who had represented, That unless she married the Duke, the *French King* would not conclude an Offensive Alliance with her; and that she was too weak alone to oppose the Power of *Spain*, if *Philip* should marry his Daughter to the King of *Scots*, and strengthen himself by the Accession of that Kingdom; especially, if it was consider'd what a Party *Philip* would have in *England* itself amongst the Papiſts, and other disaffected People: That the *French King*, and the Duke of *Anjou* also would be highly incens'd, after the Expence of so much Time and Treasure, and so many solemn Embassies, if the Queen should now delude them, and break the Marriage Contract she had sign'd; and consequently she must expect no Assistance from them, if she should be attack'd by *Philip*; adding, That the Duke might be provok'd by this Usage to marry in *Spain*, and then she must expect to see both those Powers united against her.

The Q's  
Reasons  
against it.

Revolving thus the Arguments in her Mind for the Marriage, she was it seems however of Opinion, That it would redound more to her Glory, and the Advantage of the Kingdom, that she should still remain a Virgin; for if she married a Subject, she should degrade herself, and occasion domestick Jars; and, if a Stranger, hazard the Alteration of Religion, and the subjecting herself and the Nation to a foreign Yoke. Nor did she forget,

says



says *Cambden*, the Perils of Conception and Child bearing objected by her Women, and Physicians for some private Reasons.

However, she appear'd to be highly incens'd against a Book publish'd at this time, reflecting on the Match, and entitled, *The Gulph wherein England will be swallow'd by the French Marriage*; wherein, not only the Queen and her Council are reproach'd with ruining the Kingdom; but the Duke of *Anjou*, and the whole *French* Nation odiously defam'd; which the Queen interpreted as a Design to lessen her in the Esteem and Affection of her Subjects, and to prepare them for an Infurrection. She order'd a Proclamation therefore to be publish'd, charging the Author with Sedition, and commending the Duke of *Anjou's* Affection to her Person, and the Protestant Religion; she express'd her Indignation that she should be treated in so vile a manner; and lastly, order'd the Book to be burnt by the Hangman. Some few Days after *John Stubbs*, of *Lincoln's-Inn*, a furious hot-headed Puritan, who had married his Sister to *Cartwright* the Ringleader of that Sect, being found to be the Author, and one *Page* the Disperfer or Publisher of it; they were cry'd and condemn'd for the Offence, to lose their right Hands; which *Cambden* says he saw executed, and that when *Stubbs's* right Hand was cut off, he pull'd off his Hat with his Left, and cry'd, *God save the Queen*. This Sentence was executed soon after the Duke of *Anjou* came to *England*. On the other hand, lest the Papists should be too much exalted on the Prospect of her Majesty's marrying with a Catholick Prince, Priests and Jesuits flocking over to *England* in great

A.D. 1581

A. 23 Eliz.

*Stubbs's*  
Right  
Hand cut  
off for  
writing a-  
gainst the  
Marriage.

A.D. 1581

A 23 Eliz.

*Campion*,  
and 3 o-  
ther Po-  
pish Priests  
executed.

*Campion*  
tortur'd.

Numbers at this time, she order'd *Edmond Campian*, the Jesuit, and three other Priests, to be try'd for conspiring against her Person and Government, and defending the Pope's Authority; and they were condemn'd and executed as Traytors: *Campion* it seems was put to the Rack, to make him confess what Noblemen and Gentlemen had harbour'd and encourag'd him, and discover'd several; but could not be brought to retract his Opinion of the Pope's Power: On the contrary, he declar'd, that he would join the Pope's Forces against the Queen of *England*, if the Kingdom should be invaded. This Jesuit, some of our Historians relate, was the last Man that was put to the Rack in *England*; but, as I remember, there were one or two tortur'd afterwards.

The Rea-  
son of these  
Severities.

There had not been above five Catholicks executed the ten preceding Years, tho' Multitudes of them had incurr'd capital Punishments; but now the Queen seems to have been driven by Necessity to put the Laws in Execution against them; for their Priests openly taught Doctrines destructive to the Protestant Religion and the present Government, reconciling her Majesty's Subjects to the See of *Rome*, and suggesting she had forfeited her Title to the Crown, as she was an excommunicated Heretick.

*Don Antonio*  
of *Portu-  
gal*  
comes to  
*England*.

The latter end of this Year came over to *England* *Don Antonio*, the Bastard of *Portugal*, who had for some time assum'd the Title of King of that Nation, and oppos'd the Pretensions of the King of *Spain*: He was kindly receiv'd by the Court of *England*, as a Person that might be useful to her Majesty in case of a Rupture with *Philip*.

The

The Duke of *Anjou* returning into *Flanders* in *February*, the Queen, who seem'd still to have an Affection for him, accompanied him as far as *Canterbury*, from whence she order'd the Earl of *Leicester*, and several other Noblemen, and Persons of Distinction, to attend him into the *Low Countries*, furnishing him with a considerable Sum of Money, to enable him to carry on the War against the *Spaniard*. *Anjou* was no sooner arriv'd at *Antwerp*, but he was recogniz'd Duke of *Brabant*, *Limburgh* and *Lorain*, the States having already renounc'd their Allegiance to King *Philip*: Whereupon the Duke join'd his Forces with those of the States, and continu'd the War with various Success; but having spent the greatest part of the Money the Queen of *England* had lent him, and observ'd, that the States conferr'd on him only empty Titles, keeping the Government entirely in their own Hands, he attempted to surprize *Antwerp*, and several other Towns, intending to have garrison'd them with *French* Troops; but being repuls'd, and disappointed in every Attempt of this kind, after the Loss of a great many of his Troops, he return'd to *France*, having given the *English* and *Dutch* no great Reason to applaud his Conduct.

A.D. 1582

A. 24 Eliz.

Duke of  
*Anjou* re-  
turns to  
*Flanders*.

Recog-  
niz'd Duke  
of *Bra-  
bant*, &c.

He retires  
in disgust  
to *France*.

The King of *Denmark* having some extraordinary Duties on all Merchant Ships that pass'd the Sound, the Queen dispatch'd *Peregrine Bertie* on an Embassy thither (having first created him Baron *Willoughby* of *Eresby*) with Instructions to endeavour to get those Duties taken off, or at least abated; and at the same time sent the King of *Denmark* the Order of the Garter, which that Prince accepted;

An Em-  
bassy to  
*Denmark*.

*A.D.* 1582 *cepted* ; but still insisted on the Duties he had laid on foreign Shipping.

*A. 24 Eliz.*

*Ruthuen,*  
and other  
Lords seize  
on the  
King of  
Scots.

In the mean time, there happen'd another Alteration in the Ministry of *Scotland* ; *William Ruthuen*, whom the King had lately created *Earl Goury*, with the Earls of *Marre*, *Lindsey*, and several other Lords in the *English* Interest, taking Advantage of the Absence of the Duke of *Lenox* from Court, seiz'd on the King's Person then about sixteen Years of Age, made the Earl of *Arran* Prisoner, and compell'd *Lenox* to fly the Kingdom, and return to *France*. After which they forc'd the young King to approve of their Proceedings, in a Letter to Queen *Elizabeth*, and declare their Actions just and legal in an Assembly of the States : Yet *Buchanan*, according to *Cambden*, expresses his Abhorrence of these tumultuous Proceedings, and now with Sorrow repented he had formerly maintain'd the Cause of factious Men against their Prince ; but he did not long survive this Occurrence : *A Man*, says *Cambden*, who, according to one of his own Poems, was born neither in a Climate, or Country, or Age of Learning, yet happily arriving at the Perfection of poetical Skill, might deservedly be reckon'd the Prince of the Poets of that Age. And, it may be proper to observe, that notwithstanding the Authors of *Rapin* follow *Cambden* close in many Instances, and take three Parts in four of their History of this Reign from him ; yet they stop short here, and profess they cannot believe one Word of *Buchanan's* Detestation of his former Rebellious Principles. They seem to credit *Cambden* upon his bare Word, as long as he says nothing that may be a Reflection on their Sect ;

but

*Buchanan*  
becomes  
a Loyalist.

His Cha-  
racter.

*Rapin's*  
unfair U-  
sage of  
*Cambden*.



but when he does, the strongest Proofs are of no Weight with them. But to return to *Scotland*: The *French* King, upon receiving Advice of the Alterations in the Court of *Scotland*, had dispatch'd *La Moth* his Envoy thither, to endeavour the Restoration of the Duke of *Lenex*, and to inform that King, that the Queen, his Mother, had consented to admit him Partner in the Government. Queen *Mary*, at the same time, importun'd the Queen of *England* to rescue her Son out of the Hands of the Rebels, who had now seiz'd and imprison'd him, as they had formerly her own Person, but seems, in the same Letter, to upbraid *Elizabeth* with the hard Usage she had met with since she fled to *England* for Protection.

A.D. 582

A. 24 Eliz.



The Queen of Scots admits her Son Partner in the Government.

The Town of *Bury* in *Suffolk*, remarkable for its factious and puritanical Inhabitants, had the Insolence this Year to set up the following Inscription about the Queen's Arms, in one of the great Churches there, viz. *I know thy Works, that thou art neither cold nor hot, I would thou wert either cold or hot: Therefore, because thou art luke-warm, and neither cold nor hot, it will come to pass I will spew thee out of my Mouth.* And again, *Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, that thou suffereest the Woman JEZEBEL, which maketh herself a Prophetess, to teach and deceive my Servants, to make them commit Fornication, and to eat Meat sacrific'd to Idols.* Such was the Loyalty and meek Disposition of the Saints in this Reign.

The Insolence of the Puritans at *Bury*.

I shall conclude this Year with observing, That about this time Pope Gregory XIII. caus'd the Calendar to be reform'd, whereby the *English*, and some other Protestant Countries,

The Gregorian Calendar.

A.D. 1582

A. 24 Eliz.

~~~~~

A.D. 1583

A. 25 Eliz.

~~~~~

Some Proposals made the Queen of Scots by the Court of England concerning her Liberty.

tries, who adher'd to the *Julian* Calendar, lost ten Days ; and this occasion'd the Difference in the *Old* and *New* Stile, which still subsists.

The Queen of *England* having been frequently reflected on for detaining the Queen of *Scots*, a Sovereign Princess, and her near Relation, a Prisoner ; and lately reproach'd by *Mary* herself for the hard Usage she had met with, where she had Reason to expect Protection ; and offer'd Queen *Elizabeth* any Security she could propose, That *England* should receive no Prejudice by her being set at Liberty : The Court of *England* thought fit to make Queen *Mary* some Proposals, on her complying with which, it was intimated, she might obtain her Freedom. The most material Articles whereof were these, *viz.* That *Mary*, and the young King, her Son, should attempt nothing prejudicial to *Elizabeth*, or the Realm of *England* : That she should disclaim all Title to this Crown during the Life of Queen *Elizabeth*, and after her Death refer her Right of Succession to the Judgment of Parliament : And, That she should not only swear to these Conditions herself, but the States should ratify them, and the young King be sworn to the Observance of them : And lastly, That Hostages should be given for Performance of them. But the *Scots* of the *English* Party, declaring against these Conditions, and suggesting that Queen *Mary* was, at this time, conspiring to restore Popery, and to introduce the *French* into that Kingdom again, the Treaty was broken off.

Struggles between the *English* and *French* Factions in Scotland.

In the mean time, the *English* and *French* Ambassadors, each of them, solicited the *Scottish* Nobility, in order to fix them in the

Interest

A. D 1583

A. 25 Eliz.



Interest of their respective Princes, but the Clergy at length turn'd the Scale in Favour of *England*; and, when the King had appointed a magnificent Entertainment to be provided for the *French* Ambassadors, to shew their Aversion to that Nation, proclaim'd a solemn Fast, threatening to excommunicate the Nobility and Courtiers who should be present at the Feast. Whereupon the *French* Ambassadors, finding the Current set so strong against them, thought fit to leave the Court of *Scotland*, and return to *France*.

The King however, impatient to find himself in a manner Prisoner to the *English*, or *Ruthuen* Faction, made his Escape from them to the Castle of *St. Andrews*, where he offer'd a Pardon to all that had been concern'd in seizing his Person, if they would come in and submit themselves; but those Noblemen, conscious of their Strength, despis'd the Grace, except *Ruthuen* himself, and he probably accepted of it only to meet with an Opportunity of betraying his Master again: And now the King recall'd the Earl of *Arran*, and such Friends as he apprehended most affectionate to his Person, to Court.

The King escapes from the factious Lords.

And alters his Ministry.

Queen *Elizabeth* hearing of the Alterations that had been made in the Court of *Scotland*, sent Secretary *Walsingham* thither, to prevent the young King's entring into Measures destructive to *England*; but, as this Minister insisted chiefly on his Majesty's discarding his Favourite the Earl of *Arran*, he was not very acceptable to that Prince. However, the King, in answer to a set Speech the Secretary made him, wherein he enumerated the Benefits the King himself, and that Nation, had receiv'd from the Queen; answer'd, That he

Secretary *Walsingham* sent to the Court of *Scotland*.



*A.D.* 1583 would maintain the Amity with *England*:  
*A. 25 Eliz.* That he should constantly defend the estab-  
 lish'd Religion, and would be wanting in no  
 good Offices to the Queen of *England*; and  
 again offer'd a general Pardon to those  
 who had been guilty of surprizing and con-  
 fining his Person. But these Noblemen, in-  
 stead of submitting themselves, enter'd into  
 another Plot to get the King into their Hands  
 again; whereupon they were commanded to  
 depart the Realm, and some of them went  
 over to *Ireland*, others to the *Low Countries*,  
 or *France*; and some of them, among whom  
 were *Ruthuen*, or *Gowry*, endeavour'd to con-  
 ceal themselves in the Country: And whereas  
 the Conspirators had formerly pack'd a Con-  
 vention, that justified the seizing his Majesty's  
 Person, the King now, in a full Assembly  
 of the States, declar'd the Fact to be Traite-  
 rous; while the Clergy, on the other hand,  
*convocated by their own Authority*, decreed it  
 to be Just, and declar'd, That those who did  
 not approve of it deserv'd to be excommuni-  
 cated. But to leave *Scotland* for the present:

Another  
 Plot to  
 seize the  
 King of  
*Scots*.

The King  
 declares  
 the Con-  
 spirators  
 Traytors,  
 and ba-  
 nishes  
 them.

An Earth-  
 quake in  
*England*.  
 Archbi-  
 shop *Grin-*  
*dal* dies.

Mr. *Cambden*, and other Historians relate,  
 That in *Herefordshire*, about this time, three  
 Acres of Ground lying in *Blackmore* were re-  
 mov'd, with the Trees and Hedges, from the  
 Place where they lay, by an Earthquake, and,  
 leaving a great Pit behind, stop'd up a neigh-  
 bouring High-way. On the sixth of *July*  
 this Year dy'd Dr. *Edmund Grindal*, Arch-  
 bishop of *Canterbury*, in the sixty-third Year  
 of his Age, having been blind for some time;  
 his Suspension had been taken off a Year or  
 two before, on his submitting to the Queen.  
 This Prelate was made Bishop of *London* soon  
 after the Accession of Queen *Elizabeth*, and  
 from



from thence translated to the Archbishoprick of *York*, and succeeded to *Canterbury* on the Death of Archbishop *Parker*.

A.D. 1583

A. 25 Eliz.

The Queen was now pleas'd to confer the See of *Canterbury* upon Dr. *John Whitgift*; and, as she apprehended *Grindal* to have been too remiss in exercising his Ecclesiastical

Succeeded by Dr. *Whitgift*.

Authority, she recommended to *Whitgift* the restoring the Discipline of the Church, and to see the Act of Uniformity duly observ'd; which, thro' the Connivance of some Bishops, the Obstinacy of the Puritans, and the private Views of some Noblemen, had been neglected; the Queen's Ecclesiastical Authority had been frequently disputed; separate Congregations set up; new Rites and Ceremonies introduc'd in Divine Worship; the Liturgy, the Administration of the Sacraments, and the Order of Bishops ridicul'd, and a down-right Schism created; while the Papists stood laughing at it, says *Cambden*, and daily drew many over to their Party, pretending there was no such thing as Unity in the Church of *England*.

The Queen orders him to see the Act of Uniformity duly observ'd.

Whereupon Archbishop *Whitgift* propos'd, That the Clergy should subscribe the following Articles.

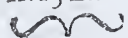
He requires a Subscription to certain Articles of the Clergy.

I. That the Queen had the Chief and Supreme Power over all Persons, born within her Dominions, of what Condition soever they were; and that no foreign Prince or Prelate had, or ought to have, any Power Civil or Ecclesiastical within her Realms, or Dominions.

II. That the Book of Common-Prayer, and that for the ordaining Bishops and Priests, contain'd nothing in them contrary to God's Word, but might lawfully be us'd; and that

A.D. 1583 they should use no other Form, either of Prayer, or Administration of the Sacraments.

A. 25 Eliz.



III. That they approv'd the Articles of the Synod held at *London* by the Queen's Authority in the Year 1562, and believ'd the same to be consonant to God's Word.

The factious Behaviour of the Puritans thereupon.

Peace restor'd to the Church, by the Steadiness of the Archbishop.

It is incredible, says the same *Writer*, what Controversies and Disputes the requiring this Subscription occasion'd; what reproachful Speeches the Archbishop endur'd from factious Ministers, and what Troubles and Injuries from some of the Nobility, who prefer'd undeserving Men to Livings, or else gap'd after the Revenues of the Church; but his Fortitude, Constancy and Patience, overcame all Difficulties, and at length restor'd Peace to the Church: It seems his Motto was, *Vincit qui patitur.*

Earl Desmond kill'd in Ireland, and that Kingdom reduc'd to a State of Tranquillity.

This Year the Earl of *Desmond*, who had so long disturb'd the Government of *Ireland*, was kill'd by a private Soldier, in a little Cottage where he lay conceal'd: He had vast Possessions in that Kingdom, before he forfeited them by his Rebellion, and his Vassals and Dependants were very numerous. He had no less than five hundred Gentlemen of his own Sirname and Family entirely devoted to him, and most of them kill'd in the Pope's, and the King of *Spain's* Quarrel, with whom they join'd against their Sovereign.

*Saunders*, the Priest who wrote against the Reformation, starv'd to Death.

Among the Priests who excited these Rebellions in *Ireland*, the famous, or rather infamous, *Nicholas Saunders* was one who forg'd those improbable Tales, to traduce the Memory of Queen *Anne Bolein*, the Mother of Queen *Elizabeth*, and cast a Slur upon the Reformation; but his Forgeries have long since been detected and confuted. This Priest

was

was forc'd to hide himself among the Woods and Bogs, for fear of being brought to Justice, and famish'd to Death about this time, no other Provision being found in his Pouch, but some Speeches and Letters compos'd to encourage that People in their Rebellion. And now the *Irish* Malecontents being broken, by repeated Defeats, some of them submitted, and others embark'd for *Spain*; while Sir *John Perrot*, the Lord-Deputy, govern'd that Kingdom with great Humanity, reconciling the *Irish* to him, by his impartial Justice and mild Administration.

A.D. 1583

A. 25 Eliz.

Sir *John Perrot* made Lord-Deputy of *Ireland*.

I have already mention'd the Insolence of the Puritans of *Bury*, in setting up malicious Inscriptions in their Churches to asperse the Queen. They proceeded at length, it seems, to deny her Majesty's Supremacy, and stir up the People to Sedition; for which *Elias Thacker* and *John Copping* were indicted at the Summer Assizes this Year, and executed. These Men were *Brown's* Disciples, from whom that infamous Sect, which afterwards went by the Name of *Brownists*, obtain'd that Denomination. As to *Brown* himself, he was of a good Family in *Rutlandshire*, and educated in *Bennet College* in *Cambridge*; he was at first a Disciple of *Cartwright's*, but afterwards went much further than his Master, declaring the Church of *England* to be Antichristian; her Sacraments clogg'd with Superstition; the Liturgy a Mixture of Popery and Paganism; and the Mission of the Clergy no better than that of *Baal's* Priests. With these Principles he embark'd for *Holland*, and join'd *Cartwright's* Congregation at *Middleburgh*; but looking upon *Cartwright's* Plan of Church-Government as imperfect, he struck out another

Two Puritans of *Bury*, *Brown's* Disciples, hang'd for Sedition.

Some account of *Brown* and his Principles.



*A.D.* 1583 ther more suitable to his Fancy ; and, having printed a Book in Defence of it at *Middleburgh*, sent over a great many Copies to *England*, following them soon after in Person ; and it was for the publishing and dispersing these Books chiefly that *Thacker* and *Copping* were hang'd at *Bury*. *Brown* himself however met with more gentle Usage ; for being apprehended, and in the Sheriff's Custody, the Lord-Treasurer, who was his Relation, sent for him up to Town, where, either by putting him in mind of the terrible Examples that had been made of some of his Disciples, or by the Arguments Archbishop *Whitgift* us'd to convince him of his Errors, he was perswaded to renounce them and conform. He afterwards, it seems, relaps'd, and recanted several times, and died at length in *Northampton* Goal, where he was confin'd not for religious Matters, but for a notorious Breach of the Peace.

He renounces them.

Relapses, and recants again several times.

Dies in Goal for a Breach of the Peace.

The Puritans appeal to the Council against the Archbishop.


The Archbishop, pursuing the Queen's Instructions, suspended some puritanical Ministers for Non-conformity ; who thereupon appeal'd to the Council, and had so much Interest in that Body, to get the Archbishop summon'd before them to give an account of his Conduct. Whereupon his Grace sent a Letter to the Board, to acquaint them, That the Petitioners were ignorant, raw young Men, and few of them licens'd Preachers : That he had proceeded no otherwise than the Law requir'd ; and that the Number of those who refus'd to subscribe in his whole Province was not great : That the keeping his Station would be impracticable, if every Curate might take these Freedoms with him ; nor was it possible for him to perform the Duty the Queen expected,



pected, if he was check'd in the Execution of his Authority : That in these Matters none were Judges of his Conduct but the Queen : And, as he was lawfully call'd by God and her Majesty to this Station, he desir'd they would assist him to perform his Duty, and fortify his Jurisdiction for the Repose of the Church, the Credit of the Religion establish'd, and the Maintenance of the Laws : That he was ready to defend the Articles requir'd to be subscrib'd ; but desir'd their Lordships would not insist on his appearing before the Board, for these troublesome Complainants would not fail of making their Advantage of such an Attendance.

*A.D. 1583*  


---

*A. 25 Eliz.*  


The Archbishop's Enemies in the Council, finding his Grace countenanc'd by the Queen, and that he was a Person of no ordinary Capacity and Resolution, did not think fit to require his Appearance ; but encourag'd *Beale*, the Clerk of the Council, a furious Anabaptist, to write against him ; who treated his Grace with abundance of Insolence, of which he complain'd in a Letter to the Lord-Treasurer. \* The Archbishop was afterwards apply'd to by Secretary *Walsingham*, to dispense with a Clergyman who refus'd the Subscription ; but he answer'd, the dispensing in a single Instance, would weaken the Constitution, and make others expect the same Indulgence : But the Lord-Treasurer, being daily sollicitated by the Puritans for some Alteration in the Liturgy and Ceremonies, to free himself from their Importunity, exhorted them to draw up another Form of Prayer, &c. that they could all

The Insolence of the Clerk of the Council, an Anabaptist.

\* *Strype's Annals*, Anno 1583, and his Life of Archbishop *Whitgift*.

A.D. 1583 comply with, whereupon they brought him one very near resembling that of *Geneva*; but when he offer'd this to another Set of them, for their Approbation, they made no less than six hundred Exceptions to it; while a third Class quarrel'd with the Corrections of the second, and insisted on a new Model; and a fourth refin'd no less upon the third. Whereupon the Treasurer, finding they could not agree upon any Form of Divine Service among themselves, had an handsome Opportunity afforded him of dismissing their Complaints.

A. 25 Eliz.

The Puritans differ among themselves about re-forming the Liturgy.

Large Concessions made the Puritans to no Purpose.

Secretary *Walsingham*, on the other hand, who had always express'd much Compassion towards the Dissenters, took upon him to offer them in the Queen's Name, That provided they would conform in all other Instances, the three shocking Ceremonies, as they esteem'd them viz. *Kneeling at the Communion, Wearing the Surplice, and the Cross in Baptism*, should be dispens'd with; but to these large Concessions they only reply'd in the Words of *Moses*, *Ne Ungulam esse relinquendam*; meaning they would have the whole Liturgy laid aside which stiff, and unexpected Answer, says my Author, lost them *Walsingham's* Affection in a great measure: And, to shew the Christian Temper of the Church these Puritans were so zealous to destroy, the City and Church of *Geneva*, from whom our Puritans pretended to derive their Doctrines and Ceremonies, being this Year in great Danger of being swallow'd up by the Pope, and the Duke of Savoy, the Queen, with the Bishops and Clergy of the Church of *England*, contributed large Sums for their Relief at this time, and several Years afterwards.

The Queen and Clergy send Relief to Geneva.

It must be admitted, that Queen *Elizabeth* had a very difficult Part to act; for as the Puritans were perpetually preaching against her Administration, and stirring up the People to Sedition, because she would not reform the Church according to their impracticable Schemes, the Papists were conspiring to destroy her as an Heretick. This very Year, one *Somerville*, a *Warwickshire* Gentleman, was so thoroughly perswaded, by the Arguments he met with in some Popish Pamphlets, that it would be a meritorious Act to kill the Queen, that he forc'd his Way to the Queen's Apartment with his drawn Sword, and, having wounded two or three People that oppos'd him, was apprehended, and, on his Examination, confess'd he intended to kill the Queen; for which Treason he, with his Accomplices, *Edward Ardern* Esq; and his Wife, and their Daughter that was married to *Somerville*, and one *Hall*, a Priest, were all try'd and condemn'd at *Guildhall*: Three Days after which, *Somerville* became his own Executioner in Prison; *Ardern* his Father-in-law was executed as a Traytor; but the Women were pardon'd, as well as the Priest who drew *Ardern* into the Conspiracy, and then became a Witness against him.

*A.D. 1583*

*A. 25 Eliz.*

Both Puritans and Papists give the Government a great deal of Trouble.

*Somerville's* Attempt to kill the Queen.

It has been already observ'd, That the Earls of *Mar*, *Angus* and *Glames*, of the *Ruthuen* or *English* Faction in *Scotland*, refusing to submit to their Prince, were oblig'd to quit *Scotland*, and fly over into *Ireland*; but having now concerted Measures with Earl *Gowry* (*Ruthuen*) they return'd on a sudden to *Scotland*, and surpriz'd the Town and Castle of *Sterling*: However, the Ministry having had some Intimation of the Plot, and making Earl

*A.D. 1584*

*A. 26 Eliz.*

The disaffected *Scottish* Lords plot against their King.

A.D. 1584 *Gowry* Prisoner, the rest of the disaffected Lords were defeated, and oblig'd to quit *Scotland* again, and take Refuge in *England*.  
 A. 26 Eliz. *The Scottish* Kirk, seeing their great Patrons forc'd into Exile, began to cry out their Religion was in danger, and that the King was about to introduce Popery and a *French* Power : for which they had no other Foundation, than his Majesty's refusing to be govern'd by their Faction, and his entertaining a Correspondence with the Queen, his Mother. Their Clamours however could not prevent *Earl Gowry's* being brought to a Tryal : He was charg'd with entring into his second Conspiracy against the King and Government, notwithstanding he had been before pardon'd for seizing and imprisoning the King's Person ; for making War against his Majesty ; possessing himself of the Fortresses of *Sterling* and *Perth* ; and for his consulting with a Witch to accomplish his Treasons. The Earl, in his Defence, does not deny the principal Facts, but reflects upon the Earl of *Arran*, the prime Minister, ascribing this Prosecution to his Malice. He was however convicted by his Peers, and beheaded the same Evening ; for it was the Custom in *Scotland* before the Union, to execute the Prisoner the same Day he receiv'd Sentence.

He is beheaded.

Q. *Elizabeth* in good Terms with the Court of *Scotland*.

The Queen of *England* having now very little Interest in the Court of *Scotland*, dispatch'd an Envoy thither, to endeavour to bring over the Earl of *Arran*, the King's Favourite, to her Party, in which she met with all the Success she could desire, and a Negotiation was soon after set on Foot between the two Crowns ; in which 'tis said, Queen *Elizabeth* directed her Minister to promise, That  
 if



if King *James* remain'd single three Years, *A.D. 1584*  
 ſhe would marry him to a Princeſs of the Blood *A. 26 Eliz.*  
 Royal of *England*, who would then be ar-  
 riv'd at a mature Age.

In the mean time, a Letter was intercepted *Throckmor-*  
 from *Francis Throckmorton*, a *Cheshire* Gentle-  
 man, to the Queen of *Scots*, whereby it ap-  
 pear'd, That a Deſign was on foot to ſet the  
 Queen at Liberty by a foreign Force, and the  
 Aſſiſtance of the *Engliſh* Catholicks : *Throck-*  
*morton* was no ſooner apprehended, but the  
 Lord *Paget*, and *Charles Arundel*, a Perſon *Lord Pa-*  
 of Diſtinction in the Court of *England*, fled *get flies to*  
 over into *France* ; where they gave out, That *France.*  
 they were in danger of their Lives from the  
 ſubtil Artifices of *Leiceſter* and *Walsingham*,  
 who employ'd their Emiſſaries every where to  
 lay Snares for the Catholicks, and charge them  
 with High-Treaſon ; and *Cambden* acknow-  
 ledges, that counterfeit Letters were ſome-  
 times ſent in the Name of the Queen of *Scots*,  
 and left at the Houſes of Papiſts and Spies,  
 employ'd to take Notice of People's Diſcourſe,  
 and lay hold of their Words, and that many  
 idle Stories were countenanc'd and credited ;  
 upon ſome of which, *Henry*, Earl of *Nor-*  
*thumberland*, and *Philip*, Earl of *Arundel*, were  
 confin'd ; *Henry Howard*, Brother of the late  
 Duke of *Norfolk*, and others, were examin'd  
 concerning Letters ſent to the Queen of *Scots*,  
 and their Prudence and Innocence, ſays the  
 ſame Writer, would ſcarce protect them ; how-  
 ever, that Hiſtorian ſeems to juſtify this Con-  
 duct as neceſſary, from the Malice of the Pa-  
 piſts, which diſcover'd itſelf in their Books ;  
 in one of which, the Queen's Women were  
 excited to murder her as a meritorious Act ;  
 for the publiſhing whereof, the Bookseller  
 was piſs.

A.D. 1584 was executed ; but the Author was never discover'd.

A. 26 Eliz.

None were prosecuted however purely for Religion.

The Queen observing however, That the Papists never fail'd to charge her with Cruelty on these and the like Occasions, recommended it to her Judges to deal favourably with such of her Subjects as happen'd to be brought before them purely for transgressing the Laws relating to Religion ; intimating, That they were too rigorous in their Proceedings ; and particularly, she order'd the Inquisitors to forbear Tortures : To which the Judges answer'd, That the Popish Priests had been dealt with more favourably than they deserv'd ; and that none had been call'd to Account for Religion, who had not been found conspiring against the State. However, the Queen, to make her Clemency evident to the World, order'd no less than seventy Priests, who had incurr'd capital Punishments, to be releas'd out of Prison, on condition they should depart the Kingdom.

70 Priests releas'd out of Prison.

The Spanish Ambassador sent home.

The Spanish Ambassador, *Mendez*, being discover'd to have a Hand in almost every Plot against her Majesty, and particularly in that of *Throckmorton's* for rescuing the Queen of Scots, was order'd to leave the Kingdom, which the Queen sent *Waad*, the Clerk of the Council, to Spain to excuse ; but *Philip* would not admit him to an Audience, pretending, the Laws of Nations were violated by sending away his Ambassador.

*Throckmorton's* Confession upon the Rack.

In the mean time *Throckmorton* was put to the Rack, and confess'd his having sent the Spanish Ambassador some Papers, that were found in his Trunks, particularly a Description of the English Harbours, with the Names of such Gentlemen as were of the Romish Religion.

ligion. He confess'd also, that the Catholick Princes had agreed to invade *England*, and set the Queen of *Scots* at Liberty; and that he (the Prisoner) had acquainted the Ambassador with the Names of such great Men as might be confided in, and conferr'd with him concerning raising Troops to join the Invaders, but *Throckmorton* deny'd the whole at his Tryal; and tho' he confess'd it again when he lay under Sentence of Death, he declar'd at his Execution, that his Confession had been extorted from him.

A.D. 1584

A. 26 Eliz.

~~~~~

Denies the whole at his Execution.

It being discover'd, that the Pope, the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Guise*, still went on with their Design of invading *England*; the Earl of *Leicester* propos'd the entring into an Association for the Preservation of the Queen, and that her Subjects should bind themselves, by mutual Oaths, to prosecute to Death all that should attempt any thing against her Majesty, which was generally sign'd and sworn by all Degrees of Protestants in the Kingdom.

An Association entered into for the Preservation of the Queen.

This the Queen of *Scots* look'd upon as aim'd principally at herself, and thereupon offer'd Queen *Elizabeth* very advantageous Terms, if she might obtain her Freedom; and *Cambden* relates, that it was believ'd the Queen really design'd to accept them; but when the Business was as good as concluded, it was quite dash'd, says *Cambden*, by the *Scots* of the contrary Faction, who cry'd out, There was no hopes of Queen *Elizabeth's* Safety, if she was at Liberty: That both Kingdoms would be undone, and the true Religion ruin'd in *Britain*. And, not content with this, the Ministers of the Kirk of *Scotland* inveigh'd bitterly against their Queen, loading her with unworthy

The Queen of *Scots* offers Terms to obtain her Liberty.

A.D. 1584

A. 26 Eliz.

The In-
fluence of the
Scotch
Presbyte-
rians.

The King
restores E-
piscopacy
in that
Kingdom.

Rapin con-
tradicts
Cambden
without
citing any
Authority
for his Sur-
mises.

unworthy Calumnies in their Pulpits, and even aspers'd the King and Council ; and being commanded to appear before the Board, they refus'd to attend with a disdainful Contempt, says my Author, as if Churchmen were not subject to the Commands of their Prince ; tho' the King's Authority over all his Subjects, Ecclesiastical as well as Temporal, was establish'd by the States at this time. Whereupon the Assemblies of the Presbyteries were prohibited, who had assum'd, and arrogated to themselves a boundless Authority, prescribing Laws to the King himself, and the whole Realm ; and the Bishops were, by the States, restor'd to their Dignity and Jurisdiction, whose Order the Presbyters had condemn'd as Antichristian : Upon passing which Acts, some of the *Scotish* Ministers fled into *England*, exclaiming against the Court, as if the Christian Religion was now driven out of *Scotland* : And here again, the Authors of *Rapin* appear very angry with *Cambden* for relating these ungrateful Truths of their Brethren, and would insinuate they do not deserve Credit ; but *Cambden's* Character is too well establish'd to be shaken by the Surmises of those partial Gentlemen, especially where we see it supported by the concurrent Testimony of cotemporary Writers, and even by Acts of Parliament, as in the present Case. But to return ; it being observ'd, that all the hopes of the Popish Party, both at home and abroad, center'd in the Queen of *Scots* ; and that the obtaining of her Liberty, and placing her on the Throne of *England* was the Drift of every Plot : It was resolv'd to take her out of the Hands of the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, who had kept her in an honourable Confinement, treat-
ing

ing her with the Respect due to a Captive Queen for fifteen Years, and to put her into the Hands of others, who would not have that Regard to her Dignity, but would imprison her more strictly, and prevent all Access of her Friends ; and she was thereupon committed to the Custody of Sir *Amias Paulet*, and Sir *Drue Drury*. Mr. *Camben* also suggests, that *Leicester* contriv'd this Change in her Keepers in order to get her assassinated, and that he actually sent down some Cut-throats to take away her Life ; but *Drury* proving an honest Man than *Leicester* expected, and detesting in his Heart so foul a Deed, deny'd the Assassins Access to her : However, the Queen of *Scots*, finding herself more hardly us'd than formerly, and suspecting the worst, solicited the Pope, and the *Spaniard* to hasten their Preparations against *England*, whatever became of her. I have already mention'd in how handsome a manner this Queen was treated, while she was under the Care of the Earl of *Shrewsbury* : Give me leave to observe further, that there is a Letter in *Strype* from the Earl to the Ministry ; wherein he says, That notwithstanding the Allowance for his Prisoner was very considerable, he was out of Pocket in making Provision for her ; particularly, that the Expence of Wine was scarce to be credited ; for her Majesty bath'd every Day in Wine ; and he hop'd therefore the Government would be so indulgent to him, as to permit him to import Wine from *France* Duty-free. But to proceed ; the Court of *England* became the more jealous of the Queen of *Scots* on a Discovery made by one *Hart*, a Popish Priest, who pretended to let the Court into the Scheme, that was laid at this time by the Popish

A.D. 1584

A. 26 Eliz.

The Q. of
Scots put
into the
Hands of
Sir *Drue*
Drury, and
Sir *Amias*
Paulet.
Leicester
said to
have De-
signs a-
gainst her
Life.

The Q. of
Scots baths
every Day
in Wine.

A.D. 1584

A. 26 Eliz.

The
Scheme
laid by the
Papists for
the Resto-
ration of
their Reli-
gion.

Prince of
Orange as-
faffinated.
D. Anjou
dies.

An Em-
bassy to the
French
King.

pish Princes, and the Catholicks at home, for the Restoration of their Religion, to which the Ministry gave great Credit, viz. That Queen *Elizabeth* should be depos'd, and the King of *Scots* disinherited (of *England*) being both notorious Hereticks: That the Queen of *Scots* should marry an *English* Catholick (suppos'd to be *Henry Howard*, the late Duke of *Norfolk's* Brother) who was to be elected King, and the Election confirm'd by the Pope; and that the Children by this Marriage should be declar'd Successors to the Crown of *England*. And what alarm'd Queen *Elizabeth* still more, was the Assassination of *William* Prince of *Orange*, about this time, by one *Balthazar*, a Papist. The Death of the Duke of *Anjou* also was an Affliction to her, as she apprehended he was an Instrument of maintaining the Alliance between her and *France*. To retrieve these Misfortunes therefore, she sent an Embassy to the *French* King, to condole with him on the Duke's Death, and to put him in mind of the Distress of the *Netherlanders*, now they had lost their General the Prince of *Orange*: That the Power of the *Spaniards* was vastly encreas'd of late; the Princes of *Italy* at *Philip's* Devotion; the Pope his Creature, and the Cardinals his Vassals; and all the ablest Heads in *Europe* his Pensioners: And that since the Addition of *Portugal*, and the *East-Indies*, he was become more powerful both by Sea and Land, than his Father *Charles V.* And should he now reduce the *Low Countries*, the rest of the Princes of *Europe* would soon be compell'd to submit to his Pleasure. She thought it necessary therefore, that *France* and *England* should renew their ancient Alliance, and, as a Mark of her Friend-
ship,

ship, sent his Majesty the Ensigns of the Gar- *A.D. 1584*
 ter the beginning of the following Year, by
 the Earl of *Derby*.

The Parliament meeting on the 23d of No- *A. 27 Eliz.*
 vember this Year 1584, six Days after the Queen
 enter'd into the 27th Year of her Reign, two
 Bills of great Consequence were soon after
 brought into the House; the one, for the Security
 of the Queen's Majesty and the Realm, and
 confirming the late Association; and the other,
 for banishing Jesuits and seminary Priests.

The Par-
 liament
 meets.

The Preamble to the first of these Bills re- *Bill for se-*
 cites, ' That it had manifestly appear'd, that *curing the*
 ' sundry wicked Plots had of late been de- *Q. against*
 ' vis'd and laid, as well in foreign Parts, as *the Q. of*
 ' within the Realm, to the great endangering *Scots, and*
 ' of her Highness's most Royal Person, and the *confirm-*
 ' utter Ruin of the Commonwealth: Therefore *ing the*
 ' it is enacted, That if any Invasion or Rebel- *Associa-*
 ' lion should happen, or any Act be attempt- *tion.*
 ' ed, tending to the Hurt of her Majesty's
 ' Person, by, or for any Person that shall pre-
 ' tend any Title to the Crown after her Ma-
 ' jesty's Decease; That then, by her Maje-
 ' sty's Commission, the Lords, and others of
 ' her Privy-Council, and such other Lords as
 ' she shall name, to the Number of twenty-
 ' four at least, shall have Power to examine
 ' such Offenders as aforesaid, and pass Judg-
 ' ment on them; after which, such Persons
 ' shall be disabled to inherit the Crown of this
 ' Realm; and thereupon, it shall be lawful
 ' for her Majesty's Subjects, by all forcible
 ' and possible Means, to pursue to Death eve-
 ' ry such wicked Person, by whose Assent or
 ' Privy any such Invasion or Rebellion
 ' should be made, or any such wicked Act
 ' attempted, compass'd, or imagin'd as afore-
 VOL. XX. C c said;

A.D. 1584 ‘ said ; together with all their Aiders, Com-
 A. 27 Eliz. ‘ fortors and Abettors : *And if it happen that*
 ‘ *her Majesty’s Life be taken away by Violence,*
 ‘ then the Privy-Council, assisted by five
 ‘ Earls, and seven other Lords, are em-
 ‘ power’d to put this Act in Execution.

‘ And whereas her good Subjects had al-
 ‘ ready enter’d into an Association to re-
 ‘ venge to the utmost all such malicious Acti-
 ‘ ons and Attempts against her Majesty, the
 ‘ same is hereby confirm’d ; but it is enacted,
 ‘ That it shall be expounded according to the
 ‘ true Intent and Meaning of this Act.

An Act a-
 gainst
 Priests and
 Jesuits.

By Cap. 2, it is enacted, ‘ That all Jesu-
 ‘ its and Seminary Priests, and other Ecclesi-
 ‘ astical Persons, born within any of the
 ‘ Queen’s Dominions, and ordain’d, or made
 ‘ such by the pretended Jurisdiction of the
 ‘ See of *Rome*, which come into, or remain
 ‘ in any of the said Dominions, shall be ad-
 ‘ judg’d guilty of High-Treason ; and the Re-
 ‘ ceivers, Aiders and Maintainers (knowing
 ‘ them to be such, and at Liberty) shall be
 ‘ adjudg’d Felons without the Benefit of the
 ‘ Clergy.

‘ All others brought up in Seminaries be-
 ‘ yond Sea, and not as yet in Orders as afore-
 ‘ said, which do not within six Months after
 ‘ Proclamation made in *London* (in that be-
 ‘ half) return into their Realm, and within
 ‘ two Days after such Return, before the Bi-
 ‘ shop of the Diocese, or two Justices of the
 ‘ Peace of the County where they shall ar-
 ‘ rive, submit themselves to the Queen and
 ‘ her Laws, and take the Oath of Suprema-
 ‘ cy, shall also be adjudg’d guilty of High-
 ‘ Treason.

‘ They

‘ They who give, or send Relief to any such Ecclesiastical Person or Seminary, or to any brought up there as aforesaid, shall incur a *Præmunire*. A.D. 1584
A. 27 Eliz.

‘ This Act shall not extend to any Jesuit, or other Ecclesiastical Person aforesaid, who, within three Days after his Arrival, shall submit himself to some Archbishop, Bishop, or Justice of Peace of the County where he lands, and there take the Oath of Supremacy ; and under his Hand acknowledge to continue in due Obedience to her Majesty’s Laws.

‘ If any Person knowing a Jesuit, or Priest to remain within any of the Queen’s Dominions, do not within 12 Days discover the same to some Justice of Peace, he or she shall make Fine and suffer Imprisonment during the Queen’s Pleasure ; and the Justice of Peace, which doth not, within 28 Days after, disclose it to some of the Privy-Council, or to the President or Vice-President of the Councils in the North and Marches of *Wales*, shall forfeit 200 Marks : None, having submitted as aforesaid, shall, within 10 Years after, come within 10 Miles of the Court, in Pain of losing the Benefit of his Submission.’

This last Bill against the Jesuits was oppos’d by none but Dr. *William Parry*, Representative for *Queenborough*, who, upon the 3d Reading on the 17th Day of *December*, inveigh’d bitterly against it, affirming it was a *cruel, bloody, and desperate Law, and of pernicious Consequence to the English Nation* ; but refusing to shew his Reasons, he was committed to the *Tower* : However, upon his Submission, he was afterwards admitted to his Place in the House again ; and on the 21st of *December*

Parry opposes the Bill concerning the Jesuits.

A.D. 1585 both Houses were adjourn'd to the fourth of February, by the Royal Warrant. During this Adjournment, *Edmund Nevil*, who pretended to be next Heir to the Earl of *Westmorland*, lately deceas'd, charg'd the said Doctor *Parry* with a Design to assassinate her Majesty. * This *Parry*, *Cambden* informs us, was a Native of *Wales*, born of obscure Parents, and of mean Estate, and had taken the Degree of Doctor of Law, tho' he was but indifferently learn'd; a Man neat, spruce, and very proud. That returning out of *Italy* about two Years before this Parliament, to gain Favour and Credit with the Queen, had reveal'd a Plot of one *Morgan*, and other Fugitives to take away her Life, pretending he had associated himself with them for no other Intent but the Queen's Safety, which made her not easily give Credit to *Nevil's* Information: But *Parry* appearing to prevaricate at his Examination, he was committed to the *Tower*; where, after he had remain'd some time, he made an ample Confession. In which he says, he was sworn one of the Queen's Servants Anno 1570, and continu'd entirely devoted to her Majesty till 1580, when being condemn'd to die for breaking into a Person's Chamber to whom he was indebted, and wounding him, he obtain'd her Majesty's Pardon, and went to *France*. That at *Paris* he was reconcil'd to the Church of *Rome*; and conferring afterwards

Parry
charg'd
with a De-
sign to as-
sassinate
the Queen.

His Con-
fession.

* It is observable, that *Rapin* makes the Discovery of this Plot of *Parry's*, the Reason of bringing in the Bill for the Security of the Queen's Person; whereas it is evident, from *D'Ewes's* Journals, that this Act was brought into the House two Months before the Discovery of that Plot. *D'Ewes's Journals*, Anno 27 Eliz.

with

A.D. 1585

A. 27 Eliz.



with some Jesuits, and the Pope's Nuncio
 at *Venice*, of the distress'd Condition of the
English Catholicks, he gave them a Hint that
 he had found out a way to relieve them, if
 the Pope would justify the Lawfulness of it :
 That *Morgan*, an *English* Jesuit, told the
 Deponent some notable Service was expected
 from him, and propos'd his killing the
 Queen, to which he consented, and was
 highly commended for it by the Pope's
 Nuncio ; but that returning to *England*, he
 discover'd the whole to her Majesty in pri-
 vate : That the Queen heard him without
 being daunted, and said, *No Catholicks should*
be call'd to account merely for Religion, so
that they shew'd themselves good Subjects. In
 the mean time, he receiv'd Letters from
Rome, wherein his Enterprize was com-
 mended, and himself absolv'd in the Pope's
 Name, which he communicated also to the
 Queen ; but that these Letters gave him
 great Courage to perpetrate the Fact, and
 took away all Scruple : Yet he was not
 minded to offer her Violence, if she could
 be perswaded to deal more favourably with
 the Catholicks ; and therefore, lest he should
 commit the Murder, he laid aside his Dag-
 ger as often as he had Access to her : That
 he departed from Court much dissatisfied ;
 and meeting with *Dr. Allen's* Book, which
 taught, that Princes excommunicated for
 Heresy, ought to be depriv'd of their King-
 doms and Lives, he was throughly encourag'd
 to prosecute his Attempt : That he read this
 Book to *Nevil* at his own Table, about six
 Months before he accus'd him, and that *Ne-*
vil proposing the doing something for ob-
 taining the Queen of *Scot's* Liberty, the
 Deponent

A.D. 1585

A. 27 Eliz.



Deponent told him he had greater Business in hand ; and, that *Nevil* and he having sworn Secrecy on a Bible, the next Day they resolv'd, with ten Horsemen, to set upon the Queen as she took the Air, and to kill her ; but *Nevil* hearing that the Earl of *Westmorland* was dead, whose Estate, as next Heir, he expected to procure of the Crown, he broke his Oath, and accus'd the Deponent.' *Parry* having made this Confession before some Members of the Privy-Council, implor'd the Queen's Pardon by Letters he sent to the Queen, the Lord-Treasurer, and *Leicester*.

He is condemn'd.

Being afterwards try'd and condemn'd, at the King's-Bench Bar, he said, *He saw he must die, because he had not been constant to himself ;* and being ask'd what he meant, answer'd, *My Blood be amongst you ;* and, on Sentence being pronounc'd, cited the Queen before the Judgment-Seat of God. At his Execution in *Palace-Yard*, before both Houses of Parliament, he declar'd, *He was never fully resolv'd in his Mind to take away the Queen's Life.* But

And executed.

to return to the Parliament : The two Houses meeting on the Day they were adjourn'd to, viz. the 4th of *February*, pass'd the two great Bills above-mention'd for the Queen's Security, and banishing of Jesuits, with several others ; which receiving the Royal Assent, on the 29th of *March*, the Parliament was prorogued.

The Parliament prorogued on the Bill receiving the Royal Assent.

6 s. in the Pound given by the Clergy.

A Subsidy by the Laity.

The Q's Pardon.

A Subsidy of six Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy, to be paid in 3 Years, was confirm'd this Sessions : The Laity also gave an entire Subsidy and two Fifteenths ; after which the Queen's general Pardon was confirm'd.

There

There were a great many other Laws propos'd in this Parliament, besides those that pass'd; particularly one for restraining the Episcopal Jurisdiction, and to dispense with Ministers reading some Parts of the Common-Prayer, and omitting the Ceremonies required by the Act of Uniformity. But the Queen, misliking these Innovations, says *Cambden*, as always changing for the worst, utterly rejected their Attempts, as tending to overthrow her Prerogative and the Supreme Authority granted her in Ecclesiastical Matters. He takes notice also of the Clamours of the Puritans, who pretended the Church was destitute of able and learned Pastors; whereas there were more learned Pastors in the Church of *England* at that time, he observes, than any other Age, or any other reform'd Church could shew.

A Bill was also brought in for the more reverend Observation of the Sabbath; but the Queen, apprehending that Laws relating to Religion ought to be consider'd in the Convocation, and confirm'd by the Crown, did not think fit it should pass.

The several Articles the House of Commons insisted on in relation to the Church and Clergy, may be found in *D'Ewes's Journal*, p. 359, & seq. with the Answers given to them; but I refer to our Ecclesiastical Historians for a full Account of these Matters. This Session it appears, that one of the Members was High-Sheriff of the County he represented, and was suffer'd to sit in the House, notwithstanding *D'Ewes's Journal*, p. 335.

The Earl of *Arundel*, eldest Son of the late Duke of *Norfolk*, having embrac'd the Catholick Religion, thought fit, after the passing

A.D. 1585

A. 27 Eliz.

Bills propos'd concerning Religion that did not pass.

Clamours of the Puritans.

An High-Sheriff Representative for the same County.

A.D. 1585 sing the Acts above-mention'd against the Queen of Scots, and the Papists her Adherents, to leave the Kingdom, but was apprehended just as he was about to embark, and committed to the *Tower*; where *Henry Piercy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, then remain'd a Prisoner, being charg'd as accessory to *Throckmorton's* Plot for setting the Queen of Scots at Liberty: This last Nobleman was found dead a few Days after, shot in the left Side, with three Bullets, and the Door bar'd on the other side, which induc'd the Coroner's Inquest to bring him in guilty of his own Death.

The Ministry, having taken all imaginable Care for the Security of her Majesty at home, endeavour'd to cultivate a Friendship with foreign Powers, viz. with the King of *Denmark*, and the Protestant Princes of *Germany*, as well as with the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*; to the last of which, the Queen sent Sir *Edward Wotton*, and propos'd to him the marrying one of the King of *Denmark's* Daughters, according to *Cambden* (which it is very reasonable to believe she was sincere in) to prevent his marrying a Catholick Princess, especially if we consider, that this Match was afterwards concluded when the *English* Party in *Scotland* had the Administration in their Hands; tho' *Rapin*, I find, is pleas'd to slight *Cambden's* Testimony, and follow *Melvil's* posthumous Works; where it is suggested, that Queen *Elizabeth* sent *Wotton* to dissuade the King from taking a Daughter of *Denmark*, but however that was, there happening a Quarrel between the Borderers, wherein Sir *Francis Ruffel*, Son to the Earl of *Bedford*, was kill'd and the Queen not receiving all the Satisfaction she expected, she assisted the exil'd Lords to return

Ambassadors sent to foreign Courts.

The Queen proposes a Match between the King of *Scotland* and the Princess of *Denmark*.

Sir *Francis Ruffel* kill'd on the Borders.

return

return to *Scotland*, and recover their Posts in the Administration ; whereupon the Earl of *Arran*, the King's Favourite, was oblig'd to retire from Court.

A.D. 1585
A. 27 Eliz.

The Ministry
chang'd in
Scotland.
An Insur-
rection in
Ireland.

In *Ireland* there were some Insurrections at this time, said to be occasion'd by the Oppressions of Sir *Richard Bingham*, Governor of *Conaught* ; the *Burks* or *Burghs*, joining with the *Island Scots*, continu'd in Arms most part of the Summer, and committed great Ravages ; but their Leaders being taken or kill'd, they were at length happily suppress'd.

But the Affair, which occasion'd the greatest Debates in the *English* Council, was, Whether the Queen should take the States of the *United Provinces* under her Protection. They had already offer'd *France* the Sovereignty of those Provinces ; but that King being oppos'd by the Faction of the *Guises*, who were supported by *Spain*, was not in a Condition to assist them ; neither did Queen *Elizabeth* think fit to accept of the Dominion of those Countries : But, as the King of *Spain* had been long inciting her Subjects to depose her, and promis'd to aid them with his Troops, she apprehended she might very lawfully retaliate the Favour, and remove the War from her own Doors, by supporting the *Dutch*, who were of the same Religion ; especially when their King refus'd to govern them by Law, and treated them as a conquer'd People. Whereupon she enter'd into a Treaty with the States, and the following Articles were agreed on, viz. That the Queen should furnish them with a thousand Horse, and five thousand Foot, to be commanded by her own General, and should maintain these Troops during the War ; but, that the States should

The Queen
assists the
United
Provinces.

Articles of
the Trea-
ty between
the *English*
and *Dutch*.

A.D. 1585 repay the Money within five Years after Peace should be made ; and, that *Flushing*, the Castle of *Ramekins*, and the Island of *Briel*, with the City and two Forts upon it, should be put into her Possession by way of Caution, which Places should be restor'd on the Re-payment of the Queen's Money : That the *English* General, and two more of that Nation, should be admitted into the Council of the States ; and, that they should make no Alliance without the Queen's Consent, neither would she make any without the States ; and, that the *English* and *Dutch* should fit out an equal Number of Ships for their common Defence, to be commanded by the *English* General.

Sir Francis Drake
plunders
the Spanish
Settle-
ments in
America.

At the same time, Sir *Francis Drake*, with one and twenty Men of War, was sent to fall upon the *Spanish* Settlements in *America*, there being 2300 Land-forces on Board the Fleet, commanded by the Earl of *Carlisle* : In their way they surpriz'd the Town of *St. Jago* in the Island of that Name, near Cape *Verd* in *Africa* ; after which they plunder'd *St. Domingo* in *Hispaniola*, then they steer'd to the Continent of *America*, and took *Carthagena* ; and having sail'd along the Coast of *Florida*, as far as *Virginia*, they met with Capt. *Ralph Lane*, and some *English* Men, whom Sir *Walter Raleigh* had left there to take Possession of the Country for the Queen ; but the People, not finding Things answer their Expectations, return'd to *England* with *Drake*, and first brought with them the Plant call'd Tobacco or *Nicotia* : The *Spaniards*, having had Notice of *Drake's* Design, had remov'd their best Effects from the *Maritime* Places ; however, he brought home with him sixty thousand Pounds

Tobacco
first
brought
to *Eng-
land*.
Drake's
Booty.

Pounds in Treasure, with 240 Brass and Iron Cannon. A.D. 1585

About the same time, *John Davis*, endeavouring to find out a North-west Passage to *China*, discover'd the *Strait* which still goes after his Name; but was disappointed in his principal Design, as those Gentlemen had been who attempted to discover a Passage by the North-east.

A. 27 Eliz.
Davis's
Strait discover'd.

The Earl of *Leicester*, being now honour'd with the Title of *General of the Queen of England's Auxiliary Forces*, embark'd with them for *Holland* the latter end of the Year, attended by several of the Nobility, and a select Body of five hundred Gentlemen: And here we can't but observe the Prudence of her Majesty's Ministry, in not making her a Principal in the War, but supplying the States with Forces and Money, as she was convinc'd the Necessity of their Affairs requir'd; whereas, if she had enter'd into an Offensive and Defensive Alliance with them, as was done in a succeeding Age, the *Dutch* would probably have thrown the whole Burthen of the War upon her, under pretence of their own Inability to resist the Enemy's Attacks. We must almost admire the Wisdom of that Court in insisting on Cautionary Towns for the Re-payment of the Expences of the War: Nay, we find the Queen so excellent a Manager, that in her Charge to the Earl of *Leicester*, on his entering on this Expedition, she advis'd him to take Care that her Soldiers were not defrauded of their Pay by the *Dutch*, under pretence of an extravagant Exchange; but, that the full Value of their Money should be return'd them on the other side the Water: An admirable Precedent for future Ages to have

The E. of *Leicester* embarks with the *English* Auxiliaries for *Holland*.

The Prudence of the Queen and Ministry, which ought ever to be imitated.

A.D. 1585 have follow'd ; but what could be expected, when our Generals were bias'd, by Affection or Interest, to sacrifice their Country to Foreigners.

A. 27 Eliz.



A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.



The E. of

Leicester

receiv'd by

the States

with

Transports

of Joy.

They

make him

Governor

of the

United

Provinces.

The States, being reduc'd to the last Distress by the *Spanish* Generals, receiv'd the Earl with Transports of Joy, and acknowledg'd the Queen of *England* their DELIVERER: And, as a Mark of their Gratitude, constituted the Earl Governor and Captain-General of *Holland, Zealand*, and the rest of the *United Provinces*; and gave him the Title of *His Excellency*: And such was the Vanity of this Nobleman, that he began to act as Sovereign of the Country, which he was not at first oppos'd in by the States, who imagin'd possibly, that they could not more effectually engage the Queen to espouse their Cause, than by conferring this Command on her Favourite; and, if they could once bring her to esteem them as her Subjects, they did not doubt but she would be induc'd to defend them with all her Power, and take the Burthen of the War upon herself; but the Queen was not to be easily over-reach'd. She let the States know, that she was highly incens'd at their conferring the Government of the *United Provinces* on her Subject, which she had refus'd her self; declaring, she had no other Intention, than to relieve her Neighbours in Distress; That she was far from desiring the Sovereignty of their Country, and admonish'd them to resume the Authority they had given *Leicester*: She wrote also a very mortifying Letter to the Earl, telling him, That as she had rais'd him from the Dust, and heap'd her Favours upon him, she wonder'd he durst disobey the Orders she had given him in a Matter of that Consequence;

At which the Queen is highly displeas'd.

Consequence ; and commanded him on his Allegiance to conform to the Directions she sent him by *Heneage* her Vice-chamberlain.

A. D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.



The States, in answer to the Queen's Letter, said, They were sorry they had offended her by the Command they had given her General, the Earl of *Leicester* ; but desir'd she would permit him to enjoy it, because it was necessary such a Power should be lodg'd in some one Person, to prevent Dissensions which might prove fatal to their Affairs : The Earl also wrote a very submissive Letter to her Majesty, insinuating, that he had err'd only thro' a Mistake and Inadvertency ; whereupon her Majesty was pleas'd to permit him to continue his Post of Captain-General.

In the following Campaign in the *Nether-*
lands, there happen'd no general Engagement. The *Spaniards* took the Towns of *Grave* and *Venloe* ; and *Leicester*, on the other side, took *Doesburgh*, and drove the *Spaniards* out of the *Betewe*, or *Batavia*, an Island form'd by the Rivers *Rhine* and *Wael* : The only Person of Distinction the *English* lost in these Actions was, the inimitable Sir *Philip Sidney*, who was shot in the Thigh in an Encounter near *Zutphen*, and died about three Weeks after ; he was buried in great State, by his Uncle the Earl of *Leicester*, in *St. Paul's Cathedral* at his Return to *England* ; *James*, King of *Scots*, both Universities, and every Friend to the Muses, endeavouring to celebrate his Virtues and uncommon Endowments. But the States, it seems, very much alter'd their Opinion of the Earl their Governor, before the End of the Campaign : They charg'd him with misapplying their Treasure ; with listening to destructive Councils ; with break-

The Cam-
paign in
the *Ne-
therlands*.

Sir *Philip
Sidney*
kill'd.

The States
complain
of the Op-
pressions of
the E. of
Leicester.

ing

A.D. 1586 ing thro' the Privileges ; Neglect of Discipline, and inventing new Taxes and Contributions.
A. 28 Eliz. However, he return'd to *England* without redressing any of the Grievances they complain'd of, reserving still to himself the Authority over the Governors of their Provinces and great Towns.

The Queen
 aids the K.
 of Na-
 varre, and
 the French
 Prote-
 stants.

In the mean time, the King of *Navarre*, and the *French* Hugonots, being hard press'd by the *Guises* and the Catholicks, dispatch'd the Prince of *Conde* into *England*, to acquaint Queen *Elizabeth* with the State of their Affairs ; who, looking upon it to be a Religious War, and, that in strengthening the Protestants of *France*, she kept the War from her at a distance ; she furnish'd the Prince with fifty thousand Crowns, and a Squadron of Men of War, with which he was enabled to relieve *Rockelle*, then block'd up by the *Guisean* Faction.

A Defen-
 sive and
 Offensive
 Alliance
 between
England
 and *Scot-*
land.

And, that *Scotland* might give her no Disturbance, she sent an Ambassador thither, with Instructions to represent to King *James*, that as the Popish Powers had enter'd into a Confederacy for the Destruction of the Protestant Religion, it would be Madness in them not to unite in their common Defence ; and to propose therefore a stricter Alliance between the two Nations : Which that King consenting to, a Treaty was set on foot at *Berwick*, where the following Articles were agreed on, viz. That they should defend the pure Evangelical Religion in both Kingdoms, against all Opposers ; and use their Endeavours to bring the rest of the Protestant Princes and States into this Confederacy : That if *England* was invaded in any Part remote from *Scotland*, King *James* should furnish the Queen with 2000 Horse

Horſe and 5000 Foot at the Queen's Charges, *A.D. 1586*
 from the Day they enter'd *England*; and in
A. 28 Eliz.
 caſe the *Scots* ſhould be invaded, the Queen
 ſhould furniſh them with 3000 Horſe and
 6000 Foot; and if *England* ſhould be invaded
 within ſixty Miles of the Borders, the King
 of *Scots* ſhould aſſiſt the Queen with all his
 Forces: That neither Prince ſhould make an
 Alliance prejudicial to this, without the Con-
 ſent of the other; but that this Treaty ſhould
 not defeat any former League made with o-
 ther Powers, except in the Article relating to
 Religion; for as to this it was agreed, there
 ſhould for ever remain an Offensive and De-
 ſenſive Alliance between the two Courts; and
 that this Treaty ſhould be ratified by the
 Parliaments of both Kingdoms.

Soon after this Alliance was ratified, ano- *A Conſpi-*
 ther Conſpiracy to aſſaſſinate the Queen was *rac* to aſ-
 diſcover'd: The Priests in the *English* Semi- *ſaſſinate*
 nary at *Rheims* had inſtill'd into their Pupils, *the Queen,*
 That it was a meritorious Act to kill an ex- *and invade*
 communicated Prince; and that thoſe who loſt *the King-*
 their Lives in ſuch Attempts were certainly *dom.*
 Martyrs. Theſe Principles Dr. *Gifford*, and
 other Priests, had ſo inculcated into one *Sa-*
vage, a bold enterprizing Man, that he vow'd
 to kill Queen *Elizabeth*; which Reſolution
 they confirm'd him in; and at the ſame time,
 to lull the Queen and the *English* Miniſtry
 aſleep, they cauſ'd a Book to be publiſhed, ad-
 moniſhing the Papiſts in *England* not to at-
 tempt any thing againſt their Sovereign, and
 to uſe no other Weapons againſt their Adver-
 ſaries, but Prayers and Tears: And, in the
Eaſter Holy-days this Year, *John Ballard*,
 a Priest of the ſame Seminary, having viſit-
 ed the Catholicks in *England* and *Scotland*, to
 ſee

A.D. 1586 see how they stood affected, returning to France, propos'd to *Mendoza*, the Spanish Ambassador, and the Exiles, the Invasion of England, while the Queen's Troops were in the Low Countries; which being approv'd of, *Ballard* was sent to England again, to see what Forces the English Catholicks could raise to join the Invaders.

Ballard
confers
with *Babington*.

Ballard, on his Arrival, meeting with *Anthony Babington*, a Gentleman of Quality and Fortune, entirely devoted to the Interest of the Queen of Scots, and who us'd to convey her Letters to and from the Exiles, acquainted him with the design'd Invasion; who answer'd, the Invasion would signify nothing as long as Queen *Elizabeth* liv'd; to which *Ballard* reply'd, She would not live long, for *Savage* had vow'd to kill her; *Babington* said, so weighty a Business ought not to be trusted to *Savage* alone, and propos'd six Gentlemen, of whom *Savage* was one, for this Tragical Execution, as he call'd it; and made also some Improvements in the Project for an Invasion, and setting the Queen of Scots at Liberty. *Babington* having discontinu'd his Correspondence with the Queen of Scots, since her being committed to the Care of Sir *Amias Paulet*, receiv'd a Letter from her about this time, by an unknown Boy, in Cypher, wherein she blam'd him for his long Silence, and desir'd him to send her a Packet of Letters, which *Morgan*, the English Exile, had dispatch'd to her by the French Ambassador's Secretary; *Babington* did as he was directed, and in his Answer excus'd his Silence, on account of her being in the Custody of Sir *Amias Paulet*, a Puritan, a mere *Leicestrian*, as he call'd him, and a bitter Enemy to the Catholicks. He related

Babington's Correspondence with the Queen of Scots.

related also the Conference with *Ballard*, informing her, That six Gentlemen were chosen to commit the tragical Execution ; and that he, with an hundred more, would at the same time set her at Liberty ; and desir'd, that the heroical Actors in this Business (or their Posterity, if they did not survive it) might be well rewarded. The Queen of *Scots*, in her Answer to this Letter, advises him to use great Caution ; and, that the Association they propos'd entering into, should be on the pretence of their Fears of the Puritans : That Disturbances should be rais'd in *Ireland* : That the Earls of *Arundel* and *Northumberland* should be sollicitated to engage in the Affair ; and that *Paget*, and the Exiles, should come over to *England* ; and having propos'd some probable Ways to rescue her from her Keepers, *Babington* is order'd to promise the six Gentlemen Rewards for their Service.

A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.

Babington afterwards drew the Lord *Wind-
sor's* Brother, and several other Gentlemen of Quality into the Conspiracy ; but among them, one *Polly*, a Spy of Secretary *Walsingham's*, found Means to introduce himself, and being entirely trusted by them, is thought to have reveal'd their Secrets from Day to Day, and to have push'd these young Gentlemen forwards upon this desperate Undertaking, who, as *Cambden* observes, were too prone of themselves to what was bad ; tho' *Nawe*, the Queen of *Scots* Secretary, had warn'd them to beware of him. The six pitch'd upon for the Assassination took an Oath to commit it ; and the Conspirators met frequently, either in *St. Giles's* Fields, *St. Paul's* Church, or in Taverns ; where, at Entertainments, they encourag'd each other, and gloried in the En-
Vol. XX. E c terprize

Babington
engages o-
ther Gen-
tiemen in
the Con-
spiracy.

Six Assa-
sins agreed
on.

A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.

Their Pictures
drawn and
shewn to
the Queen.

She meets
with one
of the Af-
fassins.

The Con-
spirators
betray'd
by their
Accompli-
ces.

terprize they were about to undertake, admiring the Bravery of those Gentlemen who had lately surpriz'd the King of Scots at *Sterling*, and of *Gerard*, the *Burgundian*, who assassinated the Prince of *Orange*. They had the Vanity also, to have the Pictures of the six Assassins drawn, with *Babington*, the principal Agent in the Plot, in the middle of them; from whence it obtain'd the Name of *Babington's Conspiracy*: These Pictures, 'tis said, being privately shewn to the Queen, before the Painter had finish'd them, she did not remember to have seen any of the Gentlemen they were drawn for, unless *Barnwell*, who had often attended her on the Earl of *Kildare's* Business; and seeing him afterwards as she was taking a Walk, she beheld him, according to *Cambden*, with an undaunted Countenance, and turning to *Hatton*, Captain of her Guard, who attended her with others, she said, *Am not I fairly guarded, that have not a Man in my Company that wears a Sword?* and *Barnwell* afterwards acquainted his Accomplices how easily the Queen might have been dispatch'd, if the rest of the Conspirators had been there.

But, it seems, *Babington* had no Intention the Queen shou'd be dispatch'd, till the foreign Troops arriv'd; and not finding those Preparations so forward as he expected, he propos'd to go over to *France* to hasten them, and actually solicited *Walsingham* to grant him a Passport; pretending, he could do the Queen great Service on the other side the Water, by discovering the Designs of the Fugitives. *Walsingham*, who was acquainted with the whole Affair (by *Polly* already mention'd, and *Gilbert Gifford*, a Priest, whom he had gain'd,

gain'd, and who had been employ'd lately in conveying Letters to and from the Queen of Scots) did not only promise *Babington* a Licence to travel, but to do great things for him if he perform'd what he undertook. He delay'd the young Gentleman however, till he became Master of the whole Plot, and then caus'd *Ballard* to be apprehended in *Babington's* House, under the pretence of his being a Popish Priest; but still acted as if he was perfectly ignorant of the Conspiracy, and kept *Babington* in expectation of his Licence, causing him to be strictly watch'd, in the mean time, by one of his Servants, who kept *Babington* Company where-ever he went, under pretence of securing him from being taken up by the Informers: However, *Walsingham's* Agent receiving a Note from his Master, while he was at a Tavern with *Babington*, desiring him to be very careful *Babington* did not make his Escape, the Conspirator read so much of it at a distance, as to find out the Plot was discover'd, of which he took no Notice; but rising up, as if he intended to pay the Reckoning, and leaving his Cloak and Sword behind him, made haste in the Dark to *Westminster*, where changing Cloaths with an Acquaintance, he absconded for some time in the Woods near *Clerkenwell*, with several others of the Conspirators; but Hunger forcing them from thence, they were taken at the House of one *Bellamy*, a bigotted Roman Catholick, at *Harrow on the Hill*, about ten Days after they fled; and being brought back to *London*, the City testified their Joy at their being apprehended, by ringing of Bells and Bonfires. The rest were taken some few Days

A.D. 1586
A. 28 Eliz.
~~~~~

They are  
appre-  
hended.

*A.D.* 1586 after, and being examin'd separately, discover'd the whole Plot in their Confessions.

*A. 28 Eliz.*



The Queen  
of Scots  
Papers  
feiz'd.

In the mean time, Sir *Thomas Gorges* was sent to give the Queen of Scots an Account of what had happen'd, who surpriz'd her with the News as she was hunting: Nor was she suffer'd to return to her Lodgings, but carried from one Place to another, till her two Secretaries were apprehended, and all her Papers were feiz'd: Her Money also was taken from her, lest she should corrupt those about her: A great many Letters were found in Queen *Mary's* Cabinet from Persons of Distinction abroad, and some from *English* Noblemen, full of Respect and Affection; but the latter Queen *Elizabeth* thought fit to conceal, and observ'd, that those who had been faulty in this respect, now appear'd the most zealous against that Queen, in hopes of wiping out the memory of their Offence. But to proceed:

Seven of  
the Con-  
spirators  
plead  
guilty.

On the 13th or 14th of *September*, *Anthony Babington*, *Chidcock Titchburne*, *Thomas Salisbury*, *Robert Barnwell*, *John Savage*, *Henry Doun*, and *John Ballard*, seven of the Conspirators were brought to their Tryals, being charg'd with conspiring the Death of her Majesty; with attempting to set the Queen of Scots at Liberty; inciting a Rebellion at home, and inviting Foreigners to invade the Realm; to which they all of them pleaded guilty: And six of them declared, that it was *Ballard*, the Priest, who had instructed them, that it was lawful to murder the Queen, since she had been excommunicated: After which, Sentence was pass'd on them as Traytors, and on the 15th of *September*, *Edward Abington*, *Charles Tilney*, *Edward Jones*, *John Travers*, *John Charnock*, *Jerome Bellamy*, and *Robert Gage*,

Seven o-  
thers con-  
victed.

*Gage*, were brought to their Tryals for High-Treason, and all of them being found guilty, were likewise condemn'd as Traytors ; and on the 27th of the same Month, the first seven were hang'd on a Gallows erected on purpose at *St. Giles's* in the Fields, and being cut down alive, their Bowels were taken out before their Faces, with unusual Cruelty, says *Cambden* : Six of them confess'd their Crime, and begg'd Pardon of God and the Queen ; but *Abington* endeavour'd to terrify the People, with threatening, that his Blood would soon be reveng'd on them. The other seven were executed the next Day ; but the Queen hearing how cruelly the former had been dealt with, gave Orders that those should have more Mercy shewn them, and accordingly they were all suffer'd to hang till they were Dead, before they were cut down : These also express'd their Sorrow for what they had done, and desir'd the Catholicks not to endeavour to restore their Religion by Force of Arms. Most of the Sufferers were Gentlemen of good Families.

A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.

They are executed.

*Narwe* and *Curle*, the Queen of *Scots* Secretaries, were afterwards examin'd, and confess'd, that the Letters found in her Closet were of their Hand-writing, and were dictated by the Queen : That she had also receiv'd the Letters from *Babington*, already mention'd, and by her Command they had written the Answers to them. Whereupon, it being debated in Council what should be done with the Queen of *Scots*, they were of several Opinions : One Party urg'd, That no new rigorous Course ought to be taken with her ; but that she should be committed to close Custody ; since she was not the Author of the Mischief, but only

The Queen of Scots accus'd by her Secretaries.

Debates in Council concerning her.

A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.

*Leicester*  
proposes  
the poison-  
ing her.

Resolv'd  
to try the  
Queen of  
*Scots* on the  
late Sta-  
tute.

Commis-  
sioners ap-  
pointed to  
try her.

She objects  
to their Ju-  
risdiction.  
But is at  
length  
perswaded  
to appear  
and plead.

but only necessary to it. *Leicester* was of Opinion she should be taken off by Poison ; and sent a Divine to *Walsingham* (probably some of his Puritan Acquaintance) to convince him of the Lawfulness of it ; but *Walsingham* abhor'd the Fact. Others propos'd she should be put to Death on the Statute of the 25th of *Edward III*, which made it High-Treason to conspire the Queen's Death : But this was rejected, as it related only to Subjects. And it was at length resolv'd to try her on the Act made the preceding Year, viz. 27 *Eliz. cap. 1*. already mention'd, *For the Security of the Queen's Person*, &c. And a Commission was accordingly issu'd for the Tryal of the Queen of *Scots* upon the said Statute, directed to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Lord-Chancellor, the Lord-Treasurer, and other Noblemen, to the Number of forty and upwards, to whom were added five of the Judges ; and, on the eleventh of *October*, about thirty-six of the Commissioners assembled at *Fotheringay* Castle, in *Northamptonshire*, where that Queen was a Prisoner, in order to the Tryal ; but she insisted on her Independence as a Sovereign Prince, and said, the Commissioners could have no Jurisdiction over her : However, having made her Protest, That she ow'd no Subjection to the Crown of *England*, she was prevail'd on at length to appear, in order, as she said, to manifest her Innocence to the World, and that she might not lie under so foul an Aspersion as the conspiring to assassinate the Queen of *England* ; for this was the principal part of the Charge against her. As to the rest, the endeavouring to obtain her Liberty, and soliciting foreign Powers for that



that End, she did not seem to deny these Articles. A.D. 1586

*A. 28 Eliz.*



When her Letters were produc'd, to prove she was privy to the Assassination, she insisted they were counterfeit: And as to the Evidence that had been given against her by her Secretaries *Nawe* and *Curle*, and others, who had suffer'd for the Plot, she affirm'd, this had been extorted from them by fear of Death. Besides, they might insert Things in her Letters she never dictated, and Letters might come to them she never saw; that if they had written any thing hurtful to the Queen, it was without her Knowledge, and they ought to bear the Punishment; and that if these Witnesses were present, they would clear her Innocence: But, finding the Commissioners were determin'd to condemn her, she requir'd to be heard in full Parliament, or that she might speak to the Queen in Person. After which, the Commissioners adjourn'd to the 25th of *October*, to the Star-Chamber at *Westminster*, when the following Sentence was pronounc'd, viz.

She desires to be heard by Parliament. The Commissioners adjourn to Parliament. And pass Sentence.

That after the first Day of *June*, in the 27th Year of the Queen, and before the Date of their Commission, divers Matters had been compass'd and imagin'd by *Anthony Babington*, cum *Scientia*, i. e. with the Privy of the said *Mary*, pretending Title to the Crown of this Realm, tending to the Hurt, Death, and Destruction of the Royal Person of the Queen: And that the said *Mary*, pretending Title to the Crown of *England*, had also herself, within the Time aforesaid, compass'd and imagin'd divers Matters tending to the Hurt, Death, and Destruction of the Royal Person of our said Sovereign

A.D. 1586 Sovereign Lady the Queen, contrary to the Form of the abovesaid Statute.

A. 28 Eliz.

This Sentence, which depended wholly upon the Credit of the Secretaries, and they not brought forth Face to Face according to the 13th of *Elizabeth*, was variously censur'd. *Cambden* says, he had seen *Nawe's* Apology to King *James*, written in the Year 1605, wherein he stoutly impugn'd the chief Points of Accusation against his Lady and Mistress: But it does not appear so by the Records.

The same Day the Sentence was pronounc'd, a Declaration was made by the Commissioners and Judges, That the said Sentence did derogate nothing from *James* King of *Scots* in Title or Honour; but that he was in the same Place, Degree and Right, as if the same Sentence had never been pronounc'd.

The King of *Scots* Title not affected by the Sentence.

The Parliament meeting on the 29th of *October*, both Houses approv'd and confirm'd the Sentence given against the Queen of *Scots*, and jointly address'd the Queen to this Effect:

An Address for publishing and executing the said Sentence.

That her Majesty, as well in respect of the Continuance of the true Religion, and the Safety of her Royal Person, as in regard of the Preservation and Defence of her faithful Subjects, and the Common-wealth of this Realm, would be pleas'd to give speedy Order, That a Declaration of the same Sentence and Judgment might be made, and publish'd by Proclamation; and, that Directions might be given for further Proceedings against the *Scottish* Queen, according to the abovesaid Statute; because, that upon advis'd and great Consultation, they could not find, that there was any possible means of providing for her Majesty's Safety, but by the just and speedy Execution of the said Queen: And, that if

the

the said Sentence were not speedily executed, they despair'd of the Continuance of the true Religion, of her Majesty's Life, and the Safety of all her faithful Subjects.

A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.

To this Address the Queen answer'd, That if her Life alone depended on it, and not the Safety and Welfare of her People, she would most willingly pardon her. Nay, if *England* might, by her Death, attain a more flourishing Estate, and a better Prince, she would most gladly lay down her Life, for it was only for her People's sake she desir'd Life: She said, That by the last Act of Parliament, they had brought her to a great Strait, that she must give Order for her Death who was a Princess most nearly allied to her in Blood, and whose Practices against her had stricken her into so great Grief, that she had been glad to absent herself from this Parliament, lest she should encrease her Sorrow by hearing it spoken of, and not out of fear of Danger, as some thought; tho' it was not long since she had seen, and read an Oath, wherein some had bound themselves to kill her within a Month: However, she hop'd they did not expect any present Resolution; for, in Matters of less moment she us'd to deliberate long, but that she would signify her Pleasure in convenient time; and, whatever the best Subjects might expect, at the Hands of the best Princess, they might expect from her.

The Q's  
Answer.

Twelve Days afterwards she sent to both Houses, that they would advise some Means, that the Queen of *Scots* Life might be spar'd: But they again represented to her, That her Safety could not possibly be secur'd so long as the Queen of *Scots* liv'd, and therefore renew'd the Instances for her speedy Execution.

A.D. 1586

A. 28 Eliz.

The Sentence published.

The Publication of the Sentence was notwithstanding defer'd a while, at the Intercession of the *French* Ambassador: But, in the Month of *December*, at the Instance of some Courtiers, it was publickly proclaim'd all over the City of *London*: And the Lord *Buckhurst*, and *Beal*, were sent to the Queen of *Scots* to signify, that Sentence had been pronounc'd against her, and confirm'd by Act of Parliament; and to perswade her to acknowledge her Offences, and expiate them before her Death by Repentance; letting her understand also, That as long as she liv'd, the receiv'd Religion in *England* could not subsist. At this she triumph'd, giving God Thanks, that she was esteem'd an Instrument for re-establishing Religion in this Island: About the same time, Queen *Elizabeth* wrote the following Letter to Sir *James Paulet*, viz. ‘ *Amias*,  
‘ my most faithful Servant, God reward thee  
‘ treble-fold, in the double of thy most troublesome Charge so well discharg'd. If you  
‘ knew, my *Amias*, how kindly, besides dutifully, my grateful Heart accepts your double Labours and faithful Actions; your  
‘ wise Orders, and safe Regards perform'd in so dangerous a Charge, it would ease your  
‘ Travel, and rejoice your Heart; and in that I cannot ballance in any Weight of my  
‘ Judgment the Value that I prize you at, and suppose no Treasure to countervail such  
‘ Faith, and shall condemn my self in that Thought I never committed, if I reward  
‘ not such Deserts: Yea, let me lack when I most need, if I acknowledge not such a Merit, with a Reward, not *omnibus datum*:  
‘ But let your wicked Murderers know, how with hearty Sorrow her vile Deserts compel  
‘ these

The Q's  
 Letter to  
 Sir *Amias*  
*Paulet*.



‘ these Orders : And bid her, from me, ask *A.D. 1586*  
 ‘ God Forgiveness for her treacherous Deal- *A. 28 Eliz.*  
 ‘ ing against my Life many Years, to the in-  
 ‘ tolerable Peril of her own ; and yet not  
 ‘ content with so many Forgivenesses, but  
 ‘ must fall again so horribly, far passing a  
 ‘ Woman’s Thought, much less a Prince’s.’

Various were the Reasonings on the Sentence against the Queen of *Scots* ; but the necessity of the Thing seems to have prevail’d at last above all other Considerations. Queen *Elizabeth* must perish, and the Protestant Religion be extirpated, if *Mary* surviv’d : These were the Apprehensions of the greatest part of the Nation : They acted purely upon a Principle of Self-preservation, therefore they press’d the Execution of the Queen of *Scots* ; but this being deferr’d till the next Year, it may be proper to take Notice of some other Transactions which occur’d in Parliament in the mean time.

The Queen chusing to absent her self from *A. 1586-7.*  
 this Parliament, it was held by Commission, *28<sup>th</sup> 29<sup>th</sup> El.*  
 directed to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the  
 Lord-Treasurer, and Lord-Steward ; and tho’ Other  
 the principal, or only Reason of calling it, Transac-  
 was to confirm the Proceedings against the tions in  
*Scotish* Queen, and to prevent the Dangers Parlia-  
 which daily threaten’d the Queen of *England*, ment.  
 from the Plots and Conspiracies of the *Pa-*  
*pists* : Yet did the Puritans, at this very un- Attempts  
 seasonable time, endeavour to introduce, and of the Pu-  
 even force their *Geneva* Forms of Worship ritans to  
 and Discipline upon the Establish’d Church ; establish  
 and in this Parliament, brought in a Bill for their Sect.  
 the abolishing all Laws then in force relating A Bill for  
 to the Ecclesiastical Government, with a Book subverting  
 annex’d, containing another Form of Publick the Esta-  
 blish’d Church.

A. 1586-7. Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments, with divers new Rites and Ceremonies, which they insisted should be only us'd in the Church, instead of the old one : \* To which Mr. Dalton, a Member of the House of Commons, objected, It was not proper such a Bill should be read, as appointed a new Form of Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments, to the Discredit of the Book of Common-Prayer, and the whole Ecclesiastical State ; adding, that it would bring her Majesty's Indignation upon that House, thus to enter upon any Things which she had reserv'd for her own Cognizance : After which, the House breaking up without coming to any Resolution, the Queen sent for the Bill and Book. However, it was mov'd again by *Wentworth*, and some other zealous Puritans, who were thereupon summon'd before the Privy-Council, and sent to the *Tower* ; which some looking upon as a Breach of Privilege, Sir *Christopher Hatton*, Vice-Chamberlain, said, he suppos'd those Gentlemen were not committed for any thing that concern'd the Privileges of that House, but other Matters ; which my Author suggests, were the disputing the Queen's Prerogative of Supreme Governor in Causes Ecclesiastical, and intermeddling in Church Affairs, which her Majesty had so often prohibited as a Hindrance to publick Business. A Member, in speaking against this Bill for introducing the *Geneva* Form of Worship, rightly observ'd, that it was in reality *no Form at all, it being left to the Minister's Discretion to use it, or something like it.* Among other things, it seems, this Bill of the Puritans took

Some zealous Members sent to the *Tower* by the Council.

\* *D'Ewes's Journal, Anno 28 & 29 Eliz.*

away the Right of Patronage both from the Queen and private Patrons, and made her Majesty subject to the Excommunication of the Presbytery, as appears by Mr. *Strype's* Life of Archbishop *Whitgift*. \*

A. 1586-7.

28<sup>th</sup> & 29<sup>th</sup> El.

An Address for Alterations in Religion.

The Q's Answer.

It is evident also, that a Petition was offer'd to the Queen during this Parliament, for Alterations in Religion; for in the same Life we meet with the following Answer to it; tho' neither the Petition, or the Answer are to be found in *Dewes's* Journal. The Answer was of the following Tenor, viz. ' Her Majesty is fully resolv'd, by her own Reading, and princely Judgment, upon the Truth of the Reformation which we have already, and mindeth not now to begin to settle her self in Causes of Religion.

' Her Majesty hath been confirm'd in her said Judgment of the present Reformation, by the Letters and Writings of the most famous Men in *Christendom*, as well of her own Dominions, as of other Countries.

' Her Majesty thinks it very inconvenient and dangerous, while our Enemies are labouring to overthrow the Religion Establish'd as false and erroneous, that we by new Disputations should seem our selves to doubt thereof.

' Her Majesty hath fully consider'd, not only of the Exceptions that are made against the present Reformation, and doth find them frivolous; but also of the Platform that is desir'd; and accounteth it most prejudicial unto the Religion establish'd, to her Crown, to her Government, and to her Subjects.

\* *Strype's* Life of Archbishop *Whitgift*, p. 259.

' Her



A. 1586-7.

28<sup>th</sup> & 29<sup>th</sup> El.

{

‘ Her Majesty thinketh, that tho’ it were  
 ‘ granted, that some Things were amiss in  
 ‘ the Church ; yet seeing she is fully perswa-  
 ‘ ded, and knoweth it to be true, that for the  
 ‘ very Substance and Grounds of true Religi-  
 ‘ on, no Man living can justly controul them ;  
 ‘ to make every Day new Laws in Matters  
 ‘ of Circumstances, and of less moment (espe-  
 ‘ ally touching Religion) were a Means to  
 ‘ breed great Lightness in her Subjects, to nou-  
 ‘ rish an unstay’d Humour in them, in seek-  
 ‘ ing still for Exchanges. *Malum est & Reip.*  
 ‘ *noxium, assuesieri homines ad facilitatem mu-*  
 ‘ *tandarum Legum.*

‘ If any thing were amiss, it appertaineth  
 ‘ to the Clergy more properly, to see the same  
 ‘ redress’d : *Unicuique in sua Arte credendum.*  
 ‘ *Quam quisque nôrit artem in hac se exerceat.*  
 ‘ *Navem agere ignarus navis timet.*

‘ Her Majesty takes your Petition herein  
 ‘ to be against the Prerogative of the Crown ;  
 ‘ for by their full Consents it hath been con-  
 ‘ firm’d and enacted (as the Truth herein re-  
 ‘ quireth) that the full Power, Authority, Ju-  
 ‘ risdiction, and Supremacy in Church Causes,  
 ‘ which heretofore the Popes usurp’d, and took  
 ‘ to themselves, should be united and annex’d  
 ‘ to the Imperial Crown of this Realm.’

Resoluti-  
 ons of the  
 Puritans  
 thereupon.

When the Puritans found they could not  
 carry their Point by fair Means, they came to  
 the following Resolutions, *viz.* That if the  
 Magistrate could not be induc’d to erect the  
 Discipline by their Perswasion, then they  
 ought to erect it themselves, because it was  
 better to obey God than Man. In this Point,  
 said they, we have dolefully fail’d, which now,  
 or never, stands us in hand to prosecute with  
 all Celerity, without lingering and staying so  
 long



long for Parliaments, where Bishoply Adversaries bore the greatest Sway in God's Matters. A. 1586-7.  
28<sup>th</sup> & 29<sup>th</sup> El.

*That in this case Subjects might withstand their Prince : That the Ministers, after due Admonition, might excommunicate him as an Enemy against the Kingdom of Christ : That, being so excommunicate, the People might punish him ; and that thereby he ceas'd to be their King. For which they quoted Junius Brutus and Buchanan. \**

The most material Acts that pass'd in this Session of Parliament of the 28<sup>th</sup> and 29<sup>th</sup> of Elizabeth was, *Cap. 1.* being a Confirmation of the Convictions and Attainders of *Thomas, Lord Paget, Anthony Babington*, and the rest of the Conspirators above-mention'd, to be lately attainted of High-Treason by Outlawry, Verdict, or Confession, whereby their Estates were forfeited to the Crown. Acts pass'd  
this Ses-  
sion.  
Attainders  
confirm'd.

*Cap. 5.* makes void all fraudulent Assurances made by Recusants, to save the Forfeitures incurr'd by their Recusancy. Fraudu-  
lent Assu-  
rances by  
Recusants.

*Cap. 7.* confirms a Subsidy of six Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy, to be paid within three Years. A Subsidy  
by the  
Clergy.

*Cap. 8.* The Laity grant the Queen a Subsidy and two Fifteenths : And lastly, Another  
by the  
Laity.

*Cap. 9.* contains a Confirmation of the Queen's general Pardon. And it is observable, that her Majesty scarce ever neglected granting a Pardon, every Session, to quiet the Minds of her Subjects, and prevent their entering on desperate Courses. But to proceed : A general  
Pardon.

\* *Strype's Whitgift*, p. 264.

A. 1586-7.

28<sup>th</sup> 29<sup>th</sup> El.

K. James  
interceeds  
for his Mo-  
ther's Life.  
And uses  
Threats.

King *James*, of *Scotland*, when he understood that the Sentence against the Queen, his Mother, was publish'd, sent Ambassador after Ambassador, to interceed with Queen *Elizabeth* for her Life: And, when he found his Intercessions were not like to prevail, made use of Threats; but the Queen of *England*, being sensible the greatest part of that Nation were zealous for putting the Sentence in execution, had no great regard to his Menaces: Nay, some Historians suggest, that the very Ambassadors King *James* sent to *England* upon this Occasion, privately solicited the Ministry to put their Queen to Death. Certain it is, the *Scotish* Clergy refus'd to pray for her Preservation, when the King requir'd it.

The *Scotish*  
Clergy re-  
fuse to pray  
for her.

The *French*  
also inter-  
pose.

The *French* also mingled Threats with their Intercessions, and yet, according to some Writers, promoted the Destruction of the Princess they were employ'd to save; tho' this is scarce to be credited, because we find the *French* Ambassador in a Plot, the beginning of the next Year, to assassinate the Queen of *England*, which must have been with a View to the saving her Rival, Queen *Mary*.

The Queen  
in great  
Perplexi-  
ty.

*Cambden* suggests, that Queen *Elizabeth* was in great Perplexity, when she consider'd the Arguments that had been offer'd for and against putting the Queen of *Scots* to Death. She was on the one hand apprehensive her Character would suffer, should she consent to the taking away the Life of a Princess, her near Kinswoman; and, that the King of *Scots* resenting it, might join with the Catholic Princes, and invade her Kingdom; to which he would be the rather induc'd, as he would then be a Step nearer the Throne. On the other hand, should she spare her Rival,

no

no less Dangers threaten'd ; the Nobility, and the rest of her Subjects, seeing their Advice slighted, and that her Majesty could not be prevail'd on to take off the Queen of Scots, would probably be induc'd to consider her and her Son, as likely to mount the Throne in a short time, and consequently would make their Court to that Family, and neglect the Preservation of the present Possessor : And, that the Jesuits and Priests, whose Eyes were fix'd on Mary only, seeing her sickly and not likely to live long, would leave no Means unattempted to hasten Queen Elizabeth's Death, that they might restore their Religion.

The Queen was so disturb'd with these Thoughts, according to the same Writer, that she would retire from Company ; and, sitting in a melancholy Posture, let fall such Words as these, *Aut fer, aut feri*, either bear with her, or smite her ; and again, *Ne feriare feri*, strike lest thou be stricken. At length, she deliver'd a Writing into the Hands of *Davison*, Secretary of State, sign'd with her own Hand, commanding a Warrant under the Great Seal to be drawn up for the Execution, which should lie in readiness if any Danger happen'd in that Time of Jealousy and Fear ; for Reports \* were spread all over *England*, at this time, to terrify the Queen and her Subjects, rais'd, as *Cambden* conceiv'd, by the

A War-rant order'd for the Execution of the Queen of Scots.

\* It was reported, That the *Spanish* Fleet was arriv'd at *Milford-Haven* : That the Scots had enter'd *England* : That the Duke of *Guise* was landed in *Suffex*, and the Queen of Scots escap'd : That the *Northern* Parts were in Rebellion : That a New Conspiracy was on foot to kill the Queen, and set the City of *London* on Fire ; and, That the Queen was actually Dead, &c. *Camb. Compleat Hist.* 533.



*A. 1586-7.* Queen of *Scots* Enemies, to hasten her Death ;  
 which *Rapin* on the contrary suggests, were  
 spread by the Emiffaries of the Court, to let  
 the People see how necessary *Mary's* Death  
 was, charging Queen *Elizabeth*, on this Occa-  
 sion, with the deepest Dissimulation. But to  
 proceed ; the Queen having chang'd her Mind,  
 the next Day acquainted *Davison*, she would  
 not have the Warrant drawn ; to which he  
 answer'd, It was drawn, and had pass'd the  
 Great Seal already : At which she appear'd sur-  
 priz'd, and blam'd his making such haste. He  
 had so little Regard however to what her Ma-  
 jesty said, that he immediately after acquaint-  
 ed the Members of the Council, that the War-  
 rant had pass'd the Seal by her Majesty's Or-  
 ders (concealing the Queen's altering her  
 Mind ;) whereupon *Beal*, the Clerk of the  
 Council, was sent down with the Warrant,  
 and the Lords, to whom it was directed,  
*viz.* The Earls of *Shrewsbury*, *Kent*, *Derby*,  
*Cumberland*, and some others, went to *Fother-*  
*ingay* Castle, where the Queen of *Scots* then  
 was, to see her executed ; and, in pursuance  
 thereof, her Head was cut off in the Hall of  
 the Castle on the 8th of *February* : As to the  
 particular Circumstances of her Execution, they  
 are to be found in all our Histories, and there-  
 fore needless to be repeated here. A certain  
 Writer, in describing her Person, says, she was,  
 at the time of her Execution, in the forty-sixth  
 Year of her Age, tall of Stature, and corpul-  
 lent ; her Face fat and broad ; that she had a  
 double Chin, hazel Eyes, and wore a Tower  
 of borrow'd Hair, instead of her own. As to  
 her Character, *Cambden*, who liv'd in those  
 Times, relates, that she was a Lady fix'd and  
 constant in her Religion, of singular Piety  
 towards

The Con-  
 duct of  
*Davison*,  
 Secretary  
 of State on  
 this Occa-  
 sion.

She is exe-  
 cuted  
 without  
 the Know-  
 ledge of Q.  
*Elizabeth*.

Her Person  
 and Cha-  
 racter.



towards God, invincible Magnanimity of Mind, and endow'd with Wisdom above her Sex.

*A. 1586-7.*  
*28<sup>th</sup> 29<sup>th</sup> El.*

*Buchanan*, and the Presbyterians, her Enemies, give a very different Character of this Princess, charging her with the Murder of her Husband, the Lord *Darnley*, and many other Crimes of a very deep Die, in which they are follow'd by the Authors of *Rapin*; tho' *Cambden* assures us, he saw the Protest, already mention'd to be made by the Earls of *Huntley* and *Argyle*, and sign'd by them, which perfectly acquits the Queen of any Knowledge of the Conspiracy against the Lord *Darnley*, her Husband, and charges her Enemy and Accuser, the Earl of *Murray*, her Bastard Brother, with it. And the Authors of *Rapin* being conscious, that as long as that Protest had any Credit in the World, the Queen must be acquitted of the Crimes laid to her Charge: Those notable Writers have endeavour'd to prove that Protest a Forgery, tho' they have miserably fail'd in their Attempt, as will appear from the following Remarks.

Some REMARKS upon *Rapin's Attempt to A.D. 1587*  
 prove the Protestation made by the Earls of  
*Huntley and Argyle, in relation to the Mur-* *A. 29 Eliz.*  
*der of Henry Darnley, King of Scotland, a*  
*Fiction.*

‘ 1. *Rapin* observes, That this Protest clears  
 ‘ the Queen of *Scots* from the Guilt of mur- on the Au-  
 ‘ dering her Husband, and charges that Mur- thor of *Ra-*  
 ‘ der on the Earl of *Murray*; which, he sug- pin, in re-  
 ‘ gests, is directly contrary to the Testimony lation to  
 ‘ of *Melvil*, an Eye-witness, who says not *Argyle's*  
 ‘ a single Word, which can give Occasion to Protest.  
 ‘ G g 2 suspect,

A.D. 1587 *‘* suspect, that the Earl of *Murray* was thought  
*‘* guilty of the Murder: And asserts, that if  
 A. 29 Eliz. *‘* this Protestation be true, *Melvil’s* Memoirs  
*‘* are only a Heap of Fables; and concludes  
*‘* therefore, that the Protest is forg’d.’

## REMARK.

As to *Rapin’s* Argument, that the Protest must be forg’d, because it contradicts *Melvil’s* Memoirs; it is not easy to conceive, how the Protest can contradict *Melvil* in this Particular, because *Melvil* says nothing either to charge or acquit *Murray* of the Murder: And indeed *Melvil* was a Creature and Dependendant of Earl *Murray’s*. The Earl first introduc’d him into the Queen’s Service, and it is evident, from all the Writers of those Times, that *Melvil* always continu’d to espouse *Murray’s* Interest to the utmost of his Power; and therefore it cannot be suppos’d he should charge his good Friend and Patron *Murray* with the Murder. But further, if *Melvil’s* Silence be a sufficient Argument, that *Murray* was not concern’d in the Murder, it is equally an Argument, that the Queen had no Hand in it; for *Melvil* no-where says, or even insinuates, that she had any Knowledge of the Conspiracy against the King’s Life, which is the Thing *Rapin* labours to prove. It is evident also, that *Melvil* was not an Eye-witness of the Murder, as *Rapin* affirms; for *Melvil* himself says, when he came next Morning to the Palace, *Bothwell* told him, the King was found dead near his House, *but he could not get a sight of him*. How was *Melvil* then an Eye-witness, when he was neither there at the time the Murder was committed, nor so much as saw the Body afterwards. And as for *Rapin’s*

pin's Observation, that if the Protestation be true, *Melvil's Memoirs* must be a heap of Fables ; I must confess, I can't see the Necessity of this Inference: For the Protestation clears the Queen of the Murder, and makes *Murray* accessary to it ; whereas *Melvil*, as has been observ'd already, neither charges, nor acquits either of them of this Murder: And therefore the Memoirs may be true, tho' the Protest is admitted to be genuine.

A.D. 1587.

A. 29 Eliz.

‘ 2. *Rapin* proceeds to take the Protest to Pieces, pretending to demonstrate from the Face of it, That it is all a Fiction, and a Forgery: One of his Arguments to prove which is, that *Cambden*, tho' he says he had taken it from an Original, sign'd by the Earls own Hands, has not set their Hands to the Writing, being ignorant in what Order they were to be plac'd, insinuating, that *Cambden* was in reality guilty of forging the Protest.’

## REMARK.

It had been very easy for *Cambden*, who was himself an Herald, to have inform'd himself, which of the Earls ought to have had the Precedence ; and consequently there can be very little in this Observation.

‘ 3. *Rapin* says, that *Cambden*, who neglected to date the Protest, and plac'd it in his *Annals* in the beginning of the Year 1567, immediately after the King's Murder, as if, at that very time, *Murray* had been accus'd of killing the King ; whereas it was not till after the Queen's Flight into *England*.’

RE-

A.D. 1587

A. 29 Eliz.

## REMARK.

Archbishop *Spotswood*, and other Historians, affirm, that there was a Rumour, that *Murray* and *Morton* were the Contrivers of the King's Murder, immediately after his Death was known, and that this Rumour was current in *England*; consequently, *Rapin's* Affirmation, that *Murray* was never accus'd of being the Author of the King's Murder, till after the Queen's Flight into *England*, is false.

‘ 4. *Rapin* adds another Observation, which to him, he says, seems *decisive*, to demonstrate the *Forgery* of the Protest, viz. That Earl *Lidington* was never accus'd of being concern'd in the King's Murder, but in this Writing.’

## REMARK.

*Melvil*, whose Authority *Rapin* so much relies on, says expressly (*Melvil's Memoirs*, p. 100.) That Captain *Crawford* was directed to accuse Earl *Lidington* of the said King's Murder before the Privy-Council, and, being accus'd of so odious a Crime, he was committed to *Ward*: Consequently, *Rapin's* Assertion, that *Lidington* never was accus'd of the Murder, is false, and there is nothing in this *decisive* Proof as he calls it.

‘ 5. Lastly, *Rapin*, being conscious, that he had fail'd in proving the Protest a *Forgery*, observes, That if it was genuine, it could be no Proof of what *Cambden* asserts in relation to *Murray*, because one of the Parties to the Protest was an Enemy to *Murray*.’

## REMARK.

These Lords, it appears, were sometimes Friends, and sometimes Enemies; and admitting




mitting they were both *Murray's* Enemies, at the Time of their making this Protest, this ought not to invalidate their Testimony, especially when it is corroborated by many approv'd Historians. In short, we must give up *Cambden*, and a Cloud of celebrated Writers, and look upon their Histories as Forgeries and Fables, in *Rapin's* Words, if we believe this Foreigner, this Enemy to our Constitution; who, as he wrote many Years after the Facts he relates, and notoriously sets himself to wrest every Author, and every Passage, in favour of his Party, will surely be but little regarded by the impartial World: Especially, when we find him frequently guilty of false Quotations, and charging Men of establish'd Reputations with Forgeries, of which he himself appears to be the Contriver.

To return to our History; *Cambden* relates, That when Queen *Elizabeth* heard the Queen of *Scots* was put to Death, her Countenance alter'd, her Speech fail'd her, and she stood in a manner astonish'd; but recovering her self, after some time, the Council were sharply reprimanded, and commanded out of sight; even the Lord-Treasurer was banish'd the Court for some time, as appears by several Letters in *Strype*, which he wrote to endeavour to recover the Queen's Favour; and, as to *Davison*, the Secretary, she order'd him to be try'd in the Star-Chamber for a Misdemeanor, in deceiving her (but not for his Life, as the Authors of *Rapin* relate,) after which she wrote the following Letter to the King of *Scots*, by *Robert Cary*, her Kinsman.

*A.D. 1587*  


---

*A. 29 Eliz.*  


The Council banish'd the Court for executing the Warrant without Orders.

A.D. 1587

A. 29 Eliz.

The Q's  
Letter to  
the King  
of Scots.

My dearest Brother,

‘ I would to God thou knowest (but not that  
‘ thou feltest) the incomparable Grief my Mind  
‘ is perplex’d with, upon this lamentable Ac-  
‘ cident which is happen’d contrary to my  
‘ Meaning and Intention, which, since my Pen  
‘ trembles to mention it, you shall fully un-  
‘ derstand by this my Kinsman. I request  
‘ you, that as God, and many others, can  
‘ witness my Innocence in this Matter ; so you  
‘ will also believe, that if I had commanded  
‘ it, I would never deny it : I am not so  
‘ faint-hearted, that for Terror I should fear  
‘ to do the thing that is just, or to own it  
‘ when it is once done ; No, I am not so base,  
‘ or ignobly minded. But as it is no princely  
‘ Part, with feign’d Words, to conceal and  
‘ disguise the real Meaning of the Heart, so  
‘ will I never dissemble my Actions but  
‘ make them appear in their true and proper  
‘ Colours. Perswade yourself this for a Truth,  
‘ That as I know this is happen’d deservedly on  
‘ her Part ; so, if I had intended it, I would  
‘ not have laid it upon others ; but I will ne-  
‘ ver charge my self with that which I had  
‘ not so much as thought of. Other Matters  
‘ you shall understand by the Bearer of this  
‘ Letter. As for me, I would have you be-  
‘ lieve, there is not any which loves you  
‘ more dearly, or takes more Care for the  
‘ good of you and your Affairs. If any Man  
‘ would perswade you the contrary, you may  
‘ conclude he favours others more than you.  
‘ God preserve you long in Health and Safe-  
‘ ty.’

*Davison's*  
Tryal for  
acting con-  
trary to the  
Q's Orders.

In the mean time, *Davison* was try'd in the  
Star-Chamber before the two Archbishops,  
the Earls of *Worcester* and *Cumberland*, the  
Lord

Lord Grey, the two chief Justices, the chief Baron, and several other Commissioners: The principal Articles of his Charge being, That whereas the Queen had order'd a Warrant to be drawn up, for the Execution of the Queen of Scots, and committed it to *Davison's* Trust and Secrecy; he, forgetting his Duty, in contempt of her Majesty, and contrary to the Queen's Commands, had acquainted the Council therewith, and put the Warrant in Execution without her Knowledge.

A.D. 1587

A. 29 Eliz.

To which *Davison* answer'd, That tho' the Queen did intimate he should keep the Warrant in his Hands, she did not expressly command it; neither did he believe he had offend'd against the Trust and Secrecy he had repos'd in him, seeing he communicated the Business only to the Council; and the Reason he did not recall the Warrant, when the Queen told him she had chang'd her Mind, was, because it had been agreed by all the Council, that it should be immediately sent away, and Execution done, lest the Common-wealth, or the Queen, should receive any Hurt: Whereupon, the Deposition of the Lord *Burleigh* was produc'd against him, who declar'd, That when he and the rest of the Council doubted whether the Queen had absolutely resolv'd to have the Execution immediately done, *Davison* assur'd them she had; to which *Davison* reply'd, he would not contest with the Queen, to whose Conscience, and the Commissioners Censure, he wholly submitted himself.

The Lord chief Baron *Manwood*, having given an historical Relation of the Queen of Scots Attempts against the Government, from the time of her usurping the Arms of *England*, down to *Babington's* Conspiracy; and

*A.D.* 1587 taken an Opportunity of approving the Sentence pass'd upon her, and the Queen's intended Clemency towards her, which *Davison* had inconsiderately prevented. His Sentence was, *That Davison should pay a Fine of ten Thousand Marks, and to be imprison'd during the Queen's Pleasure.* \*

Fin'd  
10000  
Marks.

Speeches  
of the  
Commis-  
sioners.

The other Commissioners, most of them held, that *Davison* had offended thro' Inadvertency ; however, they agreed to the Sentence given by *Manwood* : But the Lord *Grey*, on the contrary, observ'd, That if any Violence had happen'd to the Queen, and she had been taken off while the Warrant was in *Davison's* Hands, he would have born the Blame of it, and they should have curs'd his Indiscretion ; and, whatever Punishment they laid upon the Secretary, he should always esteem him as an honest good Man. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* also approv'd the Fact, and commended the Man ; but the Manner of executing the Warrant he utterly condemn'd.

The Lord *Lumley* said, Never, in any Age, was there such a Contempt against a Prince ever heard of, That the Council should resolve on a Matter of such Consequence without her Knowledge, when they were in the Palace, and might so easily have had Access to her ; protesting, that if he had a Son in the same Fault, he would censure him severely.

To which the Lord Chief Justice *Wray* reply'd, That he concurr'd with the rest in their Sentence, and thought the Queen had just Reason to be offended with all her Council. However, she forgave them, as she was sensi-

\* See his Tryal at large, in *State Tryals*, Fo. Vol. 7. p. 20.



ble they had been very careful and diligent for the Preservation of Religion, and the Common-wealth.

A.D. 1589

A. 27 Eliz.

*Davison's*  
private A-  
pology.

Here Mr. *Cambden* gives us the Substance of *Davison's* Apology for his Conduct among his Friends in private, but without the least Intimation whether it deserves Credit or not.

The Queen (says *Davison*) after the Departure of the *French* and *Scotish* Ambassadors, of her own Motion, commanded me to deliver her the Warrant for executing the Sentence against the Queen of Scots; when I had deliver'd it, she sign'd it readily with her own Hand; when she had so done, she commanded it to be seal'd with the Great Seal of *England*, and in a jesting manner said, Go tell all this to *Walsingham*, who is now sick, altho' I fear he will die for sorrow when he hears it. She added also, the Reasons of her deferring it so long; namely, lest she might seem to have been violently and maliciously drawn thereto: Whereas, in the mean time, she was not ignorant how necessary it was; moreover, she blam'd *Paulet* and *Drury*, that they had not eas'd her of this Care, and wish'd that *Walsingham* would feel their Pulses touching this Matter. The next Day after it was under the Great Seal, she commanded me, by *Killegrew*, that it should not be done; and when I had inform'd her that it was done already, she found Fault with such great haste; telling me, that in the Judgment of some wise Men, another Course might be taken. I answer'd, That that Course was always best and safest which was most just: But, fearing lest she would lay the Fault upon me (as she had laid the putting of the Duke

A.D. 1587 of *Norfolk* to Death upon the Lord *Bur-*  
 leigh) I acquainted *Hatton* with the whole  
 A. 29 Eliz. Matter, protesting I would not plunge  
 my self any deeper in so great a Bu-  
 siness. He presently imparted it to the  
 Lord *Burleigh*, and the Lord *Burleigh* to  
 the rest of the Council, who all consented to  
 have the Execution hastened, and every one  
 vow'd to bear an equal Share in the Blame,  
 and sent *Beale* away with the Warrant and  
 Letters. The third Day after, when, by a  
 Dream which her Majesty told of the Queen  
 of *Scots* Death, I perceiv'd she waver'd in her  
 Resolution, I ask'd her whether she had  
 chang'd her Mind? She answer'd, No; but  
 another Course (said she) might have been  
 devis'd; and withal, she ask'd me whether  
 I had receiv'd any Answer from *Paulet*?  
 Whose Letter, when I had shewn her,  
 wherein he flatly refus'd to undertake that  
 which stood not with Honour and Justice;  
 she waxing angry, accus'd him and others  
 (who had bound themselves by the Associati-  
 on) of Perjury and Breach of their Vow, as  
 those that had promis'd great Matters for  
 their Prince's Safety, but would perform no-  
 thing; yet there are (said she) who will do  
 it for my Sake: But I shew'd her how dis-  
 honourable and unjust a Thing this would be,  
 and withal, into how great Danger she  
 would bring *Paulet* and *Drury* by it: For,  
 if she approv'd the Fact, she wou'd draw  
 upon herself both Danger and Dishonour,  
 not without Censure of Injustice; and if she  
 disallow'd it, she would utterly undo Men  
 of great Desert, and their whole Posterity;  
 and afterwards she gave me a light Check,  
 the same Day that the Queen of *Scots* was  
 executed,

executed, because she was not yet put to Death.' A.D. 1587

As King *James* could not but deeply resent the putting his Mother to Death, he refus'd to admit *Cary* into *Scotland*, and with difficulty was prevail'd on to receive Queen *Elizabeth's* Letter; and having assembled the States, propos'd their entering into a War with *Elizabeth*. Whereupon they declar'd, they were ready to spend their Lives and Fortunes to revenge his Mother's Death, and defend his Title to the Crown of *England*; and some advis'd his entering into a Confederacy with *Spain* and *France*, and to endeavour to possess himself of *England* immediately: But others, suppos'd to have been employ'd by Queen *Elizabeth*, suggested to him the Hazard of a War with *England*, especially as there was no depending upon foreign Aid, which his Mother had too fatally experienc'd: And admitting he should prevail, by the Assistance of such Allies, the *Spaniard*, who was of a different Religion, and had already set up a Title to *England* himself, would probably endeavour, after he had depos'd *Elizabeth*, to drive *James* out of the Island of *Britain*, in which he would be assisted by the Pope, the *Guises*, and other Catholick Powers, who were bent upon extirpating all the Protestants of *Europe*: That by making War on *England*, he would also provoke that Nation to exclude him from the Succession, and be rendered incapable of inheriting that Crown; whereas, by stifling his Resentment for the present, he might reconcile the Queen and her Subjects to him, enjoy the Kingdom of *Scotland* securely for the present, and in a few Years become Monarch of all *Britain*. The King, it seems, was so wise

*A. 29 Eliz.*

*K. James* resents the putting his Mother to Death. Proposes a War.

But at last follows more prudent Council.



*A.D.* 1587 wife as to take the Advice of the latter, and accordingly we seldom hear of any Misunderstandings between him and the Queen of *England* afterwards; The Queen had solemnly declar'd, that his Mother was executed without her Consent, and gave him all the Satisfaction she was able, by acquainting him, she design'd him her Successor, and more he could not have obtain'd by an hazardous and expensive War.

*A. 29 Eliz.* Advice coming to *England* in the mean time, that the King of *Spain* was making vast Preparations by Sea and Land, which were suppos'd to be design'd against *England*, *Drake* was sent out with a Squadron of Men of War to destroy all the Shipping he could meet with in the *Spanish* Ports, and had the good Fortune to take and burn no less than an hundred Sail in the Port of *Cadiz* alone, loaded with Ammunition and Provision for the intended Expedition, which oblig'd the *Spaniards* to defer his Enterprize till the following Year.

*Drake* destroys the *Spanish* Shipping in their Ports. About the same time, *Thomas Cavendish* made a Voyage round the Globe, and, in his Passage thro' the *Pacific* Ocean, took a great many *Spanish* Ships, bringing home with him a considerable Treasure.

*Cavendish* his Voyage round the Globe. The *Spaniards* still continu'd the War against the *United Provinces*, and this Year took from them the important Town of *Sluice*, and gain'd other Advantages, by bribing the Governors of some Frontier Places; particularly, *William Stanley*, and *Rowland York*, two *English* Commanders, *Leicester's* Creatures, who betray'd *Deventer*, and a Fort near *Zutphen*, to the *Spaniards*, deserting over to them with twelve or thirteen hundred Men. These, and the rest of their Losses, the *Dutch* ascrib'd to *Leicester's* ill Conduct; while he, on the contrary

The *Dutch* and the *E.* of *Leicester* fall out.



rary, complain'd his Hands were tied, that the *Dutch* never furnish'd him with Forces sufficient for any Enterprize, and, conferring on him only insignificant Titles, reserv'd all the Power to themselves ; and, finding himself extremely slighted, endeavour'd to reduce *Leyden*, and other Places under his Power : Whereupon the States procur'd him to be recall'd, and made Prince *Maurice* of *Nassau*, Son to the late Prince of *Orange*, then about two and twenty Years of Age, Governor of the *United Provinces* in his stead, and *Peregrine*, Lord *Willoughby*, was created General of the *English* Auxiliaries in the *Low Countries*. *Leicester* was charg'd with Mismanagement at the Council-Board on his Return home ; but appears to have been still so much in the Queen's Favour, that the Prosecution was drop'd, and his Enemies were frown'd upon.

He is recall'd.

Among the great Men who died this Year, was *Thomas Bromley*, Lord-Chancellor, who was succeeded in that Post by Sir *Christopher Hatton*, which the Lawyers murmur'd at, that Office having been always fill'd by one of that Profession, or some great Prelate, till then ; but he executed the Place, *Cambden* observes, with the greatest State and Splendor of any that went before him ; and, what he wanted in the Knowledge of the Law, labour'd to make good by Equity and Justice.

*Bromley*  
Lord-Chancellor dies.  
Succeeded by Sir *Christopher Hatton*.

The next memorable Year the *English* still celebrate as the greatest Deliverance they ever had from Popish Tyranny and Slavery. The King of *Spain* had been making Preparations for three Years in all his Ports, whether in *Spain*, *Portugal*, *Italy*, or *Sicily*, to fit out such a Fleet, as might insure him the Conquest of *Britain*, which afterwards obtain'd the

*A.D.* 1588  
*A. 30 Eliz.*  
Preparations for the *Spanish* Invasion.

A.D. 1588

A. 30 Eliz.

Pope Six-  
tus V. pub-  
lishes a  
*Croisado*  
against Q.  
Elizabeth.

And In-  
dulgences  
for her E-  
nemies.

The Queen  
prepares  
for her  
Defence.  
A great  
Fleet.

An Army  
of 80000-  
Men.

the Name of the INVINCIBLE ARMADA. The Prince of *Parma*, at the same time, being order'd to build Transports, and flat-bottom'd Boats, to transport an Army of Horse and Foot from the *Netherlands* to *England*;

Pope *Sixtus* V, when these Preparations were almost ready, sent *Allen*, an *English* Cardinal, into the *Low Countries*, to revive the Bulls of *Pius* V, and *Gregory* XIII, against the Queen of *England*, who excommunicated her Majesty, declar'd her Dethron'd, and her Subjects absolv'd from their Allegiance; and even publish'd a *Croisado*, inviting all Christian Powers to make War upon her as an Infidel, and Enemy to Christianity, granting Indulgences to all who should assist in destroying this Heretical Queen; whereupon a great many Voluntiers of Quality, from several Parts of *Europe*, list'd in this Service.

The Queen, who was perfectly acquainted with every Step the Pope and *Spaniards* took, made suitable Preparations for her Defence. She fitted out a great Fleet, and gave the Command of it to *Charles Howard*, Lord *Effingham*, Admiral of *England*, who, assisted by *Drake*, was station'd near *Plymouth* to be in a readiness to receive the Enemy, as he enter'd the Channel, while the Lord *Henry Seymour*, second Son to the Duke of *Somerſet*, commanded another Fleet of forty Men of War *English* and *Dutch*, that lay upon the Coast of *Flanders*, to prevent the Duke of *Parma's* bringing over any Forces from thence. She rais'd also an Army consisting of eighty thousand Men, twenty thousand whereof were canton'd on the Southern Coasts to oppose a Descent there; twenty-three thousand Foot, and a Thousand Horse, under the Command

of the Earl of *Leicester* were posted at *Tilbury* A. D. 1588  
 near the Mouth of the *Thames*, where the A. 30 Eliz.  
 Enemy propos'd to make their grand Descent,  
 in order to possess themselves of the City of  
*London* at their landing; and the residue,  
 consisting of thirty-four thousand Foot, and  
 two thousand Horse, were order'd to remain  
 about the Queen's Person. These were all  
 regular Troops, and were to be reinforc'd  
 and supported by the ordinary Militia, as Oc-  
 casion serv'd. A Council of War also was  
 appointed to regulate the whole, consisting  
 of *Arthur* Lord *Grey*, Sir *Francis* *Knolles*,  
 Sir *John* *Norris*, Sir *Richard* *Bingham*, and  
 Sir *Roger* *Williams*, esteem'd the best Soldiers  
 of that Age. All the Ports and accessible  
 Places on the Coasts also were fortified and  
 strongly garrison'd: Orders were given every-  
 where to oppose the Enemy's Descent, but not  
 to come to a general Engagement if they  
 should land; but to retire and destroy the  
 Country before them, that they might find no  
 Subsistence, and to harraß the *Spaniards* per-  
 petually in their March.

The Queen was also advis'd to take off the  
 Heads of the Papists of the first Quality, who  
 were suppos'd to be in the *Spanish* Interest;  
 but this Piece of Cruelty her Majesty disap-  
 prov'd, and only confin'd some few of them:  
 At the same time she thought fit to send an  
 Embassy to the King of *Scots*, to represent,  
 that their Danger was equal, and that *Philip*  
 would not content himself with one part of the  
 Island, if he met with Success in the other:  
 Whereupon that Prince, who had already  
 rais'd an Army to oppose the common Enemy,  
 declar'd his great Readiness to unite his For-  
 ces

The Q.  
 and K. of  
*Scots* re-  
 solve to  
 unite their  
 Forces a-  
 gainst  
*Spain*.

A.D. 1588 ces with the Queen's to resist the impending Storm.

A. 30 Eliz.

An insidious Peace propos'd by the Spaniard.

King *Philip* in the mean time, in order to amuse the Queen, and take her unprovided, had, the preceding Winter, order'd the Prince of *Parma* to enter into a Treaty of Peace with her, and the Plenipotentiaries of both Crowns met accordingly near *Ostend* in *Flanders*; for, tho' the Queen was morally sure the *Spaniard* was not sincere, she consented to this Treaty, to convince the World, that she was not averse to Peace; continuing however to make the best Preparations she could for her Defence. Nor was the insidious Negotiation broken off till the *Spanish Armada* appear'd under sail, when the Duke of *Parma* was so much a Man of Honour as to permit the *English* Plenipotentiaries to return home.

The Strength of the *Armada*.

This *Armada* consisted of ninety-two Gallions, or large Ships of the Line, as we call them at this Day; four Galliaffes, thirty Frigates, thirty Transports for Horse, and four Gallies, making in all an hundred and sixty Sail; on Board whereof were 8350 Mariners, 2080 Gally-Slaves, and 19290 Land-Forces: The whole commanded by the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*. This wonderful Fleet, the most formidable that had then appear'd upon the Ocean (tho' not comparable to those of *England*, *France*, or *Holland* at this Day) set sail out of the River *Tagus* in *Portugal* on the 29th of *May*; but being dispers'd by a Storm, assembled again at *Corunna*, or the *Groyne*, a Port of *Galicia* in the north-west Part of *Spain*. Three of their Gallies however being driven upon the Coast of *France*, reported that the Fleet was so shatter'd, that it was impossible they could proceed in their Voyage this Year; which

Dispers'd by a Storm.



which News being brought to *England*, Secretary *Walsingham* sent Orders to the *English* Admiral to send four of his largest Men of War back to their Ports; but the Admiral, far from obeying this thrifty Command, declar'd he would sooner maintain them at his own Charge, not thinking it proper to expose the Nation to a Descent on every uncertain Report: However, believing some of the Enemy's Ships might be shatter'd and disabled by the late Storm, and a North Wind springing up at the same time, he stood over to the Coast of *Spain*, expecting to make some Advantage of their Distress; but the Wind chopping about to the South, he return'd to the Coast of *England*, lest the *Spaniards* should arrive in his Absence (*without receiving any Intelligence that the Enemy's Loss was not so great as was reported, as Rapin is pleas'd to add.*)

*A. D. 1588*  
*A. 30 Eliz.*

*Rapin's*  
Addition  
to his Au-  
thor.

The *Spanish* Fleet, being re-assembled, and the little Damage they had receiv'd repair'd, set sail again from the *Groyn* the 12th of *July*, O. S. and a Day or two after an Advice-Boat was dispatch'd to the Duke of *Parma* to have his Troops and Transports in Readiness to join them. On the 19th the *English* Admiral receiv'd Advice, that the *Spanish Armada* had enter'd the Channel, and was seen off the *Lizard* Point; whereupon he caus'd the Fleet to be tow'd out of *Plymouth* Sound with great Labour, the Wind sitting directly on Shore; and the next Day discovering the Enemy, suffer'd them to pass by him: that he might gain the Advantage of the Wind; and following them till the 21st, began the Fight with this formidable Enemy; whereupon the *Spaniards*, throwing their Fleet into a round Figure, took all the smaller Vessels in the

The *Ar-*  
*mada* sails  
again from  
the *Groyn*  
towards  
*England*.

Discover'd  
in the  
Channel.

Attack'd  
by the  
*English*.

*A.D.* 1588 middle of them, being sensible that the *English* Men of War, which were but of the Size of modern Frigates, could make little or no Impression on their Galleons, which seem to have been equal to our second Rate Men of War at this Day. However, the *English*, firing chiefly at the Enemy's Rigging, disabled some of their largest Galleons, which were cut off from the rest, and fell into their Hands; for though the *English* had the Disadvantage in point of Bulk and Strength, that was in some measure made up by the Nimbleness of their Frigates, which could attack and retire as they saw fit, without any Danger of being taken by the Enemy. And thus the two Fleets continu'd a kind of running Fight from the 20th to the 27th, when the *Spaniards* cast Anchor in *Calais* Road, intending here to wait for the Duke of *Parma*, and his Transports with Land-Forces from *Flanders*, which either were not ready, or durst not put to Sea for fear of the *English*.

A running  
Fight till  
the *Armenada*  
anchors  
in *Calais*  
Road.

Several  
Noblemen  
hire Ships,  
and join  
the *English*  
Fleet.

The *Armenada*  
put  
into Con-  
fusion by  
*English*  
Fire ships.

In the mean time several Noblemen and Persons of Quality had hir'd Ships and fitted them out at their own Charge; so that the *English* Fleet now consisted of 140 Sail, besides the Squadron of *English* and *Dutch* on the Coast of *Flanders* that block'd up the Harbours of *Newport* and *Dunkirk*: But still the *Spanish* Galleons were so much superior to the *English* Ships in Bulk, that there was very little Probability of disabling many of them by pure Force; whereupon the *English* Admiral had Recourse to a Stratagem till then very little us'd, *viz.* the turning some of his worst Vessels into Fireships, and sending them into the *Spanish* Fleet in the Night-time, which had the desired Effect; for the Duke of *Medina* was so surpriz'd on finding his Fleet in the midst

midst of the Flames, that he order'd all his Ships immediately to cut their Cables and put to Sea.

A.D. 1588

A.30 Eliz.

The next Day, while the *Spaniards* were dispers'd, and endeavouring to return to the Rendezvous between *Calais* and *Gravelin*, the *English* Admiral fell upon them, and made several Prizes; and a strong North-west Wind arising, drove most of the *Spanish* Fleet upon the Coast of *Zealand*, where they were upon the Point of being cast away on the Flats and Sands; but the Wind shifting on a sudden to the Southward, enabled them to get clear of those Shoals; whereupon a Council of War was held on Board their Admiral, where it was resolv'd to return to *Spain* by the North of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, for they wanted Ammunition and Necessaries. Some of their Ships had fallen into the Hands of the *English*, others were disabled, and very little Hopes appear'd of the Duke of *Parma's* joining them. They directed their Course therefore Northwards, being pursu'd by the *English* Admiral beyond *Edinburgh Frith*, after he had detach'd a strong Squadron to reinforce that on the Coast of *Flanders*, and prevent the Duke of *Parma's* putting to Sea.

Attack'd  
by the  
*English*  
again.

Sail North  
about, and  
return to  
*Spain*.

While the two Fleets were engag'd, Queen *Elizabeth* spent her Time in reviewing and encouraging her Troops on Shoar, and making Provision for every Exigency. It is not to be credited, says *Cambden*, what a Spirit of Bravery she infus'd into her Soldiers by her Presence and Direction; till at length she receiv'd Advice that the *Spaniards* had entirely abandon'd their Design, and were gone home in a miserable shatter'd Condition, having lost a great

Her Majesty's  
Conduct at the  
Head of  
her Armies.



*A.D. 1588* a great many Ships and Men on the Coast of  
*Scotland and Ireland.*

*A. 30 Eliz.*

A Particu-  
 lar of the  
*Spaniards*  
 Losses.

There is a particular Account of the Losses the *Spaniards* sustain'd in that Enterprize, in the third Volume of *Strype's Annals* (*Appendix*, No. 53.) which I shall here only sum up in the gross, viz. fifteen great Ships, and four thousand seven hundred and ninety-one Men lost in several Engagements with the *English*, in the Months of *July* and *August*, in the Channel; seventeen Ships, and 5394 Men sunk, drowned, killed, or taken upon the Coast of *Ireland*, in the Month of *September*; besides which, another great Ship and seven hundred Men were cast away upon the Coast of *Scotland*, the Men being sent home, with the Consent of Queen *Elizabeth*, at the Instance of the Duke of *Parma*.

The K. of  
*Spain* re-  
 ceives Ad-  
 vice of the  
 Destruction of the  
*Armada*.

The King of *Spain*, according to *Cambden*, receiv'd the Advice of the Destruction of his Navy with great Temper, and order'd a general Thanksgiving because it was no worse. Others say, when he heard the News, he answer'd, *He did not send them to fight against the Winds and Waves*; intimating, That no human Force could have defeated the well-laid Scheme. But, if we believe *Cophey's Account* of this Matter, as we find it in *Strype*, *Philip* did not bear his Losses so patiently; for *Cophey* relates, That when the News of the Destruction of the *Armada* was brought to Court, the King, being then at Mass in his Chapel, swore, after the Mass was ended, *That he would waste and consume his Crown to the Value of a Candlestick* (pointing to a Candlestick that stood upon the Altar) *but he would either ruin the Queen of England, or become tributary to her.*



It must be acknowledg'd, that the Preservation of *England* at this Time was primarily owing to the Divine Providence; yet may there be assign'd some subordinate Means that contributed to this remarkable Deliverance. And in the first place, It was a very great Error in the *Spaniards* to attempt the Invasion of *England* before they had made themselves Masters of one Port on the opposite Shoar, where their Fleet might ride in Safety in case of Storms and other Disasters, as some in their Council wisely represented before the Enterprize was undertaken; for, could the *Spanish* Fleet have remain'd with any Security on the Coast of *Flanders*, they might from thence have convoy'd over what Forces they pleas'd; whereas, being driven from thence by that Stratagem of Fireships and the stormy Weather, they had no Choice left, but either to land with the twenty thousand Men they brought with them, or abandon the Enterprize; and, considering how well prepar'd the Queen of *England* was to receive them, it must have been a very desperate Undertaking to have attempted the Conquest of *England* with twenty thousand Men. But, had her Majesty not been possess'd of the Hearts of her Subjects, and taken timely Precautions for her Defence, twenty thousand veteran Troops might have taken the Crown from her Head, and made an absolute Conquest of the Island: Nor was it the Duke of *Parma's* being unprepar'd that hinder'd his joining the *Armada* when it first appear'd, but the *English* and *Dutch* Fleet before *Dunkirk*, and their Forces by Land, which press'd him at this Time with a more than ordinary Vigour. The States then prov'd very useful Confederates; and even the King

A.D. 1588

A. 30 Eliz.

Reasons of  
the *Spaniards*  
ill  
Success.

of

*A.D.* 1588 of *Scots*, by the Queen's happy Address, became very hearty in the Cause: So that *Rapin* seems to be mistaken, when he says her Majesty was destitute of Allies. Let us but secure the Friendship of *Scotland* and *Holland*, and this Island will have little Occasion to dread any Power in *Europe*, provided we remain united at Home. But to return: The *Spanish* Fleet being retir'd, the Queen went in solemn Procession to *St. Paul's*, to return God Thanks; and the Standards and Colours taken from the Enemy were hung up as Trophies in that Cathedral: Several Medals also were struck on the Occasion; on one of which, a Fleet was represented lying before the Enemy, with this Inscription, *Venit, vidit, fugit*, It came, and saw, and fled: Another, with Fireships, and a Fleet in Confusion, with this Motto, *Dux fœmina facta*, a Woman conducted the Design. When some would have perswaded the King of *Scots* to join the *Spaniard* against the Queen, or at least that he would stand neuter, that Prince, 'tis said, rejected the Advice with Disdain; and reply'd, He expected no other Favour of the *Spaniard*, but what *Polyphemus* promis'd *Ulysses*, *That when he had devour'd all the rest, he would reserve him for the last Morsel.*

The Q.  
goes in  
great So-  
lemnity to  
*St. Paul's*.  
Medals  
struck.

The Earl  
of *Leicester*  
dies.

The Rejoicings for these Successes were scarce over, when the Earl of *Leicester*, General of the *English* Forces, was taken ill of a Fever, and died on the fourth of *September* following. Tho' this Nobleman continu'd in the Queen's Favour to the last, he was no sooner dead, but she caus'd his Goods to be seiz'd and sold at a publick Sale for the Payment of the Money he was indebted to her; for, however gentle her Majesty might shew her self in other Respects,

spects, says *Cambden*, she very rarely remitted what was owing to her Treasury.

The same Historian relates, that while the Nation was struggling with the Power of *Spain*, and defending it self from the formidable Attempts of the Catholics, it was disturb'd by those domestic Enemies the Schismatics, who love to fish in troubled Waters. Never was there a Time, says *Cambden*, when the Discipline of the Church was run down with such a sawcy Pertness, and the Authority of her Officers so rudely and basely insulted on the Queen's refusing to listen to any Changes in Religion, or to encourage these new Modellers, who endeavour'd to establish their *Geneva* Platform by loudly railing at the *English* Forms and Rites, rendering the Names of Bishop and Prelate as odious as they could to the common People: To which end they daily publish'd scurrilous Pamphlets against the Church, among which, several went by the Name of *Martin Mar Prelate*: The Authors whereof appear'd rather to have learnt their Language at *Billingsgate*, says *Cambden*, than to speak the Sense of any Christian Community; for which some of them were fin'd in the Star-Chamber, tho' at the Intercession of the Archbishop their Fines were remitted.

While some were railing thus at the Liturgy of the Church, and recommending their *Geneva* Model in its room, others had the Boldness to practise it, and hold their Assemblies in spite of the Laws; nay, they held synodical Conventions, and drew Presbytery into a Scheme: Whereupon *Cartwright*, and some of their Chiefs, were call'd before their Superiours; but with what a strange Petulancy and fullen Haughtiness these congregational

A.D. 1588

A. 30 Eliz.

Practice of the Schismatics to distress the Government at this Time.

Synods held by the Puritans.

A.D. 1588

A. 30 Eliz.

The partial Authors of *Rapin* entirely omit this Part of our History.

They abuse *Cambden*, tho' they are oblig'd to him for most part of their History.

Some Disturbances in *Ireland*.

A.D. 1589

A. 31 Eliz.

The Q. raises Money by way of Loan.

Teachers manag'd themselves, maugre all the Tenderneſs and prudent Forbearance of the Archbishop, I leave, ſays *Cambden*, to the Obſervation of Eccleſiaſtical Writers.

Theſe Diſorders the partial Writers of *Rapin* take no manner of Notice of, tho' they follow *Cambden* cloſe till he comes to give a Character of their Brethren, which evidently demonſtrates they are of that Party, notwithſtanding all their Pretences to Impartiality. And this apparently is the Reaſon they give *Cambden* ſo many hard Words, to whom they are notwithſtanding infinitely oblig'd; for I believe every Man of common Underſtanding muſt obſerve, that they could never have furniſh'd out a tolerable Hiſtory of this Reign but from *Cambden's* Annals; and why they ſhould be at Liberty to reject that Part of it which gives a faithful Account of the Perverſeneſs of the Sectaries, eſpecially when we ſee it ſupported by original Papers and Inſtruments preſerv'd in *Strype's* Annals, and by the concurrent Teſtimony of Eccleſiaſtical Writers, is not eaſy to conceive.

There happen'd ſome Commotions in *Ireland* the latter end of this Year, which were occaſion'd, *Cambden* obſerves, chiefly by the Miſconduct of the Lord Deputy, Sir *William Fitz-Williams*, who made too ſtrict Searches and rigorous Demands of the Wrecks and Goods that were caſt on Shoar, and imprifoning ſome People as Favourers of the *Spaniards*.

The Queen having been at great Expences in raiſing Forces by Sea and Land to reſiſt the *Spaniard*, ſummon'd a Parliament to meet this Winter on the - - - - - Day of *November*, to replenish her Coffers; but upon Conſideration that the Money would be ſome time coming in.



in this Way, it was resolv'd to prorogue the Parliament to the 4th of *February* 1588-9, and to raise Money on the Subject in the mean time by way of Loan; in order to which, circular Letters were dispatch'd to the Lord-Lieutenants of the respective Counties, requiring them to send up Lists of such Gentlemen and others as were in a Condition to lend the Crown Money, and to ascertain the Sums each Man was able to lend, but with Directions not to accept of any Sum under Five and Twenty Pounds; and Privy Seals were afterwards sent down for collecting the said Loan: The like, or greater Sums being requir'd of the Clergy.

*A. D. 1589*  
*A. 31 Eliz.*

Notwithstanding this Loan, when the Parliament met on the 4th of *February*, large Supplies were requir'd by the Court, viz. Two entire Subsidies, and four Fifteenths and Tenths, which occasion'd some warm Speeches; for not only the Loan was objected, which was now collecting, but it was represented that all Danger from the *Spaniards* was over, and by levying such excessive Taxes, her Majesty would hazard losing the Hearts of her Subjects, which had ever been her greatest Support and Security: However, the Supply was carried without any Abatement; and a Subsidy of six Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy to be paid within three Years, was also confirm'd.

Great Taxes granted in Parliament.

There was a Bill pass'd the House of Commons also this Parliament against Pluralists and Non-Residents, but was thrown out by the Lords. The Clergy, it seems, represented to her Majesty, That since the Tythes had been taken from so many Livings, and Improvements made, not a fourth Part of the Livings in *England* were a Maintenance for a Minister,

A Bill against Pluralists and Non-Residence. Thrown out.

A.D. 1589 Minister, and a great many of them not worth  
 above eight or ten Pounds a Year; and consequently it was necessary to hold two or three  
 of them together, or to dispose of them to  
 Persons of very mean Parts and Education,  
 who would be a Disgrace to Religion. How-  
 ever, there pass'd another Act which met with  
 little or no Opposition in either House, viz.  
 31 Eliz. Cap. 6. which prohibits the present-  
 ing any Fellows, Scholars, or other Person  
 to any College, Cathedral Church, School, or  
 Hospital for Rewards, under a certain Penal-  
 ty; and prohibits also the presenting to any  
 Ecclesiastical Living or Preferment for Re-  
 ward, or Promise of Reward, on pain of for-  
 feiting two Years Revenue, and losing the  
 Presentation; and the Clerk so presented is  
 render'd incapable of such Preferment.

An Act a-  
 gainst Si-  
 monaical  
 Presenta-  
 tions.

There pass'd also an Act for the Confirmation of the Queen's general Pardon; after which the Parliament was dissolv'd on the 20th of March 1589. The rest of the Statutes of this Session will be found at the End of the Reign.

N. B. *This Session of Parliament is entirely omitted by Rapin.*

An Insur-  
 rection in  
 Scotland in  
 favour of  
 Spain.

The King of Spain was not so discourag'd by the Destruction of his *Armada*, but he still propos'd to make another Attempt on *England*, by the Way of *Scotland*, having brought over several of the Nobility of that Kingdom to his Interest, and particularly the Earls of *Huntley* and *Errol*, who had laid a Plot to seize on the King's Person, and restore the Catholic Religion; but the King, having timely Notice of their Design, assembled his Forces, and marching against *Huntley*, compell'd him to surrender at Discretion.

In

In the mean time the Queen of *England*, to strike a Terror into her Popish Subjects, and deter them from renewing their Conspiracies against her, caus'd *Philip Howard*, Earl of *Arundel*, to be brought to his Tryal on the 18th of *April*. He had been apprehended about three Years before on attempting to embark for *France*. He was charg'd with corresponding with Cardinal *Allen*, and other Traitors and Enemies to the Government; with saying the Queen was an Heretick, and not fit to govern the Realm; and for ordering Mass to be said for the Success of the *Spanish Armada*: Upon which his Peers found him guilty of High Treason, tho' he does not seem to have been concern'd in any form'd Design against the Government; and it was for this Reason, probably, that the Queen gave him his Life.

*A. D. 1589*  
*A. 31 Eliz.*  
 Earl of  
*Arundel*  
 convicted  
 of High  
 Treason.

The Behaviour of the *Spaniards* in their late Expedition had given the *English* so very mean an Opinion of their Valour and Military Skill, that private Men now offer'd the Queen to return their Visit, and make Reprisals upon them in their own Harbours, if her Majesty would only lend them a Squadron of Ships. The Chief of these Adventurers were Sir *Francis Drake* and Sir *John Norris*, who being join'd by some *Dutch* Ships, made a Fleet of Sixty Sail, small and great; on board of which were fifteen hundred Mariners, and eleven thousand Land-Forces, the latter being commanded by *Norris*. They took also on board *Don Antonio*, the titular King of *Portugal*, who gave them some Expectations, that the *Portuguese* would revolt to him on the Appearance of the Fleet, and that he should also be assisted by *Muley Hamet*, King of *Morocco*. These

An Expe-  
 dition a-  
 gainst  
*Spain*, by  
*Drake*,  
*Norris*, &c.



A.D. 1589

A. 31 Eliz.

These Adventurers setting sail from *England* the Beginning of *April*, made a Descent about a Week after, near the *Groyne* in *Galicia*, and took the lower Town by Storm, where they found great Quantities of Ammunition and Provision, design'd for another Invasion of *England*, and burnt a large Galleon in the Harbour. They afterwards laid Siege to the upper Town, and defeated an Army of *Spaniards* that were marching to its Relief; but the taking of it requiring more Time than they expected, they embark'd their Troops, and proceeded in their principal Design, the Invasion of *Portugal*; and in their Way thither were join'd by other Ships under the Command of the Earl of *Essex*, who was so fond of the Enterprize, that he had fitted out these Vessels without the Queen's Knowledge. Upon the Arrival of the Fleet in *Portugal*, they took the Town of *Perricha*; from whence *Norris*, with the Land-Forces, march'd directly to *Lisbon*, *Drake* promising to bring the Fleet about into the River *Tagus*, and assist in the storming that Capital. The Army, after six Days March, arriving in the Suburbs of *Lisbon*, took up their Quarters there without Opposition, and the *Portuguese* appear'd well affected to *Don Antonio*; but as the City had in it a strong Garrison of *Spaniards*, which had disarm'd all the *Portuguese*, and *Drake* did not come into the River with the Fleet, as was expected, so that the Army had no Cannon to batter the Walls, they were oblig'd to retire, and march to *Cascais*, where they found *Drake*, and expostulating with him for disappointing them, he answer'd, he found the Forts and Block-houses upon the River so well prepar'd to receive him, that he should

have



have endanger'd the Loss of the whole Fleet *A.D. 1589*  
 if he had attempted to sail up to *Lisbon*; and *A. 31 Eliz.*  
 this would also have occasion'd the Loss of  
 the Army. However, the Adventurers, to  
 make themselves some Amends for their Dis-  
 appointment, seiz'd upon sixty Vessels loaden  
 with Ammunition and Provision that belong'd  
 to the Hanse Towns, and were design'd for the  
 Use of the *Spaniards* in their next Expedition  
 against *England*; soon after which, they  
 embark'd the Land-Forces again, and set  
 sail for *England*, touching only at the Town  
 of *Vigo*, which they plunder'd and burnt. In  
 this Expedition the *English* took an hundred  
 and fifty Pieces of Cannon, and a very consi-  
 derable Booty; however, it scarce counter-  
 bail'd the Charges they had been at; and a  
 Sickness having happen'd among the Troops  
 that carried off six thousand Men, some began  
 to reflect, that a Land-War in *Spain* had ever  
 prov'd fatal to the *English*; but the Nation  
 gain'd this Advantage by the Expedition, that  
 the *Spaniards* sustain'd such Losses in their  
 Ammunition and Naval Stores, and were so  
 terrified with the bold Attacks of the *English*  
 by Sea and Land, that they laid aside all  
 Thoughts of making any further Attempts  
 upon *England* for some time.

The Hanse Towns made loud Complaints  
 on the seizing their Ships; but were told, that  
 the carrying Ammunition and Provision to an  
 Enemy, was provided against in every Treaty  
 with them, and therefore they were justly sei-  
 zed as lawful Prize; especially as the Queen  
 had a little before prohibited the carrying such  
 Goods to *Spain* or *Portugal*.

It may be proper now to take a View of the  
 State of *France*, where we find the Duke of  
*Guise* The French K.  
 driven  
 from Pa-  
 ris.

A.D. 1589 *Guise* had so won the Affections of the Catholics, who were a great Majority of that Nation, that the King was very little consider'd, infomuch, that when he came to *Paris*, they chain'd up the Streets, and threaten'd to besiege his Majesty in the *Louvre*: Whereupon, the King found himself oblig'd to retire from the City; but he resent'd this Indignity so sensibly, that he caus'd the Duke of *Guise* to be

The D. of *Guise* murder'd. not long after at *Blois*, while the States were assembled there: Which Action so alienated the Hearts of the Catholics or Leaguers from him, that he was forc'd to throw himself into the Arms of the King of *Navarre* and the Protestants; and being soon after reinforc'd by ten thousand *Swiss* and two thousand *Germans*, he came and laid Siege to *Paris* with an Army of forty thousand Men, and was upon the Point of reducing the City, when *James Clement*, a Monk, stabb'd him in the Belly, of which Wound he died two Days after, having first nominated *Henry*, King of *Navarre*, of the House of *Bourbon*, his Successor.

The French K. assassinated, and succeeded by *Henry* IV.

The Leaguers, however, refus'd to acknowledge the King of *Navarre* for their Sovereign: Several of the Catholic Nobility left his Army, and the *Swiss* and *Germans* threaten'd to return home for want of Pay; which induc'd his Majesty to send an Express immediately to the Queen of *England*, with an Account of his distressed Circumstances; and in the mean time he retir'd into *Normandy* to wait for the Succour he expected from *England*, which arriv'd in a little time, consisting of four thousand Men, commanded by the Lord *Willoughby*; who carried with him also twenty thousand Pounds in Gold for the

The French K. supported by Q. Elizabeth.

French

*French King's Use*; which seasonable Supply *A.D. 1589*  
 enabled him to pay the *Swiss* and *Germans*; *A. 31 Eliz.*  
 and did not only give him the Superiority of  
 his Enemies, but in reality establish'd him  
 on his Throne, notwithstanding the Catholics  
 had proclaim'd the Cardinal of *Bourbon* their  
 King. And now *Henry*, looking upon his Affairs  
 to be pretty well restord, suffer'd the *English*  
 Troops to return home; possibly the Court of  
*France* might have some Jealousy of the Forces  
 of a Princess who still retain'd the Title of  
 Queen of *France*, and had never renounced  
 her Claim to their Country.

The King of *Scots*, at this Time, demand- *K. of Scots*  
 ing the King of *Denmark's* second Daughter, marries the  
 the Princess *Anne*, in Marriage (which, *Princess of*  
*Cambden* relates, the Queen of *England* highly *Denmark.*  
 approv'd) the Marriage was solemniz'd by Proxy  
 in the Month of *August*, and the young Queen  
 embark'd for *Scotland*, but was driven back  
 to the Coast of *Norway* by contrary Winds;  
 and the Ships were so shatter'd, that the Fleet  
 was not in a Condition to proceed in the  
 Voyage; of which King *James* receiving Ad-  
 vice, embark'd for *Norway* in *October*; and,  
 after a very tempestuous Passage, consumma-  
 ted the Marriage there. Nor did he return  
 to *Scotland* again till *May*, the whole Winter,  
 and the Spring following, proving more stor-  
 my than usual. And there were some so wise,  
*Cambden* observes, to ascribe these Storms to  
 the Power of Magick; insomuch, that several  
 Witches and Wizards were taken up in *Scot-*  
*land*, who confess'd ('tis said) their raising these  
 Storms, and that Earl *Bothwell* had consulted  
 them concerning the taking off the King:  
 Which Offences being capital in *Scotland*, the  
 Earl was committed to Prison; from whence,  
 how-

The stor-  
my Wea-  
ther pre-  
vents her  
coming to  
*Scotland*.

Ascrib'd  
to Witch-  
craft.



A.D. 1589 however, he found means to make his Escape,  
 A. 31 Eliz. and created great Disturbances in Scotland afterwards.

The Countess of *Suffex*,  
 Founder of *Sidney*-  
*College*, dies.  
 Sir *Francis Mildmay*,  
 Founder of *Emanuel*,  
 dies.

A.D. 1590

A. 32 Eliz.

The Q's  
 great Oe-  
 conomy.

Among the Persons of Distinction, who died in *England* this Year, was *Frances*, Countess Dowager of *Suffex*, and Sister to Sir *Henry Sidney*, who founded *Sidney Suffex College* in *Cambridge*; and Sir *Francis Mildmay*, Chancellor and Under-Treasurer of the *Exchequer*, who founded *Emanuel College* in the same University, Anno 1584.

As the Queen was still apprehensive that she might be attack'd by *Spain* and the Catholic Powers, we find her the following Year repairing and encreasing her Navy, fortifying her Ports, and levying Troops, and yet at the same time she paid off all the Loans she had made, without laying new Burthens on her People. Though she had, great part of her Reign, all the Powers of *Europe* to contend with, and a Party of Catholics and Puritans ever preaching up Sedition and Rebellion at home, it does not appear that her Majesty ever contracted a Debt that was not paid off in a Year or two, or left the Nation burthen'd with one extraordinary Tax; for which, Posterity must ever celebrate her Memory. But that which enabled her to do these great things, was an unprecedented Frugality and Economy. She acquainted herself exactly with the State of her Revenues, and restrain'd the Frauds of her Officers. And it appears this very Year, that notwithstanding the utmost Opposition of some great Courtiers, she discover'd the Value of the Customs, and from fourteen thousand Pounds rais'd them to fifty thousand Pounds *per Annum*; and still the Farmer, Sir *Thomas Smith*, did not think fit to throw them up;

The Farm  
 of the Cu-  
 stoms  
 rais'd from  
 14,000 l.  
 to 50,000 l.  
*per Ann.*



up; so great a Pennyworth that Officer had enjoy'd for many Years. *A.D. 1590*

Had not this Princess been so extraordinary a Manager, it had been impossible for her to have assisted the *French* and *Dutch* with Forces and Money, and provided for the Defence of her own Kingdom, as she did at this Time. Notwithstanding she had already furnish'd the *French* King with two hundred thousand Crowns, she lent him this Year sixty thousand more, which enabled him to give his Enemies the Leaguers, Battle, and obtain a compleat Victory over them at *Ivry*; after which, that Monarch invested the City of *Paris*, and reduc'd the Inhabitants to a starving Condition; but the Duke of *Parma* marching at the Head of a numerous Army from the *Netherlands* to the Relief of the *Parisians*, oblig'd *Henry* to raise the Blockade. However, the *Dutch*, during this Absence of the *Spanish* General, had an Opportunity of extending their Frontiers, and putting them in a Posture to resist the Attacks of the *Spaniards* at their Return.

*A. 32 Eliz.*

The *French* King's Victory at *Ivry*. *Paris* block'd up. Reliev'd by the D. of *Parma*. The *Dutch* extend their Frontiers.

In the mean time, the King of *Scots* being return'd home with his Consort the King of *Denmark's* Daughter, the Queen sent the Earl of *Worcester* to congratulate his Majesty on the Occasion, and carry him the Ensigns of the Order of the Garter, of which he was lately elected Knight, as the *French* King, *Henry* IV, also was about the same time.

The Kings of *France* and *Scotland*, Knights of the Garter.

The Puritans still continu'd to attack the Constitution and Government of the Church, and even to dispute the Queen's Supremacy. Nothing less would satisfy them than the abolishing Episcopacy, and applying the Revenues of the Bishops and dignified Clergy to other Uses; in which they were encourag'd by some

The Puritans threaten to introduce the *Geneva* Discipline by Force.

A.D. 1590 covetous Courtiers, who hop'd to divide the Spoil among them. They propos'd also to govern the Church by their Synods and Presbyteries, and to make the Queen, and every one else, subject to them; declaring, that if the Magistrate would not erect their Discipline, they would do it themselves by Force. Of which the Queen being appriz'd, order'd several of their Preachers, among whom were *Cartwright*, to be summon'd before the Star-Chamber and prosecuted; and *Udal*, one of the forwardest of them, having written a Book, manifestly inciting the People to Sedition and Rebellion, entitled, *The Demonstration of Discipline which Christ hath prescrib'd in his Word for the Government of the Church in all Times and Places unto the World's End*, was order'd to be prosecuted in the Courts of Common Law; and was accordingly indicted, try'd and convicted of Felony at the Assizes, held at *Croydon* the 23d of *July* this Year, upon the Statute of 23 *Eliz. cap. 1.*

For which *Udal* is try'd and convicted of Felony.

The Prisoner, it seems, urg'd in his Defence, that the Book he was charg'd with writing, contain'd no offensive Passages against the Queen, but was pointed only at the Bishops; and therefore could not be a Breach of the Statute of the 23d of *Elizabeth*. To which the Judges answer'd, That those who speak against her Majesty's Government, in Causes Ecclesiastical; against her Laws, Proceedings, or Ecclesiastical Officers that ruled under her; did in reality defame the Queen. However, he was offer'd his Life, if he would make his Submission; and when he refus'd this, the Archbishop obtain'd a Reprieve for him from time to time; and he died at length a natural Death.

He is repriev'd, and dies a natural Death.

This

This Year died that eminent Statesman, Sir *Francis Walsingham*, Secretary of State, and Chancellor of the Dutchy of *Lancaster*: He was also Knight of the Most Noble Order of the Garter: But, thro' the extreme Frugality of his Sovereign, and his Zeal for her Service, spent so much of his own Fortune in the several Embassies and Negotiations he was employed in, that he left scarce enough behind him to pay his Debts, and was buried privately therefore in the Night-time, at *St. Paul's*, with very little Funeral Solemnity.

*A.D. 1590*  

---

*A. 32 Eliz.*  

---

*Sir Francis Walsingham dies.*

The *Spaniards* and Leaguers having possess'd themselves of great part of the Maritime Provinces of *Bretagne* and *Normandy*, and the Duke of *Parma* threatening to penetrate into *France* a second Time; the Queen of *England*, to support her Ally the *French King*, and to remove the Enemy to a greater Distance from the Coasts of *England*, re-inforc'd *Henry* with a Body of three thousand *English* to serve in *Bretagne* and *Normandy*, and hastned them away with all imaginable Expedition, having receiv'd Advice that the *Spaniards* were admitted into the capital City of *Paris*, and that the Pope and the Leaguers intended to make the King of *Spain* a Complement of the Crown of *France*.

*A.D. 1591*  

---

*A. 33 Eliz.*  

---

*The Q. sends 3000 Men to Bretagne, &c. to the Assistance of the French K.*

Part of these Troops, under the Command of Sir *Roger Williams*, landed at *Diep* in *Normandy*; and the rest in *Bretagne*, who were commanded by Sir *John Norris*. But the *French King*, who was intent upon driving his Enemies from the Centre of his Dominions, in the first place sent for Sir *Roger Williams* from *Diep*, and employ'd him in the Siege of *Noyon*; and Sir *Roger* attended him afterwards as far as *Paris*, losing great Part of his Men by

*The French K. employs them in other Service.*



A.D. 1591 by long Marches, and in desperate Attacks. And tho' the Queen was extremely displeas'd when she found her Troops destroy'd in such Services; yet so solicitous was she to see the *Spaniards* and the Leaguers driven from the Coast of *France*, that she condescended to send 4000 Men more over four thousand Men more, under the Command of the young Earl of *Essex*, to *Henry's* Assistance, on his promising to employ them in the Siege of *Rouen*; but it appear'd, when the *English* Troops arriv'd in *Normandy*, that there were no Preparations made for that Siege; whereupon, the Earl leaving his Forces in their Quarters, return'd to *England*, letting the *French* King know, he would return again whenever the Siege of *Rouen* should be undertaken. The Queen, however, resenting this second Disappointment, and threatning to withdraw all her Troops, if the Siege of *Rouen* was not undertaken; Marshal *Biron* was order'd to invest that City; and the King, not long after, came to the Siege in Person; but the Duke of *Parma*, entring *France* again at the Head of an Army of *Spaniards*, compell'd *Henry* to rise from before *Rouen*.

4000 Men  
more em-  
bark for  
*Normandy*,  
command-  
ed by the  
Earl of  
*Essex*.

*Rouen* be-  
sieg'd.  
The Siege  
rais'd by  
the Duke  
of *Parma*.

A Squa-  
dron of  
*English*  
wait for  
the *Spanish*  
Plate Fleet  
at the  
*Azores*.

In the mean time, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, second Son of the late Duke of *Norfolk*, was sent to the Islands of *Azores*, to wait the Return of the *Spanish* Plate Fleet from *America*; but the *Spaniards* suspecting their Design, sent fifty Men of War to the *Azores* for the Protection of the Galleons, who coming suddenly on the *English* Squadron, had very near surpriz'd them while they were on Shoar; but, at length the Lord *Howard*, with four of his Men of War, got out to Sea, and avoided them, and only Sir *Edward Greenville*, in the *Revenge*, was intercepted and taken, after he

had



had lost most of his Men, and spent his Ammunition in endeavouring to break thro' the *Spanish* Fleet. Sir *Edward* receiv'd two Wounds in the Engagement, of which he died soon after, and his Ship was so shatter'd, that it sunk in the Voyage with two hundred *Spaniards* on board. The Lord *Howard* did all that lay in his Power to have rescued this brave Knight out of the Enemy's Hands; but his Officers would not consent to his venturing too far into the *Spanish* Fleet, which were ten to one; however, they made themselves Amends, by taking several *Spanish* Ships, and, amongst them, a very rich Prize. And, as we were now openly engag'd in a War with *Spain* and *Portugal*, the *English* began to think of putting in for a Share in the rich *East India* Trade: Accordingly, some enterprizing Merchants fitted out too stout Ships, under the Command of Captain *George Rimar*, and Captain *James Lancaster*, who doubled the Cape of *Good Hope*; and tho' *Rimar* and his Ship were soon after cast away, and *Lancaster* miserably shatter'd in a Tempest of Thunder and Lightning, the latter proceeded in the Voyage, and arriv'd at the Island of *Sumatra*; from whence the Ship return'd very richly laden to *England*, but with only seven Hands on Board, being driven to Sea by a sudden Storm, while the rest of the Crew were on Shoar, on a little Island near *Hispaniola*. Sir *Thomas Cavendish* also, who sail'd round the Globe, Anno 1578, made another Attempt this Year to penetrate into the *South Sea*, thro' the Streights of *Magellan*; but was oblig'd, before he got thro' the Streights, to return to the Coast of *Brazil*, by bad Weather and the Perverseness of his Men, and died upon that Coast.

A.D. 1591

A. 33 Eliz.

Two Ships  
sent to  
trade to  
the *E. Indies*.

Sir *T. Cavendish*  
dies in a  
second  
Voyage to  
the *South Sea*.

The

A. D. 1591

A. 33 Eliz.

~~~~~  
 Priests and
 Jesuits
 come over
 to Eng-
 land.

A Procla-
 mation a-
 gainst har-
 bouring
 them.

Dangerous
 Doctrines
 and Prac-
 tices of the
 Puritans.

Hacket, an
 Enthusiast,
 condemn'd
 for Treas-
 on and
 Blasphemy.

The King of *Spain*, on the other hand, endeavour'd to disturb the Queen of *England's* Government, by sending over Jesuits and Popish Priests, bred in the *English* Seminaries abroad, to debauch her Subjects from their Allegiance; but, in order to defeat his Design, a Proclamation was publish'd, that no Persons should harbour any Stranger, unless he had first made Enquiry, whether he frequented the Service of the Church, by what means he gain'd his Livelihood, and where he had resided the preceding Year.

Several of the Puritans also began to maintain such blasphemous and dangerous Doctrines, that it was found absolutely necessary to put the Laws in execution against them. Among these, one of the most abandon'd and desperate Wretches was *William Hacket*, a Man of mean Extraction, and very little Learning; who, having spent an Estate he had by his Wife, on a sudden pretended to be wonderfully reform'd, hearing Sermons, getting Scriptures by heart, and counterfeiting Revelations from God, and extraordinary Calls: By which means he was highly extoll'd by certain zealous Ministers of the *Geneva* Discipline, especially by two, viz. *Coppinger* and *Arthington*, who gave out he was sent from Heaven, and a greater Prophet than *Moses* or *John Baptist*; and, finally, that he was CHRIST himself, come with a Fan in his Hand to judge the World. This they proclaim'd in *Cheapside*, making Report, that *Hacket* participated of CHRIST's glorified Body, by his special Spirit, and was now come to propagate the Gospel over *Europe*, and to settle a true Discipline in the Church of *England*; and that they themselves were two Prophets, the one of

Mercy,

Mercy, and the other of Judgment; with many such incredible Blasphemies: Whereupon *Hacket* was apprehended and arraign'd, and at last hang'd, drawn and quarter'd, continuing, at his Death, in his blasphemous Assertions, to the great Horror and Amazement of the Spectators. *Coppinger*, a while after, starv'd himself to death in Prison. *Arthington* repented, and made his Recantation.

A.D. 1591

A. 33 Eliz.

At the Tryal of *Hacket*, which was on the 26th of July, at the *Old Baily*, *Popham*, the Attorney-General, observ'd, That those Plots and Conspiracies had their Rise and Encouragement from the Sectaries: That *Coppinger*, in a Letter to *Udal*, already mention'd, bid him, and the rest in Prison, not to be dispirited, for that he and some others had taken a Course for their speedy Deliverance; and Letters, menacing the Government, were dispers'd in the Streets five or six Days before *Hacket* was proclaim'd the Messias. *Egerton*, the Solicitor, added, that no Treason was more dangerous than that which was wrapp'd up in Mystery, and went under Disguise: And that those who cover'd their Rebellion with Pretences of Zeal for Religion, generally did most Mischief; instancing in the Anabaptists of *Munster*, and the Ravages committed by the Boors in *Germany*.

Indeed, *Cartwright*, *Travers*, and other Fathers of the Puritans, declar'd their Abhorrence of *Hacket's* Blasphemies; but, it is to be fear'd, they gave too great Encouragement to *Hacket* and his Accomplices at first, to revile the Establishment, and separate from the Church; for, it appears there was once an Intimacy between these Enthusiasts and the Puritan Preachers; and that the original Design

A.D. 1591 of *Hacket* and his Confederates, was to deliver those Fathers out of Prison. And, in some Books publish'd by the Puritans a little before, they declare, that 'tis time to set up the Discipline themselves, without waiting any longer for Parliaments: That there were greater Numbers in this Interest than could be suppress'd: That there were an hundred thousand of this Sentiment in *England*, who, if they address'd her Majesty for the Discipline, she could not refuse them without Danger: That the Bishops should be treated here as they were in *Scotland*, and sent packing with the Monks and Friars; with a great deal more to this Purpose.

O-Rork condemn'd for High Treason, and executed. *O-Rork*, an *Irish* Nobleman, in the *Spanish* Interest, having been apprehended in *Scotland*, and deliver'd up to Queen *Elizabeth* by King *James*, was brought to his Tryal about this Time, condemn'd and executed for High-Treason; but *Hugh O-Donnel*, another *Irish* Rebel, escap'd out of Prison, and rais'd new Disturbances in that Kingdom: However, as that Nation in general remain'd in a tolerable settled State, the Queen was pleas'd to erect a College at *Dublin* for the Advancement of Learning, and dedicated it to the Holy and Undivided Trinity, endowing it with Revenues and such Privileges, as are usually conferr'd on Universities, in order to propagate Religion and good Manners in that Island, and to ease the Inhabitants of the Expence of sending their Children abroad for Education.

A.D. 1592 The Year following, Sir *Walter Raleigh* form'd a Design of surprizing *Panama*, which lies on the West Side of the *Isthmus* of *Darien* on the *South Sea*, where great Part of the Treasure of *America*, intended to be brought to

to *Europe*, is usually repositèd; and, in case he should fail in this Attempt, to surprize the *Spanish* Plate Fleet in their Return to *Europe*, the Queen was content to lend him a strong Squadron of Men of War for these Purposes; but insisted, that he and his Fellow-Adventurers should be at the Charge of fitting them out, and maintaining them in the Expedition; (nor was it unusual with her Majesty thus to make War on the *Spaniard* without putting her self to any Expence.) This Project appear'd so extremely inviting, that we find the City of *London*, and several Persons of Distinction, engag'd with Sir *Walter Releigh* in it; but, to their great Disappointment, this Fleet was detain'd in Harbour three Months by contrary Winds, and thereby lost the Opportunity of attacking *Panama*; and when they came upon the Coast of *Spain*, they understood that their Design upon the Galleons was discover'd, and Orders had been sent them not to come to *Europe* this Year: However, Sir *Walter* sail'd to the *Azores*, where he had the good Fortune to meet with a great *Portuguese* Cazzack, said to have seven Decks, to be above an hundred and sixty Foot in length, and to have six hundred Men on board; but as there scarce ever was a Ship with seven Decks, this Description cannot be exactly right; however, it may be gather'd from the Length of the Vessel, and the Men on board, that she was about the Size of one of our second Rate Men of War at this Day; and, as she is said to belong to the *Portuguese*, came either from the *East Indies* or *Brazil*. This Ship made so stout a Defence, that it was as much as four or five Men of War could do to take her; but they boarded her at length, and found a prodigious

A.D. 1592

A. 34 Eliz.

A Fleet of Men of War fitted out against the *Spaniard* by private Men.

A rich Prize taken.

A.D. 1592 *Treasure*, the Value of an hundred and fifty thousand Pounds and upwards, besides what the Seamen plunder'd, and was never brought to account. When she was brought to *England*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and the rest of the Adventurers, procur'd a Commission to examine the Officers and Sailors concerning their Plunder, that it might be divided equally among those that had been at the Charge of the Expedition; but they could make no Discoveries; and we find Sir *Walter Raleigh* complaining, that tho' he had form'd the Scheme, conducted the Action, and been at the greatest Expence in it, the Share allotted him was not proportionable to what had been assign'd to others, and would not reimburse his Expences; whereas the City of *London*, who did nothing more than take up six thousand Pounds to be employ'd in the Expedition, had twelve thousand Pounds assign'd them out of the Prize, and the Earl of *Cumberland* had thirty-six thousand allotted him, tho' he contributed but nineteen thousand Pounds.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* complains he had not his Share of the Prize.

4000 *English* sent to *Bretagne*. The Queen being extremely jealous of the *Spaniards* fixing themselves in *Bretagne*, sent the *French King* a fresh Reinforcement of four thousand Men, under the Command of Sir *John Norris*, to be employ'd in that Province, to whom *Henry*, by Treaty, was to have joined a thousand *French Horse*, and five thousand Foot; but this he entirely neglected, and oblig'd the *English* to serve in *Normandy*; at which her Majesty was so incens'd, that she was about to have recall'd all her Forces out of *France*; however, she alter'd her Mind, on receiving Advice, that the Duke of *Parma* was preparing for a third Expedition into *France*, and would probably make himself Master

But employ'd elsewhere.

Master of those Provinces that lay over-against *England*; but, the Duke dying just as he was about to begin his March, that Expedition was laid aside.

A. D. 1592

A. 34 Eliz.

Duke of
Parma
dies.

Bothwell
attempts
to seize K.
James in
his Palace.

In *Scotland*, Earl *Bothwell* made an Attempt about this Time to have seiz'd King *James* in his Palace at *Edinburgh*; and was very narrowly prevented by the Citizens, who ran to Arms upon the Alarm, and found that the Rebels were forcing the Queen's Apartment. This, with a Conspiracy among the Jesuits and Popish Nobility, in the Interest of *Spain*, to depose the King, induc'd him to make great Concessions to the Presbyterian Party.

In *England*, the Court was taken up with the Tryal of Sir *John Perrot*, late Deputy of *Ireland*, a Gentleman, who had done good Service; but being check'd by the Queen, and reprimanded for using the *Irish* with too great Severity, was guilty of some rash Expressions, reflecting on her Majesty as illegitimate, and not fit for Government; of which his Enemies taking Advantage, procur'd him to be apprehended, try'd and condemn'd for High-Treason; notwithstanding, he made a very good Defence: He afterwards died in Prison, when the Queen had determin'd to pardon him, as 'tis said; tho' few Princes forgive such gross Reflections.

Sir *John*
Perrot,
Deputy of
Ireland,
condemn'd
for Words
spoken a-
gainst the
Queen.

He dies in
Prison.

The latter end of the Summer, the Queen visited the University of *Oxford* again, where she was splendidly entertain'd, heard the Disputations in the Schools in the Day-time, and was diverted with Plays and Musick every Evening. She took her Leave of them in a *Latin* Oration, where, having express'd her Satisfaction for the Affection they had shewn to her Person, and her Entertainment; and told

The Q.
visits Ox-
ford.

A.D. 1592 told them, That she wish'd for nothing more
 than to see that University, one of the Lights
 of the Kingdom, flourish and advance every
 Day in good Literature: She advis'd them,
 in the first place, to be careful to please God;
 not with the novel and fantastical Devotion
 practis'd by some, but, according to the Laws
 of God and the Land: That they would not
 dispute the Fitness and Authority of the Laws,
 but sincerely obey those that were in force, and
 submit to their Superiors.

A great
 Drought.

The
Thames
 dry.

The Oc-
 casion of
 it.

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

A Parlia-
 ment as-
 sembled.

Cambden relates, that this and the prece-
 ding Summer having been exceeding dry, the
 Fields were burnt up, and the Springs fail'd,
 whereby many Cattle perish'd; and, on the
 5th of *September* the *Thames* was so low, that
 one might ride over at *London Bridge*; for
 which he seems to be at a Loss to account;
 tho' he relates there had blown a strong wester-
 ly Wind for two Days together; but we,
 who saw the *Thames* in a manner perfectly
 dry on the 14th of *September*, in the Year 1716,
 from the Bridge to *Whitehall*, except a small
 Channel, which thousands of People pass'd
 over on Foot, cannot so much admire at the
 Shallowness of the *Thames* in the Reign of
 Queen *Elizabeth*; and there is no doubt but
 both happen'd from the same Cause, viz. the
 Lowness of the Springs (which are usually so
 the latter end of the Year) and a strong wester-
 ly Wind, that forc'd back the Tide, and drove
 forwards the ebbing Water, insomuch, that
 the *Thames* remain'd dry in the Year 1716
 (except the little Channel above-mention'd) for
 near twelve Hours.

A new Parliament assembling on the 19th
 of *February* 1592-3, the Lord-Keeper, Sir
Jahn Puckering, open'd it with a Speech;
 wherein

wherein he observes, That the King of *Spain* was preparing for another Invasion, in which he would have much greater Advantages than he had in the Year 1588, having possess'd himself of the Ports of *Bretagne* over-against *England*. That he had also, by his Bribes, corrupted the Nobility of *Scotland*, who were enter'd into an Association to assist the *Spaniard* in invading *England* from thence, and depose King *James*; so that the Nation was in Danger of being attack'd both on the North and South at once. That it was with difficulty her Majesty had brought King *James* to give Credit to this Conspiracy, tho' she sent a Nobleman to that Court on purpose; but that since, the King of *Scots* had engag'd to oppose the *Spaniard* with all his Power. Then he shews the great Charges her Majesty had been at in making Preparations for the Defence of the Kingdom, and proposes the giving suitable Supplies; after which, he directed the Commons to chuse a Speaker, who retiring to their House, elected the celebrated Sir *Edward Cook*, then her Majesty's Solicitor-General; who being approv'd, and desiring, as usual, that the Commons might have Liberty of Speech, Freedom from Arrests, and Access to her Royal Person; the Lord-Keeper answer'd, by her Majesty's Direction, That she granted them Liberty of Speech, and their other Petitions; but they must not imagine that Liberty extended so far, as to give every Man Leave to say whatever came in his Brain; their Privilege was *Ay* or *No*: And therefore, if any idle Heads should meddle with reforming the Church, and transforming the Commonwealth, and exhibited Bills for that Purpose, they should

not

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Another Invasion expected, and Supplies demanded accordingly. The *Scots* corrupted.

Sir *Edw. Cook*, Speaker of the Commons.

The Q.'s Opinion of the Liberty of Speech.

A. D. 1593 not receive them until they were consider'd by those that were better Judges.

A. 35 Eliz.

She commits several Members for proposing to settle the Succession.

Notwithstanding this Prohibition of the Queen's, it appears, that on the 24th of *February*, Mr. *Peter Wentworth*, and Sir *Henry Bromley*, deliver'd a Petition to the Lord-Keeper, desiring the Lords of the Upper House to be Suppliants with them of the Lower House unto her Majesty, for entailing the Succession of the Crown, a Bill being already drawn up for that Purpose; at which her Majesty was so displeas'd, that she commanded them to forbear going to the Parliament; and the next Day, being call'd before the Council, Mr. *Wentworth* was sent Prisoner to the Tower; Sir *Henry Bromley*, and one *Richard Stevens*, to whom *Bromley* had imparted the Matter, were sent to the *Fleet*; as was also Mr. *Welch*, the other Knight of the Shire for *Worcestershire*.

An Abstract of Speeches in this Parliament.

The Q.'s great Expences.

In the Speeches made this Session, there are some that very well deserve our Notice, as they let us into the History of those Times; particularly that of Sir *John Fortescue*'s, on the 26th of *February*; wherein he shews, that the Queen had not only been at the Expence of defending her own Kingdoms, but those of *France* and *Scotland*, with the States of *Holland*; and that the Low-Countries only had stood her Majesty in an hundred an fifty thousand Pounds *per Annum*. That, notwithstanding she found the Nation four Millions in Debt at her Accession, she had paid that Debt off. That the Navy, which she found decayed, was now repair'd and encreas'd; and, instead of Iron Artillery, was furnish'd with Brass Guns; so that the Value of one of her Ships was equal to the Wealth of a petty King.

Her Oeconomy.

Tha

That her own Expences had been small; she had consum'd little or nothing in her Pleasures. That the Charges of no King's House was ever less; and tho' her Apparel was Royal, and becoming her Dignity, it was not sumptuous or excessive. He shew'd also, that the Subsidies in this Reign had not produc'd half what they did in the Reign of *Henry VIII.* (which, I presume, proceeded from the assessing Estates so very low) and therefore insinuated, that the Supply ought to be greater than those hitherto given.

A. D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Subsidies
produce
little.

Mr. *Francis Bacon*, (afterwards Lord *Verulam*) in a Speech the same Day, propos'd the purging the Statute Book, and lessening the Volumes of Law; being so many in number, that neither the People could practise them, nor the Lawyer understand them; applauding the *Romans*, *Athenians*, and other States, who, at certain times, reform'd the Laws, and reduced them within compass. But, what would this great Man have said, if he had seen the Number and Bulk of our Statutes and Law-Books at this Day. I question, if the Statutes made in about forty Years last past do not contain three times as many Sheets as all the Statutes made from *Magna Charta*, to the Year 1690. The Common-Law-Books are also vastly encreas'd; insomuch, that all we expect of a Lawyer now, is to be Master of one or two Branches of the Business; while the People seem to be as much in the dark, as if there were no Laws in being. It may be truly affirm'd, That there is scarce a Man in *England*, who either thro' Inadvertency, or a Contempt of the Law, does not daily lay himself open to be prosecuted for offending against some Law or other; so intolerably are they multiplied,

Sir *Francis Bacon*
moves for
the reducing the
Laws
within
compass.

A.D. 1593 plied, and so little regarded; which, however, affords a fine Field for Attornies and Pettifoggers, who abound in proportion to the Destruction of the People.

A. 35 Eliz.

A Motion to restrain the Bishops from proceeding against the Puritans.

Mr. *Morrice*, on the 27th of *February*, propos'd the bringing in a Bill to restrain the Bishops from requiring Subscriptions of the Puritan Clergy, and committing them on refusal to answer. To which it was said, that this was no more than was done by the Governors of other Churches, and even by that of *Geneva*, and the Sectaries themselves. And her Majesty, being acquainted that such a Bill had been mention'd, sent for the Speaker, and commanded him, that no Bill touching the Succession or Reformation in Causes Ecclesiastical should be exhibited; requiring him, upon his Allegiance, if any such Bill was exhibited, not to read it.

The Q. forbids the proceeding on this Motion.

The Lords propose a Conference with the Commons concerning a Supply.

The Commons receiv'd a Message from the Lords on the first of *March*, to put them in mind of making a Provision of Treasure against the great and imminent Dangers the Kingdom was liable to from its Enemies, desiring a Conference with a Committee of the Commons on that Subject; and a Committee being appointed accordingly, and return'd from the Conference, Sir *Robert Cecil*, one of said Committee, reported, That the Lord Treasurer, in the Name of the Lords Committees, had represented the Necessity of granting a large Supply for the Defence of the Realm. That the Double Subsidy, with the Fifteenths and Tenth granted the last Parliament, amounted to but two hundred and eighty thousand Pounds: And that her Majesty had expended a Million and thirty thousand Pounds since the granting the said Subsidy, &c. and there-

there-

therefore their Lordships thought it proper to grant more than two Subsidies and four Fifteenths (which the Commons had already propos'd the raising in their House:) And that their Lordships said, they would pass no Act of Supply for less than three entire Subsidies, to be paid within three Years at two Payments yearly, viz. at *Easter* and *Michaelmas* each Year. That the Lord-Treasurer also observ'd, that Estates were so much under-rated in the Assessments, that they yielded little. That Men of good Estates in the Country were not tax'd at above fourscore Pounds *per Annum*; and, in the rich City of *London*, no Man was rated to be worth more than two hundred Pounds in Goods, and not more than four or five of these.

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Advise
them to
enlarge
their
Grant.

Estates ra-
ted ex-
tremely
low.

Mr. *Francis Bacon*, who was also one of the said Committee (after this Report was made) said, he was ready to consent to the Subsidy propos'd, but could not approve of joining with the Upper House in granting it; for it had always been the Custom and Privilege of that House to offer Subsidies; and there was good Reason for it, since the Burthen lay upon them as the greatest Number; and should they join with the Lords, the Thanks would be theirs, as the Movers of it: He therefore mov'd, that they should proceed as they had done heretofore by themselves, and not join with their Lordships: Whereupon the same Committee was order'd to consider of an Answer to be return'd to the Lords.

The Com-
mons are
cautious
of confer-
ring with
the Lords
concerning
the Subsi-
dy.

Sir *George Carey*, in his Speech for the Subsidy, said, That the *Spaniards* had already sent seven thousand Pistoles to *Scotland*, to corrupt their Nobility, and twenty thousand Crowns for raising three thousand Men there,

Dangers
from *Scot-*
land.

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

which the *Scotish* Lords had promis'd ; and these were to be join'd by thirty thousand *Spaniards*, and invade *England* on that Side. That *Sir Francis Drake* was to be sent to Sea with a great Fleet to oppose their Enterprize, and therefore the Supply ought to be proportion'd to the infinite Expence her Majesty must necessarily be at, and the imminent Danger the Nation was in.

And from
Bretagne.

Sir Walter Raleigh also press'd the giving large Subsidies to defeat the *Spaniards* Designs upon *Scotland*, and to raise an Army to beat them out of *Bretagne*.

Carried on
a Division
to have no
Confe-
rence with
the Lords
on the
Supply.

And now the Lords Message, desiring a Conference with the Commons concerning the Supply being again debated ; It was resolv'd, upon a Division of the House, That no such Conference should be had with the Lords. The Number for a Conference being one hundred and twenty-eight, and against it two hundred and seventeen ; and the former Committee was order'd to acquaint the Lords, That this House could not, in cases of Taxes, join in a Conference with their Lordships without Prejudice to the Liberties and Privileges of the House ; but their Lordships desiring afterwards to see what Precedents the Commons went upon in this Case, one in the ninth Year of *Henry IV.* was produc'd ; where the Commons having granted a Subsidy which the Lords thought too little, and propos'd the granting a larger, the Commons thought they could not do it without a Prejudice to their Privileges : But *Mr. Beal*, who produc'd the Precedent, and the rest of the Commons, upon further Consideration, agreed, That this Precedent was not parallel to the present Case ; whereupon it was resolv'd, to confer with the Lords concerning

Resolv'd,
however,
to hear
what the
Lords had
to offer.

cerning the Subsidy, or at least to attend them, and to hear what they had to offer, but not to be directed by them.

In the further Debates on the Subsidy, those who were against three Subsidies urg'd the Poverty of the Country, occasion'd by our importing and consuming more foreign Goods than we exported; and consequently we were oblig'd to pay the Balance in Treasure, which drain'd us of our Money.

Sir *Walter Raleigh*, for the Subsidy, said, The Reason our foreign Trade was so bad, was, that the Merchants durst not venture to Sea for fear of the Enemy, who had fix'd himself in our Neighbourhood; and that Trade would decay more and more every Day, if they did not grant the Queen a Supply sufficient to Man out a Fleet to remove the Enemy to a greater Distance. That the longer they deferr'd their Aid, the less able they should be to yield it; and, in the end, a greater Aid would be requir'd of them. That an hundred thousand Pounds the last Year would have done what three hundred thousand would not do this; and three would do this Year, what six would not do hereafter.

Mr. *Heal* insisted, that the Country was richer than ever it had been, from the Land's End in *Cornwall* to *London*; and others said, that the Times were more dangerous now than in the Year Eighty-eight. At length it was agreed to grant three Subsidies, and six Fifteenths and Tenths, to be paid in four Years; with which the former Committee was appointed to acquaint the Lords: From whence it appears, that the Commons follow'd the Lords Advice, in granting a Subsidy; though they

A. D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Poverty of the Country urg'd against three Subsidies.

Sir *W. Raleigh's* Argument, that if they did not give three Subsidies now, they would be oblig'd to give more.

The Country said to be richer than ever.

The Commons follow the Lords Advice, tho' they refuse a Conference.

A.D. 1593 they would not enter into a Conference with them on that Subject.

A. 35 Eliz.

Passages in
the Q's
Speech.

On the 10th of *April*, the Queen gave the Royal Assent to the Subsidy-Bill, &c. and, in her Speech on this Occasion, had these remarkable Expressions. “ The Kingdom hath had
“ many wise and victorious Princes ; but in
“ Love, Care, Sincerity, and Justice, I will
“ compare with any Prince that ever you had :
“ I fear not all the Threatnings of the King
“ of *Spain* : His great Preparations and might-
“ ty Forces do not move me : Tho’ he came
“ with a greater Power than his Invincible
“ Navy, I doubt not but God assisting me,
“ whom I always trust, I shall be able to de-
“ feat and overthrow him.

“ I heard, when he attempted his last In-
“ vasion, some forsook their Towns, and fled
“ up higher into the Country, and left all
“ naked and expos’d to his Entrance : But I
“ swear unto you, by God, if I knew those
“ Persons, or shall know any do so for the
“ future, I will make them know and feel
“ what it is to be so fearful in so urgent a
“ Cause.

“ The Subsidy you give me, I accept
“ thankfully, if you give me your good Will
“ with it ; but if the Necessity of the Time
“ and your Preservations did not require it,
“ I would refuse it.”

After which, the Parliament was dissolv’d.

Acts
pass’d.

The most material Acts that pass’d this Session in relation to Religion or the State, were,

Persons
absenting
from
Church,
to be im-
prison’d,
&c.

35 Eliz. Cap. 1. *For the Punishment of Per-
sons obstinately refusing to come to Church, and
persuading others to impugn the Queen’s Autho-
rity in Causes Ecclesiastical.*

By

By this Statute it is Enacted, That if any Persons above sixteen Years of Age shall be convicted to have absented themselves above a Month from Church, without any lawful Cause ; to have impugn'd the Queen's Authority in Causes Ecclesiastical, or frequented Conventicles, or perswaded others so to do under Pretence of Exercise of Religion ; they shall be committed to Prison, and there remain, until they shall conform themselves, and make such open Submission as is prescrib'd by this Act : And if within three Months after such Conviction they refuse to conform and submit themselves, being thereunto requir'd by a Justice of Peace, they shall, in open Assize or Sessions, abjure the Realm : And if such Abjuration happen to be before Justices of Peace in Sessions, they shall make Certificate thereof at the next Assize, or Goal-Delivery.

If such an Offender refuse to abjure, or, going away accordingly, doth return without the Queen's Licence, he shall be adjudg'd a Felon, and shall not enjoy the Benefit of Clergy. But if, before he be requir'd to abjure, he makes his Submission, the Penalties aforesaid shall not be inflicted upon him.

35 Eliz. Cap. 2. *Inflicts Penalties on Popish Recusants Convict removing above five Miles from their Houses.*

By this Statute it is Enacted, That Popish Recusants, above sixteen Years of Age, shall, within forty Days after Conviction, repair to their usual Dwelling, and not remove above five Miles from thence, in pain of forfeiting all their Goods, with their Lands and Annuities during Life : And, if they have no certain Abode, then they are to repair to the Place where they were born, or where their Father

Penalty of a Popish Recusant, departing five Miles from his Habitation.

and

A.D. 1593 and Mother dwells ; and, within twenty Days after their Arrival there, to give their Names in Writing to the Minister, Constables and Headboroughs ; which Minister is to enter them in a Book to be kept for that Purpose ; and he, together with the said Constables and Headboroughs, is to certify the same to the next Quarter Sessions, where the Justices of Peace shall cause them to be enroll'd.

A. 35 Eliz.

Popish Recufants, not worth twenty Marks *per Annum*, or forty Pounds in Goods, who remove five Miles from their respective Dwellings, to abjure the Realm.

Grant of
Abby-
Lands con-
firm'd.

35 Eliz. Cap. 3. *Confirms all Grants of Abby-Lands, &c. made by Henry VIII.*

New
Buildings
in London
prohibi-
ted.

35 Eliz. Cap. 6. *Prohibits the erecting any Buildings upon new Foundations within three Miles of London and Westminster.* But this is not now in force.

The Cler-
gy's Sub-
sidy con-
firm'd.

Cap. 12. *Confirms a Grant of two Subsidies of four Shillings in the Pound, given by the Clergy, to be paid in two Years.*

A Grant
of three
Subsidies,
&c.

Cap. 13. *Contains a Grant of three Subsidies and six Fifteenths and Tenths by the Laity. And*

A Pardon.

Cap. 14. *Is a Confirmation of the Queen's General Pardon.*

Puritan ;
condemn'd
for fediti-
ous Libels.

During this Session of Parliament, viz. in the Month of March, John Greenwood, Clerk, a Puritan Preacher, and Henry Barrow, Gentleman, together with Saxio Billet, Gentleman, Daniel Studley, Girdler, and Robert Bowler, Fishmonger, Citizens of London, whom they had seduc'd, were indicted on the 23d of *Eliz.* Cap. 1. for writing and publishing several seditious Books and Libels tending to the Slander of the Queen and State ; and being convicted of Felony, were all condemn'd to die ; Barrow and Greenwood were carried

ried to *Tyburn* in a Cart; and brought back again the last of *March*, to see if they would submit, and acknowledge their Offences; but appearing to be incorrigible, they were executed on the sixth of *April*; the other three had their Lives spared. Their Principles were the same with those of *Brown*; and their Disciples were called *Brownists* by some, and *Barrowists* by others: *Barrow* wrote a Vindication of their Separation while he lay in Prison; justifying it,

1. From the Prophaneness and Wickedness of the People that were admitted into the Church:
2. From the Unlawfulness of the whole Ministry:
3. The Superstition and Idolatry of the publick Worship; and
4. From the Forgery of their Antichristian Ecclesiastical Government; and all this he said he could justify from *Cartwright's* Principles. This Sect of *Brownists* or *Barrowists* were so considerable, that Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in one of his Speeches in the last Parliament, affirm'd, That they did not amount to less than twenty thousand Men.

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Barrow
and *Greenwood* executed.

Reasons
given by
the Puritans
for their Separation.

In *Strype's Annals* * we find two Sorts of Puritans describ'd; the most inoffensive of which deny'd the Queen's Supremacy, and her Power of making Ecclesiastical Laws; held, that she was liable to their Excommunications; and that Princes and Magistrates so excommunicated; could not exercise any Authority, or require the Obedience of the Subject: That none were oblig'd to obey the Prince's Laws for Conscience-sake; for only God's Law bound Mens Consciences: That the Church Government was an unlawful Government: That every Christian Magistrate was bound to receive

The Puritan Doctrines.

* *Strype's Annals*, Vol. 3. Anno 1593.

A.D. 1593 the *Geneva* Plan of Government, by Pastors, Doctors, Elders, and Deacons, whatsoever Inconveniency might follow by it; and that it was lawful to make War on her Majesty and the State, if they withstood it: That the highest Ecclesiastical Authority in all Church Affairs belong'd to their Elderships and Presbyteries.

A. 35 Eliz.

That, as the Government of the Church should be Aristocratical or Popular, the Government of the Commonwealth ought to be fram'd according to that of the Church, as the Hangings to the Church.

That, as the *Lacedemonians* had their *Ephori* with Authority to depose their Kings; so in Hereditary Kingdoms might the Assembly of the States depose the King, if they *thought* he had broke the Covenants made at his Inauguration.

That it was unlawful for any State to tolerate the present Ecclesiastical Government.

The second Sort of Puritans, which in *Strype's Annals* are call'd *Brownists* or *Barrowists*, held all the Positions of the former, with several other Errors, viz.

Brownists,
or *Bar-*
rowists.

That it is not lawful to use the Lord's Prayer in publick: That all set Forms and stinted Prayers are mere babling, and not to be us'd in Christian Assemblies: That the Church of *England* is no true Member of the Church of Christ; and their Sacraments, as there administred, no true Sacraments: That, if the Magistrates neglect to reform such Things as were amiss in the Church, the People might reform them.

That the Church of *England* had in reality neither Ministers nor Sacraments, and therefore they (the *Brownists*) would not communi-

cate

cate with either in Prayers or Sacraments, or come to their Churches, which they call'd, *A. D. 1593*
POPISH PARISH ASSEMBLIES. *A. 35 Eliz.*

These are some of the Tenets of that People, whom the admired *Rapin* makes the Subject of his Lamentations on passing the Act, obliging them to come to Church once a Month, as a Test that they were not of that incorrigible Sect. His Words are these :

“ The Parliament meeting in the Month of *Rapin's*
 “ *February 1583*, pass'd an Act, which threw *Lamenta-*
 “ into a great Perplexity not only the Catho- *tions, that*
 “ licks, but even such of the Protestants who *a Law*
 “ differ'd in certain Points from the Church of *should be*
 “ *England*, and were call'd *Puritans*. By this *made to*
 “ Act, those who neglected to be present at *compel the*
 “ Divine Service, as establish'd by Law, were *Puritans to*
 “ liable to certain Penalties ; and so not only *come to*
 “ could a Man be any longer a *Roman Catho-*
 “ lick with Impunity, but even a Protestant, *Church.*
 “ unless he conform'd to the Church of *Eng-*
 “ *land*. Thus, in some measure, were re-
 “ new'd the Days of *Henry VIII*, when it was
 “ unlawful to depart never so little from the
 “ Religion of the Sovereign ; with this differ-
 “ ence only, That under *Elizabeth* it was
 “ not Death, as in the Reign of her Father ;
 “ nevertheless, there was in this last Act
 “ something more hard than in those made in
 “ the Time of *Henry VIII*. That Prince,
 “ absolute as he was, contented himself with
 “ punishing such as by some Overt-Act op-
 “ pos'd the establish'd Religion : But by this
 “ new Statute, the Subjects were oblig'd to
 “ make open Profession of the Religion of the
 “ Church of *England* : *Elizabeth*, exaspera-
 “ ted against the Catholicks, who had made
 “ frequent Attempts upon her Crown, and

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

“ even her Life, would have been very glad
 “ she could have clear’d the Kingdom of
 “ them. On the other hand, she could not
 “ endure the Puritans, looking upon them as
 “ obstinate People, who, for very trifling
 “ Reasons bred a Schism in the Protestant
 “ Church: *Whilst she had any thing to fear*
 “ *from the Queen of Scots, France and Spain;*
 “ *in a word, as long as her Affairs remain’d*
 “ *in a sort of Uncertainty, she let the Puritans*
 “ *alone, for fear of uniting them in the same In-*
 “ *terest with the Catholicks: But no sooner was*
 “ she out of all Danger, but she lent an Ear
 “ to the Suggestions of the CLERGY, who
 “ represented the Puritans to her as seditious
 “ Persons, who rebell’d against the Laws,
 “ and by their Disobedience shook the Foun-
 “ dations of the Government. *’Tis the CLERGY*
 “ *chiefly, who support this strange Principle of*
 “ *Non-Toleration, so little agreeable to Chri-*
 “ *stian Charity.*”

Rapin’s
 Remarks
 answer’d.

It might be a sufficient Answer to this Gentle-
 man to observe, that neither in *England* or
Scotland, when his Party, the Presbyterians,
 were uppermost, would they allow any Tole-
 ration: *A Man could not then, in his own*
Words, be a Protestant in England or Scotland
with Impunity. But we may observe further,
 that this People he pleads for were so far from
 being content with a *Toleration*, that they
 themselves would not *tolerate* the Government
 they liv’d under; but were perpetually stirring
 up the People to make War upon the Prince
 and State, and to compel them to establish their
 whimsical, or rather tyrannical Plan, whereby
 they would have subjected their Sovereign and
 their fellow Subjects to their Eldershops and
 Presbyteries, and not left any Man in the King-
 dom

The Puri-
 tans con-
 tend for
 Empire,
 not for To-
 leration.

dom a single Grain of Liberty ; so that the Dispute here was not for a *bare Toleration*, but for *Empire* : Nothing less would satisfy them than the reducing the whole Kingdom under their Tyranny ; and surely never any Prince or People could be blam'd for defending themselves against such Usurpations : Nor was it the most unreasonable Thing in the World, that the Government should, in a Christian Country, oblige their Subjects once a Month to worship God in publick ; and, if they refused to be subject to this very easy Law, to require them to abjure the Realm, and go into Banishment ; since it appear'd they remain'd determin'd to subvert the Constitution, and to raise Rebellions for that End the first Opportunity that offer'd, if they staid at home.

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

And here 'tis impossible to avoid taking Notice, that some Facts asserted by the Authors of *Rapin* on this Occasion in Favour of their Sect, and to asperse the Queen, are notorically false ; for they pretend, that as long as her Majesty had any thing to fear from *Spain*, viz. till the Year 1588, *she let the Puritans alone*, &c. Whereas we find, that in the very first Year of her Reign the Act of Uniformity pass'd, whereby they were all oblig'd to resort to their Parish Churches. That in the Year 1563, the 39 Articles were establish'd, which contain the Doctrine of the Church of *England*, and which every Clergyman was oblig'd to subscribe.

Rapin and the Presbyterians guilty of advancing Facts that are false.

That the Act of Uniformity was order'd to be strictly put in execution in the Year 1578.

The Non-conformists prosecuted long before 88.

That *Elias Thacker* and *John Copping*, who wrote against the Common Prayer, and called in question the Queen's Supremacy, were hang'd at *Bury* in the Year 1583.

That

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

The Q. in
Danger af-
ter the Act
for their
coming to
Church.

That *Cartwright* was expell'd the Univer-
fity, with a great many more of the principal
Puritan Preachers, and profecuted in the Court
of *Star-Chamber* long before the Year 1588.

Besides, this very Year 1593, when the Act
of 35 *Eliz. Cap. 1.* was made to compel the
Puritans to come to Church, the Queen and the
Nation (in feveral Speeches in Parliament) are
represented to be in more Danger than in the
Year 1588, as they were expos'd to Invasions
both from *Scotland* and *Bretagne*: From whence
it appears, there is nothing in their Affertion,
*that the Queen let the Puritans alone till she was
out of Danger*; especially if we confider that
there was scarce a Year afterwards but Plots
were discover'd to assassinate her Majesty.

An An-
fwer to
their Re-
flections
on the
Clergy.

As to the other Charge againſt the Clergy,
for inciting the Queen to profecute the Puri-
tans, it is evident that the Bishops received re-
peated Orders from the Queen and Council to
put the Act of Uniformity in execution, and
were feverely reprimanded for their Remifnefs
in this Particular: But, if they had complain'd
to the Government of the intolerable Infults
they met with from the Puritans, no Man
living could blame them for it; scarce a Week
paſs'd, but ſome ſcurrilous Libel was publiſh'd
againſt the Clergy and the Worſhip and Diſ-
cipline of the eſtabliſh'd Church.

In the very Year 1588, when the Nation
was thought to be in ſuch Danger from the
Spaniards, did they publiſh thoſe Libels which
went under the Name of *Martin Mar Prelate*;
where, ſpeaking of the Archbishops and Bi-
shops, they ſtile them a *ſwinish Rabble*, *petty
Antichriſts*, *petty Popes*, *proud Prelates*, *Ene-
mies to the Goſpel*; and affirm'd, that they preach'd
damnable Doctrines.

The

The inferiour Clergy they stile, *A Crew of monstrous and ungodly Wretches, who had subscribed and approv'd Lies upon the Holy Ghost; covetous, wretched Popish Priests; with a great deal more to the same Purpose.* Now I would desire the Friends of *Rapin* to consider whether the Presbyterians of *England, Scotland, Holland, Geneva,* , or any other State where the Sect ever was establish'd, would ever suffer the like Insults without endeavouring to suppress such avow'd Enemies to their Establishment: But as these People constantly alter their Opinions with their Circumstances, that is, cry up Toleration when the Government is in other Hands, and allow none when it is in their own; I do not imagine this Representation should have any great Influence on them. All that I expect is, that when our moderate Clergy and moderate Friends of the Establishment consider the implacable Enmity of the Sectaries towards the Church and themselves, and the pernicious Tendency of their Doctrines, they will be cautious how they harbour that Generation of Vipers in their Bosoms, and become instrumental in their own Destruction.

But, as a farther Answer to what *Rapin* and his Brethren the Presbyterians to this day affirm, *That Queen Elizabeth indulg'd their Faction in the Beginning of her Reign till she found herself establish'd, and then prosecuted them;* it may be very truly reply'd, That for the first ten or twelve Years of this Reign, neither they nor the Papists separated from the Church of *England*, or disobey'd the Laws of Conformity; and so long she had no manner of Inclination or Occasion to call them to an Account; nay, as long as they were peaceable, and did not insult and threaten the Establishment, and endeavour

The true Reason neither Papists or Dissenters were prosecuted in the Beginning of this Reign; and why they were prosecuted afterwards,

A.D. 1593 your to overthrow it to introduce their own Schemes; they met with little or no Disturbance from the Government: But when the Papists on one side conspir'd to assassinate the Queen, and to introduce foreign Powers; and the Presbyterians on the other, declar'd that her Majesty and her People ought to be subject to their Synods; and that she was an Enemy to Christianity, if she did not repeal all the Ecclesiastical Laws in being, and establish their Plan; and were perpetually fomenting Sedition and Rebellion, in order to compel her Majesty to enter into their Measures: She will be justify'd by all Mankind in requiring some Test of their Loyalty, or expelling them the Kingdom, while their Principles led them to subvert the Government.

Penry, a Puritan Minister, try'd and condemn'd for Sedition. But I proceed to give some Account of the Tryal of *Penry*, another of these Puritan Teachers, who had been spiriting up the People against the Government, and to this Day passes for a great Saint amongst the Brethren; for they are indeed very little alter'd in their Principles. This *Penry*, a Native of *Wales*, was famous for his Enmity to the Bishops, and foul Language in his Books and Writings. He was a Publisher, if not one of the Authors, of those scurrilous Libels that went under the Name of *Martin Mar Prelate*; and a special Warrant from the Council being issued out against him in the Year 1590, to seize him as an Enemy to the State, he fled to *Scotland*, and dwelt there till the present Year 1593; when he came secretly to *England*; and, being discover'd in the Parish of *Stepney*, was apprehended, and brought to his Tryal upon two Indictments; wherein he was charg'd with being the Author of certain seditious Libels, defaming

faming the Queen, and inciting People to Rebellion, declaring, *That the last Days of the Queen's Reign were turned rather against Jesus Christ and his Gospel, than to the Maintenance of the same.* And again, *Your standing is, and hath been by the Gospel; it is little beholden to you: The Practice of the Government sheweth, that if you could have rul'd without the Gospel, it would have been to be fear'd, whether the Gospel should be establisht or not; for now that you are establisht in your Throne, and that by the Gospel, you have suffer'd the Gospel to reach no farther than the End of your Scepter.* And again, *If the Days of your Sister Queen Mary, and her Persecution, had continu'd to this Day, this Church of God in England had been far more flourishing than it is: From whence it appears, that Penry and the Family of the Rapins jump'd pretty exactly in their Opinions; only one prefers the Reign of Henry VIII. to that of Queen Elizabeth; and the other wishes for the blessed Days of Queen Mary.*

The second Indictment charges Penry with speaking in the Person of the Queen in this manner: *I have already receiv'd all the Gospels and all the Ministries that I mean to receive; I have receiv'd a reading Gospel, and a reading Ministry; a pompous Gospel, and a pompous Ministry, and a Ministry that strengthneith the Hands of the Wicked in his Iniquity; a Gospel and a Ministry that will stoop to me, and be at my beck, either to speak or to be mute, when I shall think good: Briefly, I have receiv'd a Gospel and Ministry that will never trouble my Conscience with the Sight of my Sins.* Speaking of the Clergy, he calls them, *Bloody Soul-murderers, who have made themselves fat with the Blood of Mens Souls.* And of the Council,

A.D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Part of the Charge against him.

A.D. 1593 he says, *They bend all their Forces to bereave Christ Jesus of that Right which he hath in the Government of the Church; the which ungodly and wicked Course, as they have held on ever since the Beginning of her Majesty's Reign, so at this Day they have taken a greater Boldness and grown more rebellious against the Lord and his Cause than ever they were: And this the Indictment concludes justly to be to the great Scandal and Defamation of her Majesty, and the Subversion of the Constitution.*

Remarks
on *Penry's*
Indict-
ments.

If any Prince or State on the Face of the Earth will bear such Insults, I am mistaken; nay, it is not possible any Government can subsist, where the Authors of such Libels are suffer'd with Impunity; and in fact, we find it was by such Libels as these, that the Constitution was totally subverted in the next Reign but one by the Successors of these Puritans: But to proceed, *Penry* being found guilty of the Charge, was condemn'd for Felony on the Statute of the 23d *Eliz. Cap. 1.* and executed on the 29th of *May* following.

He is ex-
ecuted.

And now to take a View of the Affairs of *Scotland*: The King, we find, in pursuance of the Queen's Advice, pass'd several Laws against the Papists in that Kingdom, and rais'd Forces against the Earls of *Angus, Huntley and Errol*, who espous'd the *Spanish* Interest; but then he let the Queen know, that he thought it reasonable she should supply him with Money to subdue the Popish Faction, who were now very formidable; and that she would deliver up *Bothwel*, who had so often attempted his Life, and now lay lurking in *England*: Whereupon the Queen remitted a Sum of Money to *Scotland*, and banish'd *Bothwel* her Dominions; but would not deliver him up, lest she

K. *James*
defeats the
Lords in
the *Spanish*
Interest.

He is sup-
ply'd with
Money by
Q. Eliz.

she should discourage the *Scots* from retiring thither when she might have Occasion for them : Possibly there is not an Instance of the Queen's delivering up a *Scot* in her whole Reign, tho' she was in never so good Terms with the King ; but this Conduct had very near been fatal to his Majesty at this time ; for *Bothwel* returning to *Scotland* not long after, found Means to make such a Party there, that he came boldly into the King's Presence, under pretence of begging his Pardon ; and the King, finding the whole Court in a manner his Friends, was forc'd to grant him the Pardon he demanded ; but the States afterwards resenting the Indignity that had been put upon his Majesty, *Bothwel* and his Friends were again driven from the Court, and the former Ministry recall'd ; and his Majesty, to secure himself against the Popish and *Spanish* Factions, was content to establish Presbytery in *Scotland* again ; for the Kirk, it seems, refus'd to obey him but on these Conditions.

A. D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Bothwel
insults the
King.

Driven
from Court
again.

Presbytery
establish'd
in *Scotland*.

In the mean time, the Queen of *England* receiv'd Advice, that the *French* King, *Hen. IV.* had chang'd his Religion ; and sending *Wilks* to expostulate with him on the Occasion, he answer'd, That he had taken an Oath at his Accession to be instructed in the *Romish* Religion ; without which, he had not been permitted to mount the Throne : However, he had deferr'd making Profession of it these four Years, and was, at last, brought to it, with Reluctancy : But that the Princes of the Blood, and great Officers of State, had actually deserted him as an Heretick, and divided his Dominions among them, if he had deferr'd it any longer ; with a great deal more to the

The *French*
K. turns
Papist.

A.D. 1593 same purpose; whereupon the Queen wrote him the following Letter, viz.

A. 35 Eliz.

The Q's
Letter to
him on the
Occasion.

“ 'Tis hardly possible to expresse the extreme
“ Grief and Dissatisfaction which has seiz'd
“ me upon *Morley's* Representation of Things.
“ Good God! what a miserable World do we
“ live in! Could I ever have thought, Sir,
“ that any secular Consideration could have
“ prevail'd with you to discard a just Sense of
“ God and his Fear; or, can you ever rea-
“ sonably expect, that Providence will grant
“ this Change of yours an happy Issue? Or
“ could you, when you enter'd on it, entertain
“ a Jealousy, that the gracious Being, who
“ had so long supported and preserv'd you,
“ would fail and abandon you at last? 'Tis,
“ believe me, a dangerous Experiment to do
“ Evil that Good may come of it: But, I
“ hope, you may be yet recover'd to a better
“ Inclination, even the Spirit of a sound
“ Mind. In the mean time, I shall not cease
“ to recommend your Case to God in my daily
“ Prayers, and earnestly to beseech him, that
“ *Esau's* Hands may not pollute the Blessing
“ and Birthright of *Jacob*. The Promise you
“ make of a sacred and friendly Alliance, I
“ conceive myself to have deserv'd and even
“ earn'd at a vast Expence: But that I had
“ not matter'd, had you still kept yourself the
“ Son of the same Father. From hence-
“ forward I cannot look on myself as your
“ Sister in respect of our common Father; for
“ I must and shall always pay a much greater
“ Regard to Nature than Choice in that Rela-
“ tion; as I may appeal to that God, whom I
“ beseech to recover you into the Path of a
“ safer and sounder Judgment.”

This

This did not, however, create such a Breach between her Majesty and the *French* King, but they soon after enter'd into an Alliance, offensive and defensive, against the King of *Spain* in *October* following; stipulating to make no Peace with that Monarch, but by mutual Consent.

Still *Henry* neglected the War in *Bretagne*; nor would he agree to put *Brest*, or any Place of consequence in that Province, into the Hands of the *English*. His Council possibly being more jealous of the Queen's getting Footing there, than of the *Spaniards* themselves; and the Queen found herself oblig'd to put up these Affronts rather than break with so potent an Ally; in which Case, she must have borne the whole Weight of the War with *Spain*, perhaps, herself.

The latter End of this Year, we find the Title of the *Suffolk* Family again reviv'd; *Richard Hesket* being employ'd by some Malecontents, to propose it to *Ferdinand*, Earl of *Derby*, whose Father *Henry* was lately dead, to make out his Pretensions to the Crown by a Right deriv'd from his great Grandmother *Mary*, the youngest Daughter of *Henry VII*; but the Earl immediately discover'd the Matter to the Court, and *Hesket* was apprehended and executed as a Traytor: Nor did the Earl survive him four Months, as *Hesket* had threatened, suppos'd to be poison'd by some of his Accomplices.

There dy'd seventeen thousand eight hundred and ninety Persons of the Plague and other Diseases in *London* and the Suburbs this Year, which occasion'd the holding *Michaelmas* Term at *St. Albans*.

Still the King of *Spain* retain'd his Design of invading *England* by Land from *Scotland*; and

A. D. 1593

A. 35 Eliz.

Alliance
offensive
and de-
fensive be-
tween Eng-
land and
France.

The Title
of the *Suf-
folk* Fam-
ily reviv'd.

The
Plague in
London.

A.D. 1594 and for that end, distributed his Money very freely in that Kingdom among the Popish Lords; which gave Queen *Elizabeth* such Apprehensions, that she dispatch'd the Lord *Zouch* to King *James*, to persuade him to encourage the Protestant Party, and to proceed with Severity against the *Spanish* Faction; which the King approv'd of, but observ'd at the same time, that it was as much her Majesty's Concern as his, and therefore he expected she should contribute to the Expence of reducing those Lords: And when the Lord *Zouch* press'd him farther, the King demanded, if he thought he was to be at another's Beck? or, if the Queen took upon her to direct him to govern his Kingdom? Adding, that he should strenuously maintain the Establish'd Religion, and observe inviolably his Treaties with the Queen; but he could not forbear complaining, that that notorious Rebel *Bothwel* was shelter'd in *England*: And it was but a very little while afterwards, that *Bothwel* march'd from the Borders, and advanc'd towards *Edinburgh* at the Head of four hundred Horse, publishing a Declaration, wherein he express'd a more than ordinary Zeal against Popery, and complain'd, that Papists were too much encourag'd, tho' they had invited the *Spaniards* to invade the Kingdom, requiring the Nobility to unite their Arms against the Catholics, and declar'd all those to be Rebels who assisted the present Ministry: It was reported also, that the *English* Ambassadors encourag'd *Bothwel's* Enterprize: However, *Bothwel*, not being able to maintain his Ground, was forc'd to retire to his usual lurking Places, and the Queen of *England*, to oblige King *James*, prohibited any of her Subjects to harbour him in *England*; which

A. 36 Eliz.
The Q. advises King *James* to suppress the *Spanish* Faction.

Bothwel insults the King again, but is defeated.

which the Prince took so kindly, that he immediately assembled his Forces, dispers'd the Troops of the Popish Lords, caus'd them to be outlaw'd, and compell'd some of them to quit the Kingdom; and from that time there always remain'd a good Understanding between the King and Queen, which was still improv'd by the *Spaniards*, setting up the Title of the King of *Spain*, and his Daughter the Infanta, against him; pretending a prior Title to that of King *James*, as descended from *Eleanor* eldest Daughter of *Henry II*, and *Alphonso* King of *Castile*, or some other Branch of the Royal Family of *England*; and what the Title wanted in Goodness, *Philip* propos'd to make good by his Sword: But, to the great Joy of King *James*, his Queen was, on the 19th of *February*, brought to Bed of a Son (baptiz'd by the Name of *Henry*, to whom Queen *Elizabeth* stood Godmother) which contributed much to the strengthening the King's Interest in the Court of *England* as well as among the Subjects of both Kingdoms.

However, the *Spaniards* did not yet despair of setting the Infanta on the Throne of *England*, if they could dispatch Queen *Elizabeth*: In order to which, they tamper'd with *Roderigo Lopez* a *Portuguese Jew*, who was the Queen's Physician, and two others of the *Portuguese* Nation, to poison her: But the Conspiracy being discover'd by some intercepted Letters, they were apprehended and try'd at *Guildhall* the latter End of *February*, and convicted of High Treason on their own Confession: *Lopez* particularly acknowledg'd, that he had receiv'd a rich Jewel from *Christopher Moro*, the King of *Spain*'s Favourite, and had frequently given the *Spaniards* Intelligence of the

A. D. 1594

A. 36 Eliz.

The King also reduces the Popish Lords. The King and Queen unite their Interest.

The Spaniard sets up a Title to *England*.

Pr. *Henry* born.

Attempts of the *Spaniards* and Fugitives to murder the Queen.

A.D. 1594

A. 36 Eliz.

Lopez the
Queen's
Physician
condemn'd
for enga-
ging to
poison her.

the Transactions in the *English* Court; and that he was at last prevail'd on to promise to poison her Majesty for fifty thousand Ducats: *Lopez* however affirm'd, that he had no ill Design against the Queen, and only intended to get some Money out of the King of *Spain*; and that he had actually presented the Jewel the King of *Spain* sent him, to her Majesty. The other two had nothing to offer in their Excuse; and, as *Lopez* had made no Discovery of the Plot to the Queen, whatever his Intentions might be, he was executed with his Accomplices three Months after the Trial. The Reason the Execution was deferr'd so long, seems to be an extraordinary Opinion that the Queen and Court had conceiv'd of the Probity of *Lopez*: This Man affirm'd at his Execution, *That he lov'd the Queen as well as Jesus Christ*; which made the Spectators merry (says *Cambden*) when they consider'd he was a profess'd Jew.

An *Irish*
Assassin
condemn'd

The Day after these Poisoners were condemn'd, one *Patrick Cullen*, an *Irish* Fencing-Master, who had receiv'd Money and large Promises from the *Spaniards* and *English* Fugitives, and thereupon engag'd to assassinate the Queen, was condemn'd and executed upon undeniable Evidence; several Circumstances he confess'd. *Edmund York* and *Richard Williams* also were apprehended, being charg'd with a Design to kill the Queen; and some others, who were employ'd to fire the Navy: But the Queen appear'd undaunted at all these Conspiracies, often repeating the Passage of the Psalmist, *Thou art my God; my times are in thy hands*. However, she thought fit to expostulate with the Archduke of *Austria*, Governor of the *Netherlands*, on these treacherous and barbarous

Other As-
sassin ap-
prehen-
ded.

The Q.
expostu-
lates with
the King
of *Spain* on
these trea-
cherous At-
tempts.

barous Attempts against her Life, contriv'd by the *Spanish* Ministry and the *English* Fugitives; requiring him to acquaint the King his Master with them, that he might punish his Minister for these base and unmanly Practices, and deliver up *Owen Throckmorton Holt* the Jesuit and the rest of the Priests who were engag'd in these Designs, or his own Credit and Character must suffer with all good Men; but it does not appear, *Philip* had any Regard to these Representations.

A. D. 1594
A. 36 Eliz.

In the mean time, the *French* King, by changing his Religion, dissolv'd the League that was form'd against him. The Nobility submitted; the City of *Paris* open'd her Gates to him, and dismiss'd the *Spanish* Garrison, who were forc'd to procure a Safe-conduct of the King to retire; so much were the People set against the *Spaniards*, who, but a very little before, they esteem'd their *Deliverers*. And now *Henry* apply'd himself to the driving of the *Spaniards* out of *Bretagne*, in which the *English* Auxiliaries were very serviceable; but he was far from using the Queen of *England* well notwithstanding; for when her Troops had taken *Morlaix*, which he had promis'd them as a Place of Arms, he put a *French* Garrison into it, and would not suffer the *English* to enter it. He sacrific'd also abundance of the *English* in taking of other Towns, but still would not allow them the Possession of any one: Whereupon the Queen sent Orders to her General *Norris*, to take care how he expos'd the *English* Troops; and not long after, recall'd that General, and sent him into *Ireland*, where the King of *Spain* had incited another Insurrection.

The *Fr.* King generally recogniz'd by his Subjects.

He reduces *Bretagne* by the Assistance of the *English*.

But proves ungrateful to the Q.

A.D. 1594 *Richard Hawkins*, Son of the famous Sir *John Hawkins*, one of the best Sea-Officers of his Time, was this Year sent out with three Ships to make Discoveries, and to take what Prizes he could in the *South Sea*: But one of his Ships being burnt, and another deserting him, after he had made some considerable Prizes, he was forc'd to surrender to a Squadron of *Spanish* Men of War that surrounded him in those Seas, on condition, that the *Spaniards* should give him and his Men their Liberty; but *Hawkins* was however sent to *Spain*, and kept Prisoner there several Years: He was the sixth Captain that pass'd the Straits of *Magellan*.

Lancaster's Success in *Brasil*. Captain *James Lancaster*, who was fitted out by some private Merchants, met with better Success in *Brasil*; for he took 39 of the Enemies Ships; plunder'd the Town of *Fernambuc*, and brought home a very rich Booty.

Cardinal *Allen*, the Queen's great Enemy, dies. This Year died Cardinal *Allen*, usually call'd the Cardinal of *England*. This Man had been at the bottom of almost every Plot that was form'd against her Majesty; and, when the Invincible Armada was preparing against *England*, publish'd the Pope's Bull of Excommunication against the Queen in the *Low-Countries*, and wrote a kind of Memorial, to persuade his Countrymen, the *English*, to revolt to the King of *Spain*.

The Queen having broke the Measures of the Puritans, by bringing some of their seditious Leaders to Justice, they began to be more cautious in maintaining their rebellious and fanatical Schemes; but, in order to insinuate themselves into the People's Favour, and recover the Ground they had lost, they now pretended

tended to a greater degree of Purity and Sanctity than ever: They asserted, that the Sabbath-day was not kept with that Reverence it ought: * That it was not lawful for Scholars to study, or the Magistrate to execute his Office on that Day: That to ring more Bells than one was unlawful: That all Diversions were to be forborne; and no Person was to discourse of Recreations, News or Business; nay, that to play at Bowls on the Lord's-day was as great a Sin as to kill a Man: That to make a Feast, or dress a Wedding-Dinner on that Day, was as great a Sin as for a Man to cut his own Throat: And in short the Sunday ought to be observ'd rather as a Fast than a Feast. And their Manner of keeping that great Festival (with a downcast hanging Look) has ever since serv'd to distinguish that Sect from the rest of Mankind; who notwithstanding they will not allow of a Smile or innocent Discourse on that Day, spend the greatest part of it in calumniating and damning all that differ from them, The Doctrines of Predestination and Reprobation were also now preached up with great Zeal by the Puritans, and espous'd even by some of the greatest Churchmen; and many in the University of *Cambridge* deny Man to be a free Agent; and affirm, that not only his final Doom, but every Event, every Action of his Life, was determin'd from all Eternity, without any Regard to his Behaviour: But the Queen was so wise as to order these Opinions to be discountenanc'd, as destructive of all Virtue and Religion; for who would have any Regard to his Actions, if he believ'd his Fate

A. D. 1594

A. 36 Eliz.

The Puritans keep the Sabbath as a Fast.

Their Doctrine of Predestination.

Suppress'd by the Q. as destructive of Virtue and Religion.

* *Bound's Book of the Sabbath.* the Presbytery, p. 340.

Heylin's Hist. of

A.D. 1594 was already decreed? And how absurd would it be to preach and advise Men to reform and amend their Lives, if they had no Freedom of Choice, no Power to encline one Way or the other, or to follow the Advice that is given them? So to what Purpose are our Addresses to Heaven, since irreversible Decrees can never be alter'd?

A.D. 1595 But to return to secular Affairs: Sir *William Russel*, youngest Son of the Earl of *Bedford*, being made Deputy of *Ireland* in the room of Sir *William Fitz-Williams, Tirouen*, the Head of the Malecontents there, pretended to make his Submission to him; but was no sooner retir'd to his Bogs again, than he began to incite another Rebellion, in which he was encourag'd by the King of *Spain*; and, there being some Misunderstanding between the Deputy and *Norris*, General of the *English* Forces, the War in *Ireland* was not carry'd on with the Success that was expected. Had the *Spaniard* then invaded that Kingdom, as he threatened, he would not, probably, have been driven from thence with Ease; but he was now engag'd in a War with *France*, which he look'd upon as of more Importance: And here indeed his Arms met with all the Success he could propose. The Count *de Fuentes*, the *Spanish* General in the *Low-Countries*, made himself Master of several Towns on the Frontiers of *France*: Whereupon, the *French* King apply'd himself to the Queen of *England* for a Reinforcement of Troops; but refusing at the same time to put any Maritime Place into her Hands, as a Security to reimburse her Charges, she did not express any great Forwardness to assist him, especially when she consider'd how ill he had perform'd his former Treaties with her:

A. 36 Eliz.
The War in Ireland unsuccessful.

The Spaniards take several Towns from France.

her : And while they were disputing about Terms, the *Spaniards* made themselves Masters of the important Town of *Cambray* ; which the *French* King ascrib'd to the Queen's not assisting him with her Troops, in pursuance of the late Alliance between the two Kingdoms, and threatned to make Peace with *Spain* without including *England* ; but the Queen, who knew the Councils of *France* were govern'd by the Leaguers her Enemies, who only propos'd to make use of her Forces to serve a present Turn, and that the *French* King had actually promis'd the Court of *Rome* to advance and encourage the Popish Religion in his Dominions, was not much mov'd at the Representations *Henry* made on this Subject ; but let him know however, that if she did not furnish him with Troops to serve in *France*, she should make a powerful Diversion in his Favour by Sea ; nor could he expect she should do more, when *Spain* threatned every day, to invade either her Kingdoms of *England* or *Ireland*, and had lately made a Descent in the West of *England*, and burn'd some of her Towns : For tho' this Loss was very inconsiderable, she did not know how soon she might be attack'd by a greater Force from *Bretagne* ; of which the *French* King still suffer'd the *Spaniards* to remain possess'd, and refused to put any Town into her Hands on that Coast.

The *French* King, finding *Elizabeth* determin'd to send no more Armies into *France* to his Assistance, had Recourse to the *Dutch*, who supply'd him both with Troops and Treasure, as the readiest way to keep the War from their own Doors : Which Queen *Elizabeth* no sooner understood, but she let the *Dutch* know, that since they were so full of Money, she expected

A.D. 1595

A. 37 Eliz.

Cambray
taken by
the Spaniards.

The Q
demands
the Money
she had
lent the
States.

A.D. 1595

A. 37 Eliz.

pected they should repay her at least some part of the Sums she had lent them. To which they answer'd, That they had with Difficulty rais'd the Money to supply the *French* King to prevent his making Peace with *Spain*; which would have been prejudicial to *England* as well as to their State: That they were still very poor, their Charges being rather increas'd than diminish'd by their new Acquisitions, being obliged to fortify the Places they had taken, and keep Garrisons in them (which is the very Pretence they made in the last War, for throwing the Expence upon the *English*.) And the Matter was at length accommodated on the following Terms, viz. That the *Dutch* should, for the future, punctually pay the *English* Auxiliaries 40,000 *l. per Ann.* besides 20,000 *l. per Ann.* in part of the Debt; and assist her Majesty with a Squadron of 30 Men of War against *Spain*; and that, after the Peace, they would pay her 100,000 *l. per Ann.*

An Expedition of
Sir Walter
Raleigh's
to Guiana
in America.

This Year, the *English* Admirals, and some other Adventurers, propos'd the coming in for Share of the *Spaniards* Wealth in *America*, and particularly Sir *Walter Raleigh*. This Gentleman, whom the Queen had made Captain of her Guards, having had an Intrigue with one of her Maids of Honour (whom he afterwards marry'd) and gain'd the last Favour before they had been at Church, her Majesty was so incens'd, that she first confin'd him, and then banish'd him the Court: During which Retirement, this Gentleman meditated the making a Voyage to the River *Orenoque*; the Mouth whereof lies in about eight Degrees North Latitude on the *Terra Firma*; for he had heard, that in the Province of *Guiana*, which that River runs thro', there were several rich Mines

Mines of Gold : Having obtain'd the Queen's A.D. 1595
 Consent therefore for his undertaking this Enterprize, Sir *Walter* arriv'd at the Island of *A. 37 Eliz.*
Trinidado, which lies near the Mouth of the River *Orenoque*, on the 22d of *March*; and here he left his Ships, entring the River with an hundred Men in his Boats and Pinaces; but having sail'd up the River about four hundred Miles, he met with scarce any thing that answer'd his Expectations; unless the Discovery of several Nations, till then unheard of, and whom he describes very particularly, together with their Country, in his Relation of this Voyage: He would have advanc'd farther, but the Rains which fall there at the Season of the Year, swell'd the River, and drove him back to Sea again.

Sir *Francis Drake* and Sir *John Hawkins* Another of
 were sent to the *Isthmus* of *Darien*, with a Sir *Francis*
 Fleet of Men of War, about the same time, *Drake's* to
 to seize the Treasures which the *Spaniards* usu- the *Isth-*
 ally send from those Parts annually to *Europe*, *mus* of
 having a Body of Land Forces on Board, com- *Darien*.
 manded by Sir *Thomas Baskerville*: But the *Spaniards*, having taken some *English* Prisoners in a Pinace, that was separated from the Fleet, and put them to the Torture, discover'd the Design; and, while the *English* Admirals lay at *St. Domingo* to build Pinaces, remov'd all their Treasure from the Sea Coasts.

Whereupon *Baskerville* attempted to cross the *Isthmus* to *Panama*, that lies on the *South* Sea, but found the Passes so strongly fortify'd, that he was oblig'd to return to the Fleet without effecting any thing considerable, after he had lost great part of his Men: The Fleet also prov'd very sickly: Both the Admirals, *Drake* and *Hawkins*, died before they left the *American* Voyage.

A.D. 1595 *rican* Coast. It had been propos'd, to attack *Porto Bello*; but after these Losses, the Officers, who surviv'd, thought proper to return home, without attempting any thing farther. They were attack'd in their Way to *England* by the *Spanish* Fleet on the South of *Cuba*, but made their way thro' it without receiving much Damage; however, they brought very little Treasure with them, which may be ascrib'd to the Precautions the *Spaniards* took on the Discovery of the Design, and the Unhealthfulness of the Climate; which has prov'd no less fatal to the *English* Officers and Seamen in our Times, when the very Ships were destroy'd by the Worms, as they lay before *Porto Bello*, and lost their Complement of Men more than once by Sickness.

A.D. 1596

A. 38 *Eliz.*

The War
in *Ireland*
unsuccess-
ful.

In *Ireland*, *Tirouen*, by his pretended Submissions, had perswaded General *Norris* to grant him a Truce; which that Rebel made no other Use of, than to reinforce his Troops, and enter into a stricter Confederacy with the *Spaniard*, who gave him repeated Assurances of a powerful Assistance. The Truce was no sooner expir'd, than *Tirouen* had Recourse to Arms again. The Reason Mr. *Cambden* assigns for the Continuance of the War in *Ireland*, are, 1. A Misunderstanding between the Deputy and the General of the Army: 2. A Design in the Generals to lengthen out the War for their own Advantage: And, 3. The too frugal Measures of the Court of *England*, who would not allow Troops or Money sufficient to put an End to it once; which they might very easily have done: A Conduct that might have prov'd fatal to that Island, if the *Spaniard* had not been frequently disappointed in his Attempts

Attempts to invade it; and unite his Forces with those of the Rebels. *A. D. 1596*

In the mean time, the *French* being unable to make head against the *Spaniard*, Cardinal *Albert*, Arch-duke of *Austria*, and Governour of the *Netherlands*, on a sudden invested *Calais*; at which the Queen of *England* was so surpriz'd, that upon the first Intimation of it from the *French* King, she order'd eight thousand Men immediately to embark for his Assistance, in order to prevent the *Spaniards* becoming Masters of that Place: But before these Troops could assemble, Advice came, that *Calais* was taken; not having held out above twelve Days: Whereupon the Troops were dismiss'd, and the Queen furnished the *French* King with a Sum of Money, to enable him to continue the War.

A. 38 Eliz.

Calais
taken by
the *Spaniards*.

And, as the Queen expected to be invaded by the King of *Spain*, now he had got Possession of a Town, so commodiously situated for transporting his Troops to *Britain*, and heard he was actually making Preparations in all his Ports for that end; she resolved, according to her usual Policy, to be before-hand with him, and destroy the Shipping design'd to annoy her. Accordingly, she fitted out seventeen Capital Ships of her own, which were join'd by two and twenty *Dutch* Men of War, and abundance of private Adventurers; among whom, the principal were *Charles Howard*, the Lord Admiral, and the Earl of *Essex*; who expended vast Sums in this Enterprize, on condition of their sharing in the Profits of it; in so much, that the whole Fleet, small and great, consisted of above an hundred Sail; on Board whereof were 6772 Mariners, 6360 Land Soldiers, and 1000 Gentlemen Volunteers,

A Fleet
fitted out
to destroy
the *Spanish*
Shipping
in their
Ports.

A.D. 1596 *manded by the Earl of Essex. Thus did Queen Elizabeth make her Subjects share with her in the Charges of every Naval Expedition, by promising to divide the Spoil with them: Nor was this the only Advantage she reap'd by this Conduct. She was satisfy'd, every Officer and Adventurer, who was concern'd in the Success of the Expedition, in point of Interest, would contribute all that lay in his Power to promote it.*

The Eng-
lish destroy
the Spanish
Fleet at
Cadiz.

The Fleet, setting Sail from *Plymouth* the beginning of *June*, stood to the Westward, keeping at a Distance from the Coasts of *Spain* and *Portugal*, lest their Design should be discover'd; and meeting with an *Irish* Vessel that came from *Cadiz*, they learnt, that there was a great Fleet of Men of War, Galleons and Merchant-ships in the Harbour, and but a small Garrison in the Town, no Enemy being expected there this Year: Whereupon, the Admirals crowded all the Sail they could, in order to surprize the *Spaniards*, and came to an Anchor on the West Side the Island of *Cadiz* on the 20th of *June*; but attempting to land some Forces there, they found the Sea beat so furiously on the Shoar, that it was impracticable. The next day, the *Spanish* Men of War and Galleons retir'd under the Batteries of the *Puntal*, where they were attack'd by the *English* Fleet, and defended themselves with great Obstinacy from Morning till Noon; and then they set fire to most of their Ships, or run them on ground: Among which were the *St. Philip*, the *Spanish* Admiral, a Ship of fifteen hundred Tuns; but the *Matthew* and *St. Andrew*, two large Galleons, were taken by the *English*.

The Sea-fight being over, the Earl of *Effex* A. D. 1596 landed at the *Puntals*, about a League from the City; and marching thither, was oppos'd by A. 38 Eliz. 500 *Spanish* Horse, whom he defeated, and The Town pursued so closely, that he was very near entering the Gates with them: But being disappointed in this, he discover'd an Entrance into the Town at another Place, but so steep, that a Man must leap down a Pike's Length: However *Evans*, Lieutenant to the Earl of *Suffex*, ventur'd in, and was follow'd by *Arthur Savage*, Captain of the Earl's Company, *Samuel Bagnal*, and several others; and while the *Spaniards* were busied in opposing these, the Earl of *Effex* and Sir *Francis Vere* forc'd open the Gates, and entring at the Head of their Men, there was a smart Engagement in the Streets for half an hour; when the *Spaniards* retir'd to the Castle and Town-house, and the *English* posted themselves in the Market-place, where they were pretty much annoy'd by Shot and Stones from the Tops of the Houses that were flat-roof'd: And here Sir *John Wingfield* was shot in the Head, of which he died, and several others were wounded, but no other Person of Distinction was lost in storming the Place: The *Spaniards*, that had got into the Town-house, surrender'd immediately; and those in the Castle the next day, upon condition, that the Inhabitants should have Liberty to retire with the Cloaths on their Backs; but they were oblig'd to leave forty of the principal Citizens as Hostages for the Payment of their Ransom, that was set at 520,000 Ducats; after which, Proclamation was made, That no Violence should be offer'd to the *Spaniards*; and that the Religious, with the Citi-

A.D. 1596 zens and Women, should be convoy'd to Port
 St. Mary's.

A. 38 Eliz.

A Fleet of
 Spanish
 Merchant-
 ships de-
 stroy'd.

The *Spanish* Merchant-ships in the mean time being retir'd to Port *Real*, Sir *Walter Raleigh* was order'd, with his Squadron, to set them on fire; whereupon, two millions of Ducats were offer'd to redeem them: But the Admiral answer'd, He was sent to destroy the Shipping, and not to ransom them for Money, and thereupon executed his Orders; but the Duke of *Medina* found Means to unload some of them that were freighted.

The Loss
 of the *Spaniards*,
 20,000,000
 of Ducats.

In the Town was found a vast Quantity of Ammunition, and a considerable Treasure, besides the Plunder that was given to the Soldiers; the whole Loss of the *Spaniards* being computed at twenty millions of Ducats. When the Action was over, there were no less than sixty Gentlemen knighted, who had distinguish'd themselves, which made Knighthood exceeding cheap; and a Knight of *Cadiz* is to this day a proverbial Expression, where we would intimate, a Man's Estate is not answerable to his Quality.

The *English* quit
Cadiz.

The Earl of *Effex* offer'd to keep the Possession of *Cadiz* with four hundred Men, if they would leave him three Months Provision; but the rest of the Officers would not consent to it, being impatient to return home with the Plunder they had got: Whereupon, after they had burnt the Town, and several of the neighbouring Villages, they embark'd their Troops, and set sail for *England* on the fifth of *July*, leaving a better Character behind them than our Troops did in the late War, when they attack'd *Cadiz*: The *Spanish* themselves acknowledg'd them brave, generous Enemies, notwithstanding they were Hereticks.

In their way home, they burnt the Town of *Faro* in *Portugal*, which was forsaken by the Inhabitants: And here the Earl of *Effex* met with a well-furnish'd Library, which he brought from thence. It was debated afterwards, whether they should not sail to the *Azores*, and wait for the *Spanish* Plate-Fleet, according to the Orders they had receiv'd from the Queen; which *Effex* was zealous for; but the Sea-Officers urging, that their Men were sickly, and Provisions short, it was resolv'd to return directly to *England*; where they were receiv'd with great Applause, especially the Earl of *Effex* and the Admiral, in whose Commendations, *Cambden* observes, the Queen was very liberal: *Effex* however shew'd himself extremely discontented, that the Queen had, in his Absence, made Sir *Robert Cecil*, the Treasurer's Son, Secretary of State, when he had recommended Sir *Thomas Bodley* to that Post; nor was he less dissatisfy'd with her making Sir *Francis Vere* Governour of the *Briel* (one of the *Dutch* cautionary Towns :) But how *Effex* came to take it in his Head, that the Queen should dispose of no Office of consequence without him, is not easy to conceive. We have, indeed, seen another General in our Times, that would not suffer his Sovereign to dispose of a Colonel's Commission without his Approbation. Perhaps, these Military Men imagine they have a Right to govern the whole Sex, as well Princes as Subjects.

A. D. 1596
A. 38 Eliz.

The Earl
of *Effex*
discontent-
ed.

Notwithstanding the Loss the King of *Spain* had sustain'd at *Cadiz*, he fitted out another Fleet from *Lisbon*, with Land Forces on Board, which were intended for the Invasion of *England* or *Ireland*: But I am inclin'd to think, the latter; because *Tirouen* was then in Rebellion

The *Spaniards* fit
out another
Fleet.

A.D. 1596 Rebellion there, and waiting for a Body of
 A. 38 Eliz. *Spaniards* to join him: Neither do these Preparations seem answerable to so great a Design as the Invasion of *Great Britain*: But, where-ever the *Spanish* Fleet was bound, they met with such a Storm soon after they set Sail, as perfectly disabled them from proceeding in their intended Enterprize.

An Alliance with
 France.

In the mean time, the Queen enter'd into an Alliance Offensive and Defensive with *France*; the principal Article whereof was, That *England* should assist *Henry* with four thousand Men, to be employ'd within fifty Miles of the Sea-coast; and the *French* King was to supply her Majesty with as many, in case she should be invaded by *Spain*: But it was agreed afterwards, that the Queen should find but two thousand Men the present Year; and these were sent over to *Picardy*, under the Command of Sir *Thomas Baskerville*, soon after the Conclusion of the Treaty.

A Fast appointed,
 which the Puritans
 refuse to observe.

There having been a very great Dearth of Corn, this and the preceding Year, a solemn Fast was appointed to be held on *Wednesday* and *Friday* in every Week, and Prayers suitable to the Occasion: And it was strictly enjoyn'd, that no Flesh should be eaten on those Days; and that Suppers should be forborn; and the Food which used to be eaten at such Times, was order'd to be distributed amongst the Poor, who were in a starving Condition: But it appears, that several Ministers of the Puritanical Strain refused to obey the Orders of their Superiors; and, instead of keeping the Fast on the *Wednesday*, would keep it on the * *Thursday*; so perverse were that Generation, even in

* *Strype's Whitgift*, p. 489.

those early Times : However, as this Sect began now to decline, and the People were everywhere almost reconciled to the Worship and Ceremonies of the Church, the Puritans had Recourse to another Statagem, in order to recover their Credit with the People ; and that was, by pretending to a Power of casting out Devils ; being one of those Miracles used by our Saviour, for the Establishment of Christianity. No Person was troubled with Fits of any kind, but they gave out, he was possess'd ; and immediately all the Puritans in the Neighbourhood were assembled to cast out Satan by Fasting and Prayer ; and if the Patient was restor'd by Physick, or the Disease had spent itself, they immediately triumph'd as tho' they had wrought a Miracle : And sometimes meeting with Persons troubled with Fits, who were willing to carry on the Imposture, they instructed them how to behave themselves to amuse and captivate the Multitude : Of which there was a notorious Instance * in one *Somers*, who confess'd that *Darrel*, a Puritan Preacher, had tamper'd with him, and taught him to counterfeit very surprizing Agitations ; which *Somers* not only confess'd, but acted the same Pranks voluntarily before the Mayor and Aldermen of *Nottingham*, as the Puritan Preachers had taught him. And *Darrel* was convicted of these villanous Practices before the Archbishop of *York* ; till when, this Pretence of dispossessing Devils, occasion'd unheard of Disturbances at *Nottingham*. The whole Town, says my Author, was divided ; some looking on it as a Cheat, and others as a real Miracle. The Pulpits rung of nothing but

A.D. 1596

A. 38 Eliz.

The Puritans pretend to Miracles.

They tamper with an Impostor to counterfeit a Possession.

* *Strype's Whitgift*, p. 492.

A.D. 1596 Devils and Witches, and People were so terrified, that they durst not stir out of one Room into another in the Night-time ; and if any one fell sick, it was immediately given out, that he was possess'd. This Artifice, we find, the Puritan Ministers, their Successors, are very dextrous at in our Times, whereby they deceive the credulous Multitude, and gain many Profelytes ; but they generally take care how they act their Parts before Men of Sense and Condition, lest they should be call'd to account for their Impostures, as their Predecessors were.

Rogues
and Beggars
infest
the Country.

The Country was also extremely pester'd with Rogues and sturdy Beggars * about this Time, who stroll'd about in Crouds, and were grown to that height, that the Farmers and Country People durst not deny them any thing they ask'd, much less apprehend them, lest their Fellows should revenge their Quarrel : Of which, I find, the Justices making heavy Complaints to the Lord-Treasurer *Burleigh*, especially *Mr. Hext*, an eminent Justice of Peace of *Somersetshire* ; who acquaints that Lord, that at their Assizes, forty of these strolling People had been condemn'd and executed for Felony ; and that an hundred eighty-three more had been set at Liberty ; some of whom were whip'd, others burn'd in the Hand, and above an hundred were dismiss'd for want of Evidence against them ; but all of them, the Justice observes, probably return'd to the same wandring and rapacious Way of living, to the Ruin of the Country People ; and therefore proposes the setting up of Work-houses in every County, where these Wretches

* *Styke's Annals*, Vol. 4. p. 291.

might be confin'd and earn their Bread by their Labour ; but I don't find there were more Incendiaries in those Days than there were very lately in ours.

A. D. 1596
A. 38 Eliz.

The *Spaniards* were not so discourag'd by their Losses the preceding Year, but they fitted out another Fleet, with a Design to invade *Ireland*, and join the Rebels there under the Command of *Tirouen* : Of which the Queen receiving Advice, she sent a Fleet, with six thousand Land Forces on Board, under the Command of the Earl of *Effex*, the Lord *Thomas Howard* and Sir *Walter Raleigh*, to destroy the *Spanish* Fleet design'd against *Ireland*, in the Harbours of *Faro* and the *Groyne* ; but the *English* were driven back to *Plymouth* by contrary Winds, and miserably shatter'd.

A. D. 1597
A. 39 Eliz.
A Fleet fitted out against the *Spaniards*.

Dispers'd by Storms.

Having repair'd part of their Ships, the three Generals sail'd again, with only a thousand Land Forces on Board, towards the *Azores* or Western Islands, to wait for the *Spanish* Plate-Fleet, and were again dispers'd by a Storm in their Passage thither ; infomuch, that Sir *Walter Raleigh* did not arrive at the *Azores* till some time after the rest ; where landing to get fresh Water, and taking the Town of *Fial*, while *Effex* was cruising at Sea, *Effex* was so offended at his Presumption, that he threatned *Raleigh* to punish him Capitally, or at least to dismiss him the Service : To which *Raleigh* answer'd, That they were equally Generals in this Expedition, and not one of them subject to the other. And the Lord *Howard* interposing, compromis'd the Matter, for the present, on Sir *Walter Raleigh's* making a slight Submission. The Generals afterwards agreed to sail to the Island of *Gratiosa*, to lie in the Way of the Plate-Fleet : But when they came thither,

A Quarrel betwixt *Effex* and *Raleigh*.

A.D. 1597 their Pilots representing, that the Harbour was not commodious, they sail'd to *St. Michael's*; and had not been gone above two Hours, when the *Spanish* Fleet, consisting of forty Sail, seven whereof had Plate on Board, arriv'd, and got into the Harbour of *Tercera*; except three Ships, which fell into the Hands of the *English*: *Effex* afterwards view'd the Harbour of *Tercera*; but found it so strongly fortify'd, that there was no coming at the Ships; whereupon the Generals, being in want of Provisions, agreed to return home; and, in their Passage, met with another violent Storm that dispers'd their Fleet: However, the *Spaniards* had not better Success, for the very same Storm destroy'd a Fleet of theirs, that was bound for *Ireland* or *Cornwal*.

A. 39 Eliz.
The *English* miss of the *Spanish* Plate-Fleet.

The *Spanish* Fleet, design'd for *Ireland*, dispers'd.

The Earl of *Effex* returning to *England*, about the end of *October*, the Quarrel between him and *Raleigh* was reviv'd, each of them laying the ill Success of the Expedition on the other: The People generally shewed a Dislike to *Raleigh*, as unfaithful to his Country; and express'd at the same time the highest Esteem and Affection for the Earl; which he took care (says *Cambden*) to cherish by his Address; adding however, that neither of these Gentlemen came short in any Instance of Courage or Conduct.

Effex discontented.

Some Creations.

Effex, it seems, was not pleas'd, at his Return, to find his Enemy, Sir *Robert Cecil*, Secretary of State, made Master of the Wards. He was further disgusted, that the Lord Admiral *Howard* had been created Earl of *Nottingham*, whereby he took Place of him: And that in *Howard's* Patent, the taking of *Cadiz*, in Conjunction with *Effex*, was ascrib'd to the Admiral: Whereas *Effex* insisted, that the Honour

Honour of taking that City was solely due to him; but the Queen, to give *Essex* some Satisfaction in these Respects, was pleas'd to constitute him Earl Marshal of *England*, whereby he recover'd his Precedency of the Admiral.

A.D. 1597

A. 39 Eliz.

The *English* having seized sixty Sail of Ships in *Portugal*, that belong'd to the Hanse Towns, and were carrying Ammunition and Provision to the *Spaniards*, some Years before, as has been related already; the *Polish* Embassador, in behalf of the Merchants of *Dantzick*, and other the Hanse Towns in his Master's Territories, demanded Satisfaction, and seem'd to threaten the Queen in case of Refusal: Whereupon her Majesty let him know, that she despis'd his Threats; and that whatever Neutral Power should carry Provision or Warlike Stores to an Enemy, was lawful Prize; tho' she had notwithstanding releas'd the Ships, after the Lading was taken out of them. The same Answer was given to the Imperial Hanse Towns and the Emperor; with which they were not satisfy'd, but prohibited the *English* to trade with *Germany*: Whereupon the Queen expell'd the *German* Merchants from *London* and other Parts of *England*. However, the Trade was soon after restor'd with *Dantzick*, *Elbing* and other Places, by a Treaty.

Complaints of the Hanse Towns for the taking their Ships.

The Trade with *Germany* interrupted.

This Year the *Dutch* gain'd a considerable Victory over the *French* at *Turnholt*, by the Assistance of the *English* Auxiliaries, who distinguish'd themselves in the Battel: On the other hand, the *Spaniards* surpriz'd the City of *Amiens*; which put the *French* King upon demanding a Reinforcement of four thousand Men of the Queen of *England*, in pursuance of the late Treaty; intimating, that he should be oblig'd

Battel of Turnholt.

Amiens taken by the *Spaniards*.

A.D. 1597 oblig'd to make Peace with *Spain*, if she deny'd to send them : And indeed he was at that very time privately engag'd in a Treaty with *Spain* by the Mediation of the Pope ; which was only interrupted, by the taking of *Amiens*. The Queen represented by her Ambassador *Mildmay*, the ill Usage her Troops had met with, that were formerly sent to the Assistance of *France* : That he made a Property of the *English*, shifting them off from time to time with trifling, loose, and ambiguous Answers ; inſomuch, that they had no Encouragement to give him any further Assistance ; however, lest *Henry* should strike up a Peace with *Spain*, she was induc'd to send the four thousand Men demanded, by whose Assistance the *French* recover'd *Amiens* : *Henry* however proceeded clandestinely in his Negotiation with *Spain* ; of which the Queen receiving Advice, thought fit to summon her Parliament, and demand Supplies, that she might not be found unprovided, in case she should be left to contend singly with the whole Court of *Spain*.

Retaken
by the As-
sistance of
the *English*.

The Par-
liament
meets.

The Q.
forbids
their med-
dling with
Ecclesiasti-
cal Affairs.

The Parliament meeting on the 24th of *October*, a Bill was brought in for reforming of Abuses in the Probate-Wills, and the granting Licences for Marriage ; the latter being occasion'd by certain clandestine and incestuous Marriages that had been lately solemniz'd in privileg'd Places : But the Queen giving the Houses to understand, that the regulating these Things belong'd to the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction ; and that she would take care those Matters should be reform'd to their Satisfaction, the Bill was dropp'd, tho' not without some Opposition.

The principal Acts which pass'd this Session, in relation to Religion and the State, were these that follow, viz. *A. D. 1597*
A. 39 Eliz.

The 39 *Eliz. Cap. 2.* which requires the Arable Land laid down for Pasture, should be again converted to Tillage; and prohibits the converting plough'd Land to Pasture for the future. *Arable Land not to be made sward.*

39 *Eliz. Cap. 3.* is the first Act that was made for relieving the Poor in the manner they are provided for at present: But this was alter'd by an Act of the next Parliament, viz. 43 *Eliz.* *Poor reliev'd.*

39 *Eliz. Cap. 4.* requires Houses of Correction to be erected in every County for the Punishment of Vagabonds and sturdy Beggars, who (as has been observ'd in the preceding Year) were become an intolerable Nuisance to the Country. *Houses of Correction establish'd.*

By 39 *Eliz. Cap. 8.* the Deprivations of all Bishops and Deans, in the beginning of the Queen's Reign, are declar'd valid; and that the Advancement of all Bishops and Deans made by the Queen are good. *Deprivations and Preferments confirm'd.*

By 39 *Eliz. Cap. 9.* the carrying away any Woman against her Will, that hath Lands or Goods, or who is Heir apparent to her Ancestor, is declar'd Felony without Benefit of Clergy. *Women stolen.*

By 39 *Eliz. Cap. 15.* Clergy is also taken away from Persons robbing a House or Out-house in the Day-time to the Value of five Shillings, altho' no Person be therein. *Robberies.*

By 39 *Eliz. Cap. 26.* three Subsidies, or four Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy, are confirm'd. *Subsidies.*

By 39 *Eliz. Cap. 27.* three entire Subsidies, and six Fifteenths and Tenths, are granted by the Laity: And by *Cap. 28.* the Queen's General Pardon is confirm'd. *Pardon.*

This

A.D. 1598

A. 40 Eliz.

Peace between
France and
Spain.

This Year the *French* King treacherously negotiated a separate Peace with *Spain*; and, just before it was sign'd, sent to Queen *Elizabeth*, to persuade her to come into it: But when her Plenipotentiaries arriv'd in *France*, they found the Treaty in a manner concluded; whereupon the Queen reproached that Monarch with Ingratitude and Breach of Faith; telling him, that Oaths and mutual Compacts were never design'd for Snares but by the worst of Men. This Treaty was call'd, the Peace of *Vervins*, being sign'd in that Town the second of May, and was ratify'd the twelfth of June.

The Q.
eases her
self of the
Charge of
assisting
the States.

It was now debated in the Council of *England*, whether the War should be continued with *Spain*, or they should hearken to a Peace, to which King *Philip* shew'd some Inclinations at this time; and it was carry'd, not to make Peace without the Concurrence of the *Dutch*: However, as that People were more immediately concern'd in the Event of the War, it was determin'd to enter into a new Treaty with the States, and put the War upon a more equitable Foot, with regard to *England*. The Queen had constantly expended 120,000 *per Annum* in supporting them for many Years; whereas all the Acquisitions the *Hollanders* made by Sea and Land, were for themselves, *England* reap'd no Profit from the War; and therefore it was thought reasonable, the *Dutch* should bear the Charges of it, if the Queen furnish'd them with Troops.

By this Treaty therefore, the States were oblig'd to maintain all the *English* Forces in their Service, and to pay the Queen's Garrisons in the *Brill Flushing*, and the rest of the cautionary Towns: They were also to furnish her Majesty with forty Men of War, five thousand

thousand Foot, and a thousand Horse, if she should have occasion for them in the *Spanish War*: And as to the Money due to the Queen, which amounted to 8,000,000 of Livres, or 800,000 Pounds Sterling; they were to repay 300,000 Livres every Year during the War, and 20,000 Livres *per Annum* after the Peace, till the whole Debt was paid.

A.D. 1598
A. 40 Eliz.

The War in *Ireland* having been very ill manag'd of late Years; it was propos'd the sending over a Governour, who might retrieve her Majesty's Affairs in that Kingdom: Whereupon the Earl of *Essex* named Sir *George Carew*; and when the Queen seem'd more inclin'd to Sir *William Knolles*, *Essex*, in Contempt, rudely turn'd his Back upon her; at which piece of Insolence, the Queen was so provok'd, that she hit him a Box on the Ear, and bid him go, and be hang'd: Whereupon he laid his Hand upon his Sword, and swore, he would not have put up such an Affront from her Father *Henry VIII*; and, in a great Rage, left the Court: However, at the Importunity of his Friends, he was prevail'd on to make a formal Submission, and was restor'd to Favour.

The Q. strikes the Earl of Essex.

In the mean time, the Lord-Treasurer *Burleigh*, having liv'd to see the new Treaty with the *Dutch* concluded, which was one of the last Transactions he was concern'd in, died of the Gout in the seventy-eighth Year of his Age: Of whom *Cambden* gives the greatest Character of any Minister of that Age, as well for his Probity and Learning, as the great Endowments of his Mind: And, what is still more remarkable, after he had been a Minister of State upwards of forty Years, he at last went off the Stage with universal Applause. *Philip II*, King

Lord-Treasurer Cecil dies.

See the Life of the Lord Burleigh; Printed 1732.

A.D. 1598 King of *Spain*, the great Enemy of the Kingdom, died in *September* the same Year, in the seventy-second Year of his Age, being, according to some Authors, devour'd by Lice; but this is a Circumstance *Cambden* does not mention: Whatever brought him to his End, his Death rendred *England*, as well as *Holland*, much more secure than they were in his Reign. He had just before his Death marry'd his Daughter *Isabel*, the Infanta, to the Archduke *Albert*, and given him, with her, the *Low-Countries* as a Dowry.

Another Attempt to poison the Queen.

Still the *English* Jesuits did not cease to practise against the Queen's Life. *Walpole*, of that Order, who resided in *Spain*, so insinuated himself into one *Squier* there, who had been an Under-groom in the Queen's Stables, that he did not only prevail on the Man to change his Religion, but to promise to poison the Queen and the Earl of *Essex* with an Ointment *Walpole* had prepar'd: Accordingly, *Squier* came to *England*, and, as he was directed, rubb'd this Ointment on the Pommel of the Queen's Saddle, and on the Earl of *Essex*'s Chair; which not producing the Effect expected, *Walpole* imagin'd that *Squier* had deceiv'd him, and, *Judas-like*, says *Cambden*, procur'd *Squier*, whom he had drawn in, to be charg'd with High Treason; who, finding his Confessor had been his Accuser, discover'd the whole Matter, and was executed for it.

Sir Thomas Bodley furnishes the Oxford Library with Books.

This Year, that great Patron of Learning, Sir Thomas Bodley, began to repair the publick Library at *Oxford*, first founded by *Humphrey*, Duke of *Gloucester*, but stripp'd of all its Books in the Reign of *Edward VII*. This Gentleman refurnish'd it with a vast Collection of Books from all Parts of the World, partly at his

his own Costs, and partly by the Contributions of his Friends, and it has ever since retain'd the Name of the *Bodleian* Library.

A.D. 1598

A. 40 Eliz.



Several of the Nobility and People of Distinction still continued to fit out private Men of War, to annoy the *Spaniards* and enrich themselves; among whom, the most eminent at this time was *George Clifford*, Earl of *Cumberland*; who fitting out a Fleet of eleven Ships at his own Expence, plunder'd *Porto Rico*, and several other *Spanish* Settlements in *America*; but he did not meet with such Success in this Expedition, as in some former Attempts; the *Spaniards* being now upon their Guard on that Side, and fortifying every Place where an Enemy might be expected.

The Earl of *Cumberland's* Expedition against the *Spanish West-Indies*.

As the Queen was pretty well advanc'd in Years, some People were endeavouring to sow Diffension between her Majesty and the King of *Scots*, to induce her to settle the Succession in another Family; and, among other Things, it was insinuated, that he was Popishly affected: But the Queen gave very little Credit to these Reports, and continu'd still to cultivate a Friendship with that Prince: She even suffer'd Books to be printed, which suggested, that his Title to the Crown of *England*, after her Death, was indisputable. Her Majesty, at the same time, diverted herself, as *Cambden* relates, with rendring *Horace* into *English*, and had before translated *Salust's* History of the *Jugurthian* War; which shews, that Affairs of State, how arduous or intricate soever, did not ingross her whole Attention.

False Suggestions of the King of *Scots*.

The Q's Diversions.

The latter end of this Year, died the celebrated Civilian Doctor *Richard Cofins*, Dean of the Arches, Author of the Defence of the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction; and, about the

Dr. *Cofins* dies.

A.D. 1598 same time, the inimitable Poet, *Edmund*
A. 40 Eliz. *Spencer*, a Native of *London*, and educated in
 the University of *Cambridge*: He was Secre-
Spencer, tary to the Lord *Grey*, Deputy of *Ireland*; but
 the cele- had scarce fixed himself in an elegant Retire-
 brated ment in that Kingdom, and got a little Leisure
 Poet, dies. to pursue his Studies, *Cambden* observes, but
 the Rebels plunder'd his House, and oblig'd
 him to return to *England*, as poor as any of
 the Fraternity; and, dying not long after, he
 was interr'd in *Westminster-Abbey*, attended to
 his Grave by his Brethren, the Poets, who ex-
 press'd more than ordinary Veneration for
 him.

And now the treacherous *Tirouen*, who had
 made his Submission and obtain'd a Pardon,
 broke out into Rebellion again, and laid Siege
 to the important Fortrefs of *Blackwater*, which
 the Earl of *Ormond* sent Sir *Henry Bagnal* to
 relieve; but his Forces being too much di-
 vided in their March, the Rebels fell upon
 them separately, and kill'd *Bagnal* on the
 Spot, with fifteen hundred of his Men: Soon
 after which, the Garrison of *Blackwater* sur-
 render'd. This Success furnished the Rebels
 with Arms and Ammunition, and gave *Tirouen*
 such a mighty Name, according to *Cambden*,
 all over the Kingdom, that he was look'd on
 as the *Saviour of the Nation*, and the Protec-
 tor of their Liberties, the whole Province of
Munster revolting to him in an Instant: Where-
 upon, the Native *Irish* plunder'd and burnt all
 the Castles and Towns in possession of the
English there, and suffer'd very few of them to
 escape with their Lives. The Earl of *Tirouen*
 had recourse to his usual Dissimulation, pretend-
 ing he was ready to submit to the Government
 upon equitable Terms; and writing to the
 King

Tirouen de-
 feats the
 Queen's
 Forces.

King of *Spain* at the same time, boasting of his Victories, and inviting that Prince to invade the Kingdom; assuring him, that he would never make Peace with the *English*, if he was supported by the *Spaniards*.

A. D. 1598

A. 40 Eliz.

The Queen's Affairs in *Ireland* being in this desperate State, her Majesty determin'd to send over a Lord-Lieutenant of some Figure at the Head of a powerful Army, to reduce the Rebels; and pitch'd upon *Charles Blunt*, Lord *Montjoy*, for this Service; to whom the Earl of *Essex* objected his Want of Experience in Military Affairs: And, when others were recommended to that Post, he still shew'd his Dislike to every Person named; till, at length, the Queen and Council found he was desirous of that Command himself: Whereupon it was resolv'd, to make him Lord-Lieutenant of that Kingdom, and General of the Army: In which, both his Friends and Enemies agreed; his Friends, says *Cambden*, to do him a Favour; and his Enemies, to get him remov'd from Court, and to furnish him with an Opportunity of effecting his own Ruin: For that Writer insinuates, that *Essex* had a View to the Crown of *England*, after the Queen's Decease at least; and, as he was already the Darling of the People, wanted only an Army at his Command to secure it to him.

A. D. 1599

A. 41 Eliz.

The Earl of *Essex* made Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

He has a View to the Crown.

His pretended Friends represented to him, that he was descended from the Royal Families of *Scotland* and *England*, and derived his Title to *England* from *Cecily Bouchier*, his Great Grandmother; descended from *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, the youngest Son of *Edward III*; and from *Richard*, Earl of *Cambridge*: They also magnify'd his Courage, his Conduct and Piety, to the Skies. Thus soothing his Vanity

His Descent from the Royal Family made out.

A.D. 1599 and Ambition, while at the same time (says my Author) they were using all Arts to undermine him, knowing well, that the Vehemency of his Spirit would conspire, with their Endeavours, to ruin and undo him; and that there was not a likelier Means to trip up the Heels of an aspiring Man, than to push him upon an Office he was altogether unfit for: And, as quick and penetrating a Person as he was, he either did not, or wou'd not, see the bottom of their Designs.

A. 41 Eliz.

The Earl sets out for Ireland.

He acts contrary to his Orders.

Wastes his Army without coming to a Battel.

The Earl receiv'd from the Queen an unlimited Commission to carry on the War in *Ireland*, or put an end to it as he saw fit, with a Power of pardoning High-Treason, and even of *Tirouen* himself; an Authority never before granted to a Deputy of *Ireland*. He set out from *London* the latter end of *March*, at the Head of a gallant Army of twenty thousand Men, being accompanied by a fine Appearance of the Nobility and Gentry, and received the loud Acclamations of the People as he pass'd. He no sooner landed in *Ireland*, but he made the Earl of *Southampton* General of the Horse, contrary to the Queen's express Directions; whose Anger that Nobleman had incurr'd by marrying without her Leave. And tho' his principal Instructions were to attack the grand Rebel *Tirouen*, and not protract the War, according to the Advice he himself had frequently given, he spent his Time in reducing some inconsiderable Places in *Munster*, without endeavouring to come to a general Engagement with the Enemy; losing great part of his Army in little Skirmishes, or by Sickness, without affecting any thing considerable; for which the Queen reprimanded him: But he excus'd himself, as having follow'd the Advice

vice of the Council of *Ireland*, and desir'd her Majesty would send over a fresh Reinforcement of Troops, to enable him to prosecute the War with Success; in which also she was pleas'd to indulge him; but he let her Majesty know soon after, that he could enter into no further Action that Campaign: On the contrary, he had several private Conferences with *Tirouen* the grand Rebel, and even granted him a Truce; which provok'd the Queen to the last degree, he having frequently protested against the like Conduct in *Norris* and other Generals in that War: And indeed the Queen began now to suspect him of some ill Designs, being heard to say, that *Essex* had something else in his Head than the Service of his Country. She wrote him a very sharp Letter therefore, reflecting on his Management the whole Campaign, and the Dishonour he had done her Arms, by entering into a Truce with Rebels, when she had sent him to reduce them, with the finest Army that ever appear'd in *Ireland*.

A.D. 1599
A. 41 Eliz.

Has Conferences with *Tirouen*.

Is reprimanded by the Queen.

The Earl could not bear these Reproofs, but immediately appear'd extremely discontented; proposing to return to *England* with a select Body of his Troops, and reduce his Adversaries there by Force. Of which it is suppos'd, the Queen receiv'd Advice; for she immediately rais'd another Army of six thousand Men; three thousand of whom she appointed for the Guard of her own Person. However, *Essex* being dissuaded from this Project, her Majesty soon after disbanded those Troops, and the Earl return'd to *England*, only with some few Friends, to defend his Conduct. But in this he was guilty of another Offence; the Queen having forbidden him to quit the Kingdom till

He resolves to come to *England* with a Body of Troops.

The Q. raises Troops to oppose his Designs.

A.D. 1599 till Things were better establiſh'd ; and indeed he was no ſooner gone, but *Tirouen* broke the Truce, and committed his uſual Ravages.

A. 41 Eliz.
He comes over with a few Friends only.

Effex preſented himſelf to the Queen, at *Nonſuch*, early one Morning, when he was not expected ; and was receiv'd however with ſome Marks of her Maſteſty's Favour, tho' not with the Freedom he uſed to be : He endeavour'd to make an Apology for his Actions the laſt Campaign ; but it was ſo far from being ſatisfactory, that he was order'd to remain confin'd in the Lord-Keeper's Houſe. Still the People continu'd their Affection for the Earl, and imagin'd he had great Injuſtice done him. Libels were diſpers'd on this Occaſion, reflecting on her Maſteſty and her Council ; and ſome Puritanical Miniſters began to expreſs their Diſaffection from the Pulpit : Whereupon it was thought fit to examine the Earl's Conduct in Council, and make the People ſenſible of the Reaſons of his Diſgrace. Here the Lord-Keeper, the Lord-Treaſurer, the Admiral and Secretary, all declaim'd againſt the Perverſeneſs of the Earl's Proceedings ; and it was ſuggeſted, that in private Conferences with *Tirouen*, he had ſome unjuſtifiable and ambitious Views : Whereupon it was reſolv'd, he ſhould remain confin'd in the Lord-Keeper's Houſe ; and he ſeem'd to be ſo ſenſible of his Errors, that for ſome time he gave himſelf up to Divine Contemplations, declaring, that he had taken his Leave of the World.

And is confin'd.

His Conduct examin'd in Council.

He ſeems very penitent.

A.D. 1600

A. 42 Eliz.

The Queen's Treafury growing low, ſhe was advis'd to raiſe Money, by confirming ſuch Grants as had been made to the Subject of Crown-Lands ; for there were a kind of Informers, call'd Concealers, who gave the Nobility

Nobility and Gentry great Disturbance at this time, by obliging them to produce their Titles; and where they were found defective, or that the Grantees had possess'd themselves of more Lands than were mention'd in their Grants, they were adjudg'd to have no Title to them; thereupon the Crown took Possession of such Lands again, as having been fraudulently conceal'd: The Grantees therefore, to avoid such Inquisitions for the future, were content to pay the Queen considerable Sums, to confirm their respective Titles, which supply'd the Place of a Parliamentary Aid.

A.D. 1600

A. 42 Eliz.

Money rais'd by confirming Titles to Crown-Lands.

In the mean time, *Tirouen* was so elated with his Successes, that he took upon him to act as Sovereign of *Ireland*, creating Noblemen, and conferring Honours at his Pleasure; particularly, he made *James Fitz-Thomas* Earl of *Desmond* and General of his Forces in *Munster*, and advanc'd *Florence Mac-Carty* to the Title of *Macarty More*: He also march'd the whole Length of *Ireland* from North to South, obliging all People to submit to him, except the garrison'd Towns, and even insulted the capital City of *Dublin*, founding his Trumpets in the very Suburbs: Whereupon the Queen constituted the Lord *Montjoy* Deputy of *Ireland*; who immediately embark'd for that Kingdom with a Reinforcement of Troops, and enter'd upon Action as soon as he arriv'd, tho' it was then the Depth of Winter: His first Attempt was to intercept *Tirouen*, as he retir'd from *Munster* to *Ulster*; but in this he did not meet with Success: Afterwards he sent a Body of four thousand Men by Sea to the North of *Ireland*; who landing at *Derry* (now *London-Derry*) fortified, and left a strong Garrison there: Then

Tirouen acts as Sovereign of *Ireland*.

Ld *Mont-joy* Governor of *Ireland*.

A.D. 1600

A. 42 Eliz.

Restores
the Q's
Affairs.Sir Edw.
Blaney, the
Lord Bla-
ney's An-
cestor.The Pope
and King
of Spain
encourage
the Irish
Rebels.A Treaty
between
England
and Spain.

Then he march'd in Person to *Mogberry* near *Dundalk*; and, having possess'd himself of that important Place, erected a Fortrefs near *Armagh*, of which he constituted that gallant Officer *Sir Edward Blaney*, Governour.

From whom, the Right Honourable *Charles Talbot*, Lord *Blaney*, and Baron of *Monaghan* (now a Student in *St. John's College* in *Cambridge*, a Nobleman of great Expectations) is descended.

On the other hand, the Pope, to encourage the *Irish* Rebels, sent them a Brief, containing plenary Indulgence, or Pardon of all their Sins, which, it was presum'd, would render them fearless in their righteous War against their natural Sovereign. The King of *Spain* also sent the Rebels a Supply of Arms, Ammunition and Money, with Promises of more, if they persisted in their Disobedience; but the Lord *Montjoy* so surrounded *Fitz-Owen*, by his Forts and Garrisons, that his People were cut off whenever they ventur'd out of their Fastnesses in the Woods and Bogs; and *Sir George Carew*, president of *Munster*, observing the like Conduct there, the *Irish* were every-where, almost in the open Country, oblig'd to submit to her Majesty again: Which Tergiversation, as they term'd it, they begg'd the Pope would pardon; inasmuch as they remain'd determin'd in their Hearts to espouse the Cause of the King of *Spain* and the Catholics again, whenever Opportunity offer'd.

The King of *Spain* however propos'd to enter into a Negotiation of Peace with the Queen of *England*, by the Mediation of *France*; and *Bologn* was agreed on for the Place of Treaty; whither the Plenipotentiaries of both Kingdoms resorted: But not being

able

able to settle the Point of Precedency between *England* and *Spain*, they return'd without effecting any thing ; tho' possibly some Expedient would have been found to adjust this Ceremony, if there had not been Matters of greater Importance to obstruct a Peace: One of which was, the Resolution of the *Spaniards* not to include the *Dutch* in the Treaty; while the *English*, on the other hand, were determin'd to make no Peace without them.

A.D. 1600

A. 42 Eliz.

Comes to nothing.

The States, in the mean time, came to a Resolution to attack the Maritime Towns in *Flanders*, and make themselves Masters of that Coast, if possible: Whereupon Prince *Maurice* of *Nassau* march'd at the Head of seventeen thousand Men (whereof fifteen hundred were *English*, commanded by Sir *Francis Vere*) to invest *Newport*: Of which the Archduke *Albert*, Governour of *Flanders*, receiving Advice, assembled an Army, and attack'd the Confederates on the second of *July*, before they had form'd the Siege; but was defeated, and lost nine thousand Men in the Engagement: To which Victory, the *English* Auxiliaries, under *Vere*, who commanded the first Line of Foot, very much contributed; tho' they purchas'd their Honour dearly, eight hundred of them being kill'd upon the Spot, and Sir *Francis*, with most of his Officers, wounded.

The Battel of *Newport*.

There happening some Differences at this time between the *French* and *English*, concerning Ships taken at Sea by the Subjects of either Nation, on one Pretence or other, and on account of new Duties laid on the *English* Merchandizes by the *French*; these Matters were amicably adjusted by a Treaty, and the *French*

Disputes between *France* and *England* adjusted.

A.D. 1600 King repaid the Queen part of the Money he was indebted to her.

A. 42 Eliz.

A Difference with Denmark concerning the Fishery.

Other Disputes arose between the *English* and *Danes* concerning the Fishery on the Coast of *Norway*, which the *Danes* pretended to appropriate to themselves; while the *English* affirm'd, that the Seas were open to all Nations: And, if this was disputed, they affirm'd, they had a Right to fish on that Coast, by Treaty between the two Kingdoms; both which the *Danes* deny'd; nor was the Difference fully accommodated till the next Reign.

The East India Company erected.

About this Time the *English East India Company* was erected by the Queen's Letters Patents; and they establish'd their Factories in *China*, *Japan*, *Cadia*, *Amboyna*, *Java*, *Sumatra*, and several more of the Oriental Islands; but were, in the next Reign, barbarously expell'd from the most beneficial Branches of that rich Trade by their treacherous Allies the *Dutch*, who were oblig'd to *England* for their very Being. The Tragedy of *AMBOYNA*, where the *Hollanders* tortur'd and cut the Throats of our Factories, and thereby totally excluded us from our Share of the fine Spices, can never be forgotten while there is any Spirit left in our *English* Nation.

Depriv'd of the best Branch of their Trade by the *Dutch*.

The Pope's Briefs to exclude *K. James* from the Crown.

And now the Queen being arriv'd at a good old Age, and likely to be succeeded by *James VI.* of *Scotland*, a Protestant Prince, the Pope made his utmost Efforts to prevent the Crown of *England* descending to him: He dispatch'd two Briefs to *England*; one directed to the Popish Clergy, and the other to the Laity of that Persuasion; prohibiting them to permit any Person to ascend the Throne, who would not oblige himself by an Oath to advance the Popish Religion (a bare Toleration he

he would not be satisfied with :) And the *Ruthuens* or *Gowries*, whose Father had been put to Death for High-Treason in *Scotland*, were prompted at the same time to assassinate King *James* ; in which they had very near succeeded, having, by some Stratagem, got the King into their House ; but were prevented by the King's Servants breaking in upon them, and both the *Ruthuens* kill'd in the Attempt. For a full Relation whereof, I refer the Reader to Bishop *Spotswood's* History of the Church of *Scotland*, p. 458.

A.D. 1600

A. 42 Eliz.

Gowries
Attempt to
assassinate
that King.

Still the Earl of *Effex* remain'd confin'd in the Keeper's House ; from whence he sent her Majesty several submissive Letters : And she was at length prevail'd on to permit him to return to his own House, accompanied by Sir *Richard Berkley*, who was to have an Eye upon his Conduct : And, as the common People look'd upon him to be perfectly innocent, and were apt to reflect upon her Majesty for treating him with too great Severity ; she order'd him to undergo a kind of Tryal, before the Council and some of the Nobility and Judges, at the Lord-Keeper's House ; where the principal Articles of his Charge were, that he had, contrary to his Orders, made the Earl of *Northampton* General of the Horse ; conferr'd the Honour of Knighthood without Authority ; drawn down his Forces into *Munster*, instead of pursuing the grand Rebel *Tirouen*, and held a secret Conference with him ; and that he had in his Letters, reflected on the Queen as passionate, impolitick, and void of all manner of Sincerity and Justice. Whereupon the Earl kneeling upon one Knee, thank'd her Majesty, that he was not try'd in the *Star-Chamber* ; and said, he would not

The Earl
of *Effex*
permitted
to return
to his
House
with a
Keeper.

His Con-
duct how-
ever exa-
min'd.

He throws
himself on
the Q's
Goodness.

A.D. 1600 dispute with the Queen, or go about to excuse his Failings; only protested, he was still a loyal Subject, and never departed from his Allegiance so much as in Thought; but could not forbear however offering some Apology for his Actions: Whereupon the Lord-Keeper interrupted him, and put him in mind of his first Resolution, to throw himself absolutely on the Queen's Mercy; who, instead of causing him to be prosecuted for Treason, had only charg'd him with Breach of Orders: That he would do well therefore not to palliate his Faults, and insist on the Innocency of his Heart, when he had manifestly acted contrary to the express Orders of his Prince: Whereupon the Earl thought fit to remain silent: And the Lord-Keeper proceeded to pronounce the Sentence, *viz.* That the Earl should be remov'd from the Council, suspended from his Offices of Earl Marshal and Master of the Ordinance, and remain confin'd during the Queen's Pleasure; but he was permitted to retain his Place of Master of the Horse, by the Queen's express Direction; and, in a little time, had Liberty given him to retire to his House in the Country without a Keeper: Whereupon it was generally conjectur'd, that her Majesty intended to restore him to her Favour again: However it appears, that she design'd to mortify him for the present, and make a farther Trial of the Sincerity of his Repentance and Submission; for she requir'd him to keep at a Distance from her Person and the Court.

He is de-
priv'd of
his Places.

Has Leave
to go into
the Coun-
try with-
out a
Keeper.

His Mes-
sage to the
Queen
thereupon.

The Earl, at his going into the Country, acquainted her Majesty by the Lord *Howard*, that he kiss'd her Majesty's Hands and the Rod that corrected him; but said, he should never recover his usual Chearfulness, till he

was

was vouchsaf'd an Admission to that Presence *A.D. 1600*
 which had always influenc'd his Happiness; *A. 42 Eliz.*
 that he was resolv'd to make amends for his Error, and to say with *Nebuchadnezzar*, *Let my dwelling be with the beasts of the field, &c. till it shall please the Queen to restore my Understanding to me.* But notwithstanding all his prudent Resolutions; no sooner did *Cuff*, his Secretary, and some others of his Retinue, suggest, that he had debased himself too much, and could never recover his Reputation in the World, but by some bold Attempt to remove her Enemies from Court; and the Queen at the same time refusing to renew his Patent for farming the sweet Wines (which was of no small Value;) than he relaps'd again, and declar'd, that it was apparent now the Queen and his Enemies were resolv'd to crush him, and sink him into the Condition of a Beggar: Whereupon he sent for the Earl of *Southampton* (who was retir'd to *Flanders* to avoid the Queen's Displeasure) and returning himself to *London*, kept Open-house, entertaining all such as were disaffected to the Government, especially discarded Officers, and Men of the Sword. Here he frequently let fall Expressions that sufficiently manifested his Discontent; which his Enemies, who had Spies about him, did not fail to carry to the Queen, with malicious Improvements of their own: Among others, it is reported, he said, *That he was reduc'd to the Condition of a private Man, and could not fawn himself into Favour again: That he had been unjustly confin'd: That Princes had but a limited Power: That his Enemies had wounded him in every Pore; but let them look as big as they pleas'd, he would never be the Slave that should cringe to them.* And what piqu'd her more

He relapses.

He encourages all Malecontents.

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

A. D. 1601 more than all the rest (if he ever said it) was,
A. 43 Eliz. *That the Queen was grown an old Woman, and*
as crooked within as without. And while he
 left no popular Arts unattempted to captivate
 the People at home, he endeavour'd to strengthen
 his Interest by engaging the King of *Scots* on
 his Side : He suggested to him, that the Mi-
 nistry were gain'd by the Infanta of *Spain* ; and
 that he would do well to send Ambassadors to
England, to press his being declar'd Successor
 to the Crown ; and to procure an Alteration
 in the Ministry, lest his Expectations should
 be defeated.

Endea-
 vours to
 bring the
 King of
Scots over
 to his Party

Courts
 both Pu-
 ritans and
 Papists.

His Coun-
 cil.

Their De-
 bates.

The Earl also courted both the Puritans and
 Papists, pretending to commiserate their hard
 Circumstances ; and even hired disbanded
 Soldiers, and People of desperate Fortunes,
 to defend his House, forming a kind of Coun-
 cil of War for the better Execution of his De-
 signs : Among whom, *Cambden* mentions the
 Earl of *Southampton*, Sir *Charles Danvers*,
 Sir *Ferdinando Gorger*, Sir *John Davis*, and
John Littleton. These assembled frequently at
Drury-House ; and a List was produc'd to them
 of 120 Noblemen, Knights, and Persons of
 Distinction, that *Essex* imagin'd to be his
 Friends. Here it was debated, whether they
 should seize on the Court, or the Tower, or
 on both at once : And it was the general Opi-
 nion, to attack the Court first : Sir *Christopher*
Blunt was to have seiz'd on the Palace-Gate,
Davis on the Hall, *Danvers* on the Guard-
 Chamber and Presence-Chamber, and *Essex*
 was at the same time to advance from the
Meuse (the Queen's Stables) with a select Body
 of Men, and, on his Knees, to beg the Queen
 to remove his Enemies from Court : And it
 was afterwards confess'd, that he intended to
 have

have call'd a Parliament, and made an Alteration in the Government. A.D. 1601

But while the Confederates were waiting the Arrival of the Ambassadors from *Scotland*, and for a favourable Opportunity to put their Design in execution, the great Confluence of People to *Effex-House*, under the Pretence of hearing Sermons, and some Expressions their Preachers let fall, intimating, that Kings them-

A. 43 Eliz.

The Earl of *Effex* is commanded to attend the Queen's Council.

selves were accountable to the Great-men of the Realm, alarm'd the Government, and the Earl of *Effex* was commanded by Secretary *Herbert* to attend the Council : But a Note being put into his Hands at the same time, advising him to take Care of himself, the Earl excus'd himself, under Pretence of some Indisposition ; and having assembled his Friends again, it was resolv'd to lay aside their Design of seizing the Court ; both because they had not yet furnish'd themselves with Arms for such an Enterprize, and that the Government, being appriz'd of their Intention, had already doubled the Guards. Then it was propos'd, to march into the City, where, they presum'd, their Friends were very numerous ; which, while some oppos'd, a pretended Friend appear'd amongst them, affirming, that the Citizens were entirely at their Devotion : Others inform'd *Effex*, that Sir *Thomas Smith*, the Sheriff, had engag'd a thousand of the Train-bands in their Service, who were ready to join them on their Appearance in the City. And this Intelligence it was, whether true or false, which determin'd *Effex* to enter the City the next Morning, with two hundred Gentlemen, just before Sermon was ended at *St. Paul's* ; where he propos'd to acquaint the Aldermen and People with the Reasons of his

Which he refuses.

A.D. 1601 his taking Arms, and desire their Assistance against his Enemies : Which if they refused, it was resolv'd to withdraw to some other Part of the Kingdom ; but if they join'd him, to make use of that Force to get Admission to her Majesty.

A. 43 Eliz

The Earl's
Friends
assemble
at *Essex-
House* in
a hostile
manner.

Early on Sunday Morning, being the 8th of *February*, there resorted to *Essex-House*, the Earls of *Rutland* and *Southampton*, the Lords *Sands*, *Porter* and *Monteagle*, and about three hundred Persons of Distinction; whom he acquainted, that he went in Danger of his Life ; and that he was resolv'd to present himself before the Queen, to clear his Innocence from the Aspersions of his Enemies. Then the Earl order'd his House to be lock'd up, and that they should stand upon their Defence, and that no Man should be suffer'd to go in or out, only Sir *Ferdinando Gorgier* was allow'd to have a Conference with Sir *Walter Raleigh* upon the *Thames* ; to what purpose, is uncertain ; but many suspected *Gorgier* of betraying the Designs of the Malecontents to the Court from the beginning.

Four of
the Privy
Council
sent to *Essex-House*.

The Queen being now perfectly acquainted with *Essex's* Design, commanded the Lord-Mayor to see that the Citizens attended in their Houses, ready to execute her Orders ; and sent some of the Privy-Council, viz. the Lord-Keeper, the Earl of *Worcester*, Sir *William Knolles*, and the Lord Chief-Justice *Popham* to *Essex*, to know the Reason of this Tumult ; And the Lord-Keeper, with the other three, being, with difficulty, let into the Courtyard, there found a confus'd Multitude, with *Essex* and *Southampton* in the middle of them ; of whom the Lord-Keeper demanded the Reason of their assembling in this manner ; and

said,

said, That if they had suffer'd any Grievances, they should be redress'd ; but *Effex* answer'd aloud, *There was a Design to murder him in his Bed : That his Letters had been counterfeited ; and they were met there in their Defence, since nothing would satisfy his Enemies, but his Blood.* And the Mob cry'd out, *Let us be gone, they do but abuse your Patience, and design to destroy you :* Whereupon the Lord-Keeper commanded the Mob, upon their Allegiance, to lay down their Arms and disperse ; but *Effex*, having let the Lord-Keeper and his Brethren of the Council into the House, lock'd them up, and plac'd a Guard over them : Then he march'd into the City at the Head of two hundred Men, arm'd only with their Swords, and was join'd by the Earl of *Bedford* and the Lord *Cromwel*, and some other Gentlemen, as he went along : When he was got into the City, he cry'd out, *For the Queen ! my Life is in danger !* And having pass'd the principal Streets, stopp'd at Sheriff *Smith's* House in *Fenchurch-street*. Abundance of People came out to gaze, but not a single Citizen join'd his Company, tho' he entreated them to arm themselves in his Defence : And what was still a greater Damp to him, the Sheriff, whom he depended on, had left his House, and was gone to the Lord-Mayor's : In the mean time, *Dethirk*, King at Arms, enter'd the City with the Lord *Burleigh*, and proclaim'd *Effex* and his Accomplices Traytors ; as did the Earl of *Cumberland*, and Sir *Thomas Gerrad* Knight-Marshal in other parts of the Town : Which *Effex* receiving Advice of, and that the Lord Admiral was advancing against him at the Head of a great Body of Men, he determin'd to return to his House again, and make his

A.D. 1601

A 43 Eliz.

Who command the People to disperse. The Counsellors imprison'd in *Effex-House*.

The Earl marches into the City.

No body joins him.

He is proclaim'd a Traytor.

A D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

He is op-
posed, and
returns to
his House
by Water.

He surren-
ders at
discretion.

Essex,
Southamp-
ton, &c
brought to
their Tri-
als.

Peace with the Queen, by means of the Privy-Counsellors he had in his Custody there; but his Friend *Gorges* was too quick for him, and releas'd those Gentlemen before *Essex* arriv'd, going along with them to *White-hall*.

At the West-end of *St. Paul's*, *Essex*, finding the Street barracado'd against him, and a Body of Troops ready to dispute his Passage, order'd his Men to fall on, and endeavour to break thro': In which Attempt *Blunt* was wounded and made Prisoner, and some others hurt on both Sides; but most of the Malecontents, on this Repulse, dispers'd: And *Essex*, finding it impossible to open a Passage by Land, went down to the Water-side, with some few of his Friends, and got home by Water; whither he was immediately pursu'd by the Admiral, who invest'd his House on all Sides, and summon'd him to surrender. Most of his Friends were for dying with their Swords in their Hands, and selling their Lives as dear as they could: But *Essex*, at length, consented to surrender at Discretion; and, it being now ten o'clock at Night, he and *Southampton* were carry'd to *Lambeth*, and the next Morning committed to the *Tower*, the rest of their Accomplices being put into other Prisons.

On the 19th of *February*, the Earls of *Essex* and *Southampton* were brought to their Trials before their Peers in *Westminster Hall*, being charg'd with High Treason, in conspiring against the Queen and Government; particularly, that they had resolv'd to surprize her Majesty in her Palace; that they had broken out into Rebellion, imprison'd several Members of the Council, incited the Citizens of *London* to Sedition and Rebellion, assaulted the Queen's Forces in the publick Streets, and held

held out *Effex-house* against her Majesty : To which they answer'd, That they had no Design against the Queen's Life, and only consulted their own Defence, and consequently were not guilty of High Treason. But the Court inform'd them, That a Conspiracy to put any Restraint or Force upon the Sovereign, to compel her to remove her Counsellors in any Instance, was interpreted a Conspiracy against her Life, and High Treason by the Law of *England*. But as to the Particulars of the Charge and Defence, I must refer the Reader to the *State Trials*; and only observe here, that they were convicted by the unanimous Votes of their Peers. *Effex* afterwards confess'd a great deal more than appear'd in his Trial; particularly, that Sir *Henry Nevil*, who was then going Ambassador to *France*, was one of his Accomplices; whereupon that Gentleman was countermanded, and taken into Custody. He also discover'd several others in *Scotland*, and the *Low-Countries*, and charg'd the Lord *Montjoy* Deputy of *Ireland*, and several Persons of Distinction in *England*, as his Accomplices, who were not thought on before; but the Queen disssembled her Knowledge of their Guilt, and call'd scarce any of them to account.

A D. 1601

A. 43 El. 2.

They are convicted.

Still, had *Effex* condescended to ask the Queen's Pardon, some have conjectur'd, she wou'd have spar'd his Life; but his neglecting this, and his declaring the Queen cou'd never be safe while he liv'd, determin'd her to order his Execution. That, after she had sign'd the Warrant, she alter'd her Mind, and countermanded it, which shews how unwilling her Majesty was to take him off. He had been bred up in the Court from his Cradle, and a

The Q. hesitates as to the Execution of *Effex*.

A.D. 1601 Favourite there a great many Years: The
 A.43 Eliz. Queen could not think of putting him to death
 therefore without a sensible Concern; but considering afterwards how dangerous a Man he was, his Popularity and the multitude of his Friends, she renew'd her Order for his Execution a few Hours after she had countermanded them; and his Head was struck off in the
 He is beheaded. Tower on the twenty-fifth Day of February.

The Story of the Q's Passion for him, a Fable. As to any criminal Passion the Queen had for this Nobleman, as some Writers have suggested, there can be very little room to suspect it; if it be consider'd, the Queen was arriv'd to a good old Age before *Effex* was advanc'd to Man's Estate: And as we have very good Reasons for her Fondness for him, namely, his being bred up in her Family from his Infancy, and his having done her Majesty and his Country good Service in several Instances, I cannot see why we should look out for other Inducements of her Majesty's Tenderness for him.

Four of his Accomplices executed. Several more of the Conspirators were try'd and condemn'd; but only four of the principal of them were executed, viz. *Cuffe* the Secretary, whom the Earl charg'd with being his chief Adviser; *Merrick*, his Steward; *Sir Christopher Blunt*, and *Sir Robert Danvers*: *Blunt*, in his Speech on the Scaffold, declar'd, That when *Effex* was in *Ireland*, he told him, he resolv'd to send over his best Troops, and to land them at *Milford Haven* in *Wales*, and, after he had assembled more Forces, to march directly to *London*; but that the Prisoner dissuaded *Effex* from it as a desperate Design. *Blunt* confess'd indeed, that he had advis'd the Earl to get the Court into his Power, that he might make Conditions for himself;

himself ; and that, in all their Debates, they A.D. 1601 fully intended not to touch her Majesty's Person ; yet *had the Business succeeded, he would not say but it might have cost her Majesty her Life.* A. 43 Eliz.

From the whole it may reasonably be conjectured, that if *Effex* had met with Success, he would have mounted the Throne of *England* : Not that all, or perhaps any of his Party had this View when they engag'd in the Enterprize ; nay, *Effex* himself might have no other Design *originally*, than to compel the Queen to remove his Enemies from the Court, and put the Administration of Affairs into his Hands : But when he had gone thus far, he would have found there was no retreating : He must have taken away the Queen's Life, or endanger'd his own, if he had given her an Opportunity of recovering her Authority again ; and it is easy to see, which he would have chosen, tho' he had not been influenc'd either by Ambition or Revenge : And these seem to have a great Share in his Constitution. It has been observ'd already, that his Friends endeavour'd, in Print, to make him a Title to the Crown, and that he could never forgive the Blow the Queen gave him : Add to this, the Danger he and his Friends must have been expos'd to while the Queen liv'd ; and the Prospect they had of advancing all their Fortunes by her Destruction, and there will be very little room to doubt, that they would in the end have set the Earl upon the Throne. If it be objected, that their Design appears to have been to advance the King of *Scots* to the Crown, with whom they held a Correspondence : This, indeed, might be promised the *Scots*, in order to enlarge and strengthen the Interest of *Effex* ; but, possibly, that Prince's
Name

Remarks
on this E-
vent.

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

Name would have been made use of no longer than while the *Essexian* Party had found themselves establish'd. The *Scotish* and the *Essex* Faction appear'd the same, while the Conspiracy was in the *Embryo*: Nothing more was communicated to King *James* than the securing his Succession, and that *after the Queen's Decease*: All were not to be brought into the Secret of destroying her Majesty; or, which is much the same thing, compelling her to act as the Conspirators should dictate. In all Plots, the People, who are made the Tools of the ambitious Projectors, are let into no more of Secrets, than is necessary to spirit them up against the Prince who is to be attack'd: They are generally, if not always, govern'd by very different Views from those of their Leaders; who, after they have possess'd themselves of Sovereign Power by their Assistance, seldom ask the Advice of those that advanc'd them to it.

The *Scotch* Ambassadors congratulating the Queen on the Discovery of the Plot. But to proceed; the *Scotch* Ambassadors arriving soon after the Plot was discover'd, dropp'd their Design of getting the Succession confirm'd to their Master, and only congratulated the Queen on the Discovery of the Conspiracy, and desired she would settle a Portion of Land upon King *James* in *England*: Which though the Queen did not comply with, she agreed however to grant that Prince an Augmentation of two thousand Pounds *per Annum* to his former Pension, in consideration of his Alliance with her; which is enough to confute *Rapin's* stupid Remarks, *That the King of Scots was concern'd in Essex's Plot to seize her Person*: Nor would her Majesty afterwards have appointed King *James* her Successor, if she had entertain'd the least Suspicion of his being an Accomplice in such a Design; which she

The Q.
augments
the K. of
Scots Pen-
sion.

she could not have been ignorant of, if there had been any Truth in it. *Cambden* relates, that *Essex* made a full Confession to Queen *Elizabeth's* Minister; which being shewn to King *James* some time after his Accession to the Throne of *England*, it brought the Earl and his Friends into great Disesteem with that Prince: And this is a farther Evidence, that *Essex* was very far from communicating the bottom of his Design to King *James*; notwithstanding the malicious Insinuations of the admir'd *Rapin*, in contradiction to *Cambden*, his Author, to whom he is indebted for all that is valuable in his History of this Reign; though *Rapin* makes no Conscience at the same time of calumniating his Benefactor, charging him with Forgery and other scandalous Practices; and indeed, if *Cambden* continues to have any Reputation in *England*, *Rapin* can have none. But to return; the *Spaniards* laying Siege to *Ostend* this Year, of which the *Dutch* had made Sir *Francis Vere* Governour, it was bravely defended by that Gentleman for several Months; after which, the Garrison was chang'd, and the Town continued to defend itself two or three Years, the *Dutch* keeping a constant Communication with the Place by Sea or Land, and furnishing it with fresh Supplies of Men and warlike Stores from time to time. During this memorable Siege, the *French* King came to *Calais*, to view the Condition of his Frontiers: Whereupon the Queen of *England* sent Sir *Tho. Edwards* to him with a Compliment. In return whereof, King *Henry* dispatch'd the Marshal *Biron*, and some other Noblemen, to *England*; where, according to some *French* Writers, the Queen shew'd them the Earl of *Essex's* Skull in her Closet; but

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

Rapin's
scandalous
Reflec-
tions on
the King
of Scots.

The me-
morable
Siege of
Ostend.

An Em-
bassy from
France.

Cambden

A.D. 1601 *Cambden* assures us, it was buried with his Body. Indeed, in discourse with *Biron*, she charg'd the Earl of *Effex* with Ingratitude and Obstinacy, in not asking her Pardon; and advis'd his Master, the *French King*, to use the like Rigour against those who were Traytors to his Government, rather than such a Clemency as might prove fatal to him: Which ought to have been a sufficient Admonition to *Biron* (says *Cambden*) who was at that instant engag'd in desperate Designs against his Prince, and suffer'd the same Punishment as *Effex* had done, not many Months afterwards.

The Par-
liament
meets.

The Parliament meeting on the 27th of *October*, being the tenth and last Parliament of this Reign, was open'd by a Speech of the Lord-Keeper *Egerton's*, who said, her Majesty desir'd, they would use such Dispatch in their Consultations, that they might rise before *Christmas*: And, having mention'd the principal Occurrences of this Reign, and shewn the great Expences her Majesty had been at, in defending her Dominions, and supporting her Allies; he took notice, that the *Spaniards* now openly assisted the Rebels in *Ireland*, and desired a suitable Supply to remove them from thence, and replenish the Treasury.

Supplies
demand-
ed.

The Commons, having chosen *John Crooke* Esq; Recorder of *London*, for their Speaker; he was presented to her Majesty the 30th of *October*, and approv'd. In this Parliament, a Bill was brought in for Restraining the excessive and superfluous Use of Coaches; upon a Suggestion, that Gentlemen would grow unactive and unfit for the Field; and, that the Breed of Riding-horses would be neglected: But it was rejected on the second Reading.

A Bill
brought in
against
Coaches.

The

The Under-sheriff of *Surrey* was taken into Custody by the House of Peers, for arresting *William Hogan*, one of the Queen's Servants : It being resolv'd, that the Queen's Servants were privileg'd from Arrests, as well as the Servants of the two Houses, in Parliament-time. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, 606.)

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

The Q's Servants privileg'd from Arrests in Parliament-time. Sheriff of a County, whether he may represent it.

It was resolv'd also, That the Sheriff of a County could not be elected Knight of the Shire, because he could not return himself ; but it seems to be admitted, that one chosen Knight might afterwards be constituted Sheriff, and act in both Capacities ; and that one might be elected Knight of any other Shire, and for any other Place, but for that which he was Sheriff. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, p. 625, 665.)

It being very much the Custom of this Age to go booted and spurr'd about Town, the Speaker admonish'd some of the Members not to come into the House with their Spurs on. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, 623.)

Spurs not to be worn in the House.

The Candidates for the County of *Denbigh* drawing their Swords at an Election for that County, a Battel had like to have ensu'd between the contending Parties ; whereupon the Sheriff refus'd to proceed, and made no Return : This Matter coming before the House, the Sheriff was excused ; and it was resolv'd, that the Speaker should issue his Warrant to the Clerk of the Crown, to send a Writ to make another Choice : And a Debate arising, Whether the Warrant ought to be made to the Lord-Keeper, or the Clerk of the Crown ; it was resolv'd for the latter. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, 627, 636, 639.)

The Speaker's Warrant for a new Election, to be directed to the Clerk of the Crown.

In the Debates upon the Supply, the Ministry insisted, that the *Spaniards* being now

A. D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

The Amount of the Subsidies in this Reign.

actually landed in *Ireland*, there was a necessity for greater Aids than ever had been given; adding, that the last whole Subsidies being after the rate of four Pounds Lands, and eight Groats Goods, came not to above fourscore thousand Pounds; the Subsidy of the Clergy to twenty thousand Pounds, and the double Fifteenths to sixty thousand Pounds: The Total of that Supply amounting to but one hundred and sixty thousand Pounds: Whereas the Queen had expended in the *Irish* War, three hundred thousand Pounds. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, 630.)

All Estates extremely under-tax'd.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* observ'd on this Occasion, that the Estates of the Quality and Persons of Distinction, which were charg'd at thirty or forty Pounds in the Queen's Books, were not charg'd at a hundredth Part of the real Value, which he seems to insinuate was the Reason, that the Subsidies rais'd so little in that Reign; and mov'd, that as the Justices of Peace were scarce any of them rated at above eight or ten Pounds a Year at most, they might be advanc'd to at least twenty Pounds *per Ann.* which was the Qualification requir'd for a Justice of Peace by the Statute; but it does not appear, that any Alteration was then made in the Rates of Taxation. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, 633.)

Few Gentlemen tax'd at ten Pounds *per Annum.*

Four Subsidies and eight Fifteenths granted.

At length it was agreed, to grant her Majesty four entire Subsidies and eight Fifteenths and Tenth, which is the largest Supply that ever was granted in this Reign. Whereupon the Compiler of these Journals observes, that when an Aid of three Subsidies and six Fifteenths and Tenth were given, *Anno 35 Eliz.* It was then provided, that this extravagant Tax should not be drawn into Precedent; and yet

yet the like Aid was given in the next Par-
liament 39 *Eliz.* with a Proviso also, that
it should not be made a Precedent: Notwith-
standing which, 43 *Eliz.* the Parliament ad-
vance four Subsidies and eight Fifteenths and
Tenths. But there was another Article, which
occasion'd a much greater Disturbance in the
House than the Supply, *viz.* the numerous
Monopolies or Patents, granted upon almost
every Branch of Trade and Business, to the
utter Ruin of the Subjects: For the Grantees
suffering no Persons to make or sell any Goods
mention'd in their respective Patents, without a
Licence from them, set what Price they pleas'd
upon such Goods; insomuch, that Salt, which
was one of these Monopolies, was rais'd from
fourteen Pence to fourteen Shillings a Bushel;
Brandy, Spirits, Vinegar, Leather, and innu-
merable other Articles in proportion. Which
Patents were either obtain'd for Money, or
given to the Queen's Officers and Servants as
Rewards (Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in particular,
had a Patent for the sole vending of Tin:)
These Monopolies had been complain'd of, and
address'd against, by the Commons in the pre-
ceding Parliament four Years before; and they
obtain'd a Promise, that they should be va-
cated, as appears by these Journals; and
some of them had been revers'd, but many
more continu'd. The Majority of the House
appear'd extremely discontented, that the rest
of those Patents had not been revok'd, and
the Patentees presented for their Extortions,
and the ill Use they had made of these Patents;
some of which were also look'd upon as illegal
in themselves, as debarring the rest of the Sub-
jects from following their several Employ-
ments, and providing for their Families in an
honest way.

A.D. 1601
A. 43 Eliz.

Numerous
Monopo-
lies.

The ill
Conse-
quences
attending
them.

Formerly
address'd
against.

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

Debates
concern-
ing them.

A Member speaking of this Grievance, derives the Word Monopoly from *Monos one*, and *Polis City*; which shews, says he, that it is a Restraint of any thing publick in a City or Common-wealth to a private Use, and term'd it, the *Whirlpool of the Prince's Profit*. Then he informs the House, that a Servant of the Patentee, for selling Brandy and Vinegar, came to the Town of *Mainwick*, for which he serv'd, and prohibited the Sale of these Commodities till they would compound with him; whereupon all the Shops were shut up.

Sir *Francis Bacon*, on the other hand, insisted, that the Queen, by her Prerogative, might grant these monopolizing Patents; and, by a *Non Obstante*, might suspend the Penal Laws, which were as hateful to the Subject as Monopolies; and gave some Instances where Monopolies might be useful to the Commonwealth; as where a Prince granted the Inventor of any profitable Art, the sole Use of it for a certain Time, which no body could justly murmur at; but where Monopolies were deem'd destructive to the Kingdom, there the Judges disallow'd of them in the Courts of Law; and such Patents were held void. He affirm'd also, that to his Knowledge, fifteen or sixteen of these Patents had been repealed by her Majesty's express Command, since the last Parliament, upon Complaint made to her by Petition, or by *Quo Warranto* in the *Exchequer*. He mov'd therefore, that as it was a Matter that touch'd her Majesty's Prerogative, they should proceed by Way of Petition to her, and not by Bill.

Thirty or
forty Mo-
nopolies
enumerated.

A List of thirty or forty Patents or Monopolies being read in the House, a Member ask'd, If there was not a Patent for making

of

of Bread amongst them : At which, some of the Court-party expressing their Resentment, that Member reply'd, If Bread was not amongst them, it would shortly, if Care was not taken to put a Stop to this Grievance.

A.D. 1601
A. 43 Eliz.

The Queen, being inform'd how universally these Patents were detested, did not stay till the Commons address'd her on that Subject, but sent a Message to the House by their Speaker ; acquainting them, That several Petitions having been lately presented to her against Monopolies (she took no Notice of the Debates of the House concerning them) she was sensibly touch'd with the Grievances she understood her People labour'd under, and appeal'd to Almighty God, how careful she had been to defend them from all Oppressions ; and having express'd her Indignation at the Abuse that had been made of her Grants, she promis'd, they should be reform'd ; that some of these Patents should be repeal'd immediately, some suspended, and none put in execution, till they should appear by a Trial at Law, to be for the Good of her People.

The Queen consents to revoke these Patents before she is address'd.

Mr. Secretary *Cecil* added, That the Queen was not appriz'd of the ill Tendency of any of these Grants when she made them ; and he doubted the *Execution* of all of them had been injurious to the People, tho' several of them, in their own Nature, were not so : He wish'd therefore, that they had never been granted ; and hop'd there would never be any more (at which the House said AMEN.) The Secretary then proceeded, and said, *I dare assure you, that from henceforth there shall be no more granted ; they shall all be revok'd.* But he shew'd himself extremely offended, that the People without-doors shou'd take Notice of

Cecil's Speech on this Occasion.

A. D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz

of the Debates in the House concerning these Matters; as he pass'd the Streets in his Coach, he said, he observ'd the People cry aloud, [*God prosper those that further the Overthrow of these Monopolies; God send the Prerogative touch not our Liberty.*]

This Case of Monopolies, in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, has so near a Resemblance to that of Excise in our own Times, that 'tis impossible to think of the one without reflecting on the other: If there be any material difference, it is this; that the former Grievance was occasion'd by an Abuse of the Prerogative; and the latter, by an Abuse of another nature. But to proceed, several Members still expressing their Fears, that the Promises Secretary *Cecil* had made them in the Queen's Name, would not be perform'd; the Secretary reply'd, They must rely on her Majesty's Word for it: That *Tho' the Idol of a Monopoly was a great Monster, yet in two or three days they should see it dismember'd*: And a Proclamation was accordingly publish'd for revoking the said Patents. Whereupon the House attended her Majesty in a Body with an Address of Thanks; in which were Expressions little short of those in which we address the Deity. Then the Speaker, with all the House, kneeled, and her Majesty began a Speech in answer to their Address; wherein she tells them, That she wished for nothing more than the Contentment of her Subjects, and desir'd she might live no longer than she might see their Prosperity. [*And observing that the Commons kneeled all the while, she desir'd they would stand up, because her Speech would be of some Length. Then proceeding*] She said, she had more Cause to thank the Commons, than they

A Proclamation for revoking these Patents.

An Address of Thanks thereupon.

The Q's Answer to it.

her;

er; inasmuch, as by their Information, she was prevented falling into an Error: That since she was Queen, she had never set her Pen to any Grant which was not represented to her to be for the Good of her Subjects; but as some of them had proved otherwise, she was exceedingly beholden to those who had mov'd for a Redress of those Grievances; she would never suffer Oppressions to be privileged under colour of her Patents: This was beneath her kingly Dignity. When she was appriz'd of the Matter, she would give no Rest to her Thoughts till it was reform'd; nor should they escape unpunish'd who had oppress'd them under colour of her Authority. (*D'Ewes's Journals*, 654.)

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

Here were great Debates also in this Parliament on a Bill for the better Observation of the Sabbath; whereby the Power of levying the Forfeiture of twelve Pence a Sunday for not coming to Church, was committed to the Justices of Peace. Mr. *Glascock*, who oppos'd the giving this Authority to the Justices of Peace, let fall some scandalous Expressions in relation to these Magistrates; particularly, he said, *A Justice of Peace was an Animal, that for half a dozen of Chickens, would dispense with a dozen penal Statutes: That they were Basket Justices; that nothing could be obtain'd of these Idol Justices, unless they offer'd them Sacrifices of Sheep and Oxen; and that every penal Statute they were empower'd to execute, was as beneficial to them as a Tax for their Maintenance.*

Debates
on a Bill
for the Ob-
servation
of the Sab-
bath.

These Reflections on Justices of Peace were very much resented by the House, and *Glascock* was obliged to make an Apology for himself, and say, That he did not speak of Justices

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

The *Dunkirk* Privateers troublesome.

Justices in general, but of those who made a Trade of their Office.

It appears to have been about this time, that the *Dunkirk* Privateers, or rather Pirates, first became troublesome to our *English* Merchants; for Mr. *Dannet*, a Burgess for *Yarmouth*, complain'd in this Parliament, that the Ships of her Majesty's Subjects were taken by those of *Dunkirk* and *Newport*, then two pitiful Towns, in time of Peace; and that they had the Impudence to wound, torture, and put to Death our Merchants and Mariners. That *Dunkirk* at first began these Outrages with two Ships only; but that they were at that time increas'd to twenty; and that our Ships could not stir out for them; and they made Prisoners even of the Harvest-men on Shoar, which he look'd upon as a great Dishonour to the Queen and Kingdom; and therefore mov'd, that some Method might be taken for suppressing them.

Great Guns exported.

There seems to have been more Iron Ordnance cast in *England* at this time than in any Kingdom of *Europe*; for a Complaint was made in the House of Commons this Session that Ordnance were exported to *Calais*, *Embden*, *Lubeck*, *Rockelle*, *Brest*, and *Holland* and that the *Dutch* sold them to the *Spaniards* and *Dunkirkers*; Enemies of the Nation, to our great Damage. Sir *Walter Raleigh* particularly observ'd, that formerly one *English* Ship would beat ten *Spaniards*; but since they had been supply'd with our Ordnance, a *Spanish* Ship was a Match for one of *England*; and that if ever the Kingdom was conquer'd, it would be by her own Ordnance; and therefore mov'd to petition her Majesty against the Exportation of them; and it was resolv'd, that the Speaker should motion it in his Speech, on presenting

A Motion against it.

the Bill of Supply, which he promised to do, A.D. 1601
 but did not; whereupon the Members made
 very severe Reflections on their Speaker; but A. 43 Eliz.
 there was no Remedy, the Parliament being
 immediately after dissolved.

The House of Commons appears to have The Com-
 been in very great Disorder, when the Bill for mons very
 levying Twelve-pence on every Person that ab- tumultu-
 sented himself from Church, was read a third ous.
 time: For, upon a Division, there being one
 hundred and five for it, and one hundred and
 six against it; some mov'd, that the Speaker
 might give his Voice; but it was resolv'd, that
 the Speaker had no Vote: Then some of the
 Members for the Bill complain'd, that there had
 been very foul Play. One Gentleman, that
 would have gone out, having been pull'd back,
 and, in a manner, compell'd to stay. To
 which Sir *Walter Raleigh* answer'd, That was
 a small matter, for he had often pull'd a Friend
 by the Sleeve, and persuaded him to stay; at
 which the House were in an Uproar. And it
 was observ'd by another, that on this Division
 another Member was carry'd out by his Friends Force used
 against his Will: Upon which Mr. Secretary upon a Di-
Cecil said, He had often heard the Commons vision of
 charg'd with these Disorders, and he was sorry the House.
 to observe there was so much Truth in the
 Charge: He wish'd, that such Members, as
 might be drawn forwards or backwards by the
 Sleeve, like a Dog in a String, might set no
 more in that House; and some were for calling
 the Authors of such Violence to the Bar; but
 it was resolv'd, that the Bill was lost, and And yet
 that notwithstanding this scandalous Practice resolved
 of pulling the Members backwards and for- not to put
 wards, it could not be put to the Vote again. it to the
Vote a-
gain.

A.D. 1601

A. 43 Eliz.

The Servants also abusive.

Nor were the Servants of both Houses less noisy and tumultuous without-doors this Session than their Masters were within ; for I find several Motions made, both in the House of Peers and the House of Commons, for suppressing the Abuses and Insolences of their Servants on the Stairs and in the Passages to the House, and the Serjeant at Arms was oblig'd sometimes to go out and suppress them.

A Collection for the Poor at the End of the Parliament.

The last Thing I shall mention relating to this Session, is a laudable Custom, that obtain'd in these Times at the Rising of the Parliament, to make a Collection for the Poor ; when every Knight gave ten Shillings and every Burgeſs five Shillings ; and it was order'd, that every private Person, that had a Bill paſs'd the House, should pay to the Relief of the Poor : If it concern'd the Sale of Lands, ten Pounds ; and if it was for the Confirmation of a Jointure, five Pounds. And Mr. *Hettilplace*, who had collected the Money the last Session, reported, that he had disposed of it in the following manner, *viz.* To the Minister or Chaplain of the House, ten Pounds ; to the Serjeant, thirty Pounds ; and that the Residue had been distributed to the Prisoners of the two Counters, *Ludgate* and *Newgate*, the Prisons of *Southwark* and that of *Westminster*.

How distributed.

The Q's Grants confirm'd.

Poor.

The principal Acts that paſs'd this Parliament, in relation to the State, were these following, *viz.* 43 *Eliz. Cap. 1.* An Act for confirming all Assurances made of Lands by the Queen, and of all Letters Patent, except those for Monopolies, and the suspending of penal Statutes by *Non Obſtante*, &c. 43 *Eliz. Cap. 2.* An Act for the Relief of the Poor, being

being the principal Act now in force for making Provision for them. A.D. 1601

43 *Eliz. Cap. 17.* An Act for the Confirmation of four Subsidies of four Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy. A. 43 *Eliz.*
The Sub-
sidy Acts.

43 *Eliz. Cap. 18.* An Act for granting four entire Subsidies and eight Fifteenths, by the Laity.

Cap. 19. An Act for confirming the Queen's General Pardon.

The *Spaniards*, having landed four thousand Men near *Kingsale* in *Ireland*, under the Command of *John D'Aquila*, on the 23d of *September*, took Possession of that Town, the Governour Sir *Richard Perry* being order'd to retire from thence with his Garrison, which consisted but of an hundred and fifty Men: However, the Lord-Deputy, having assembled his Forces soon after, besieged the *Spaniards* in *Kingsale*, where his Troops suffer'd pretty much by the Severity of the Winter; and two thousand *Spaniards* more landing not long after, and joining *Tirouen*, threatned to relieve the Town, or at least throw Supplies into the Place, and advanc'd towards the *English* Camp, in order to put their Design in execution; but the Deputy had the good Fortune to surprize *Tirouen* and his *Spanish* Allies in the Night-time, and entirely defeated them; which induc'd *D'Aquila* and the *Spaniards* in *Kingsale* to surrender soon after upon the following Terms, *viz.* That they should quit all the Forts and Places they possess'd in *Ireland*, and evacuate the Country; the Queen providing them with Vessels for their Transportation; and the *Spaniards* were accordingly sent home, nor did they ever appear in *Ireland* afterwards.

The *Spaniards*, who landed in *Ireland*, besieged in *Kingsale*.

The Rebels defeated.

Kingsale surrenders.

The *Spaniards* sent home.

A.D. 1602

A. 44 *Eliz.*

A Fleet
sent to
cruise on
the Coasts
of *Spain*.

A great
Prize
taken, and
some Gal-
lies.

A Dispute
between
the secular
Priests and
the Jesuits.

Collecti-
ons for Ge-
nova.

And, indeed, the Queen took the most effectual Measures to prevent any Enterprize of the like Nature against her Kingdoms ; for, the following Spring, she fitted out a Fleet of Men of War under the Command of Sir *Richard Levison* and Sir *William Monson*, to cruise on the Coast of *Spain* and *Portugal*, and intercept the Enemies Ships, if they stirr'd out of their Ports : But these Admirals were unfortunately separated, when the Plate-Fleet, consisting of thirty-eight Sail of Ships, arriv'd ; and tho' Sir *Richard* had the Courage to attack the *Spaniards* with two or three Ships, he was not able to bring off any of them. This Disappointment, however, was in some measure made up by the taking a great Carrack that fell in their way ; which they brought to *England*, and was valued at a Million of Ducats : And another Squadron of *English* and *Dutch*, that were cruising in the Channel, took several of the Enemies Gallies that were carrying warlike Stores from *Spain* to the *Low-Countries*.

In the mean time, there happen'd very hot Disputes between the Jesuits and secular Priests in *England* ; the latter professing all Obedience to her Majesty, and charging the Jesuits with disloyal and traiterous Practices : Of which the Queen was so fully convinc'd, that she publish'd a Proclamation against the Jesuits and their Adherents, requiring them to depart the Kingdom on pain of having the Law put in execution against them : And, indeed, they were at this very instant engag'd in a Conspiracy to assassinate her Majesty, and had invited the King of *Spain* to invade her Dominions.

Collections were about this time promoted by the Bishops and Clergy for the Relief of the

the City of *Geneva*, which was still in danger of falling into the Hands of the Duke of *Savoy* and their Popish Adversaries. The Queen and the Church of *England*, it is observ'd, never confin'd their Charity to any one Set of Protestants, but assisted their Christian Brethren of every Denomination, when they stood in need of their Help ; a Practice that the Puritans seldom imitate them in.

A.D. 1602
A. 44 Eliz.

And now the Queen, in the latter end of her Reign, was so happy to see *Tirouen*, that notable Rebel, reduc'd within the Bounds of his Duty, by the Lord *Montjoy*, Deputy of *Ireland*, and that Country restor'd to a peaceable Condition ; *Tirouen* had been so closely pursu'd, after the Expulsion of the *Spaniards*, that he was oblig'd to surrender at Discretion, and submit both his Life and Estate to the Queen's Mercy, and was carried by the Lord-Deputy in Triumph to *Dublin*.

A. 1602-3
A. 45 Eliz.

Tirouen
obliged to
surrender
at Discretion.

This Rebellion had continu'd eight Years ; commenc'd at first, says *Cambden*, by Ambition and some personal Disgufts, and fomented and kept up by the Neglect and Stinginess of *England* : It ran all over *Ireland*, on Pretence of restoring Popery, and the Prospect of unbounded Liberty : It got Strength by the Weakness and Credulity of some, and the private Countenance of others that were in place ; and gain'd more Ground by one or two fortunate Successes back'd by the *Spaniard's* Gold and Forces, and the Pope's Indulgences. It was protracted and spun out by the ill-tim'd Emulations of the *English* ; the lodging the Government in two Hands ; and the Avarice of the old Soldiers, who made the War a kind of Trade : To which may be added, the subtil Stratagems of *Tirouen*, his feign'd Submissions

The Reason of the long Continuance of this War.

A. 1602-3 missions and treacherous Capitulations : The
 A. 45 Eliz. Protections granted to Offenders : The Diffi-
 culty of the Roads and Passes ; and lastly, to
 the Temper of the *Irish*, who trusted more to
 their inaccessible Bogs and the Swiftneſs of
 their Heels, than the Strength of their
 Hands.

The Q.
 taken ill.

Retires to
 Richmond.

Mentions
 her Suc-
 ceſſor.

Becomes
 melanco-
 ly on find-
 ing her
 Friends
 deſert her.

Her Maſteſty, being now in the ſeventieth
 Year of her Age, and finding a ſenſible Decay
 in her Strength and Spirits ; as ſhe apprehended
 her Death was not far off, retir'd on the laſt
 of *January* from *White-hall* to *Richmond*, that
 ſhe might be more at Liberty to attend her
 Devotions, and prepare for another State :
 And, as it was very natural to conſider on this
 occaſion who ſhould ſucceed her ; ſhe ſaid to
 the Lord Admiral *Howard*, the very Day ſhe
 remov'd, *My Throne has been held by Princes*
in the Way of Succeſſion, and ought not to go to
any but my next and immediate Heir. She alſo
 cauſ'd the Ring ſhe receiv'd at her Coronation
 to be filed off her Finger (having never been
 taken off before) and gave herſelf up to Me-
 lancholy ; which, *Cambden* and ſome other
 Writers inſinuate, proceeded from the Neglect
 ſhe obſerv'd in the Courtiers towards her ; and
 the Advice ſhe receiv'd from the King of
France, of their applying already to the King
 of *Scots* as the Riſing-ſun, ſeem'd almoſt evi-
 dent, from ſome Expreſſions ſhe let fall ; as,
that I have no body left me that I can truſt :
My Condition is the perfect Reverse of what it
was : And what touch'd her ſtill nearer, was,
 the Suggeſtion that ſhe had loſt the Hearts of
 her People : But this might proceed from her
 Diſtemper, or Want of Spirits at ſo advanc'd
 an Age : However, whether it was Melan-
 choly, or any other Cauſe, that increas'd her
 Illneſs ;

Illness ; it is undeniable, says *Cambden*, after it appear'd she was not like to recover, how forward and zealous Men of all Ranks and Conditions were, Puritans and Papists, as well as others, to present themselves to the King of *Scots*, and pay their Adoration to the Rising-sun: And so far it was certainly a Happiness to the Nation, that the Queen, and her Subjects of all Persuasions, concurr'd in the same Sentiments : As to the advancing King *James* to the Throne, all of them had great Expectations of his Favour and Protection, and no Man ever so much as mention'd any Competitor for the Crown. In *March*, the Queen found herself so very ill, that she would admit of scarce any Conversation, but what related to another State: Accordingly, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and her Bishops and Chaplains, who pray'd with her, and assisted her in her Divine Meditations, were her only Company : But the Lord Admiral having acquainted the rest of the Council what her Majesty had said to him, on her Removal to *Richmond*, concerning her Successor ; it was thought proper, that he, with the Lord-Keeper and Secretary *Cecil*, should attend her in the Name of the rest, and learn her Pleasure in relation to the Succession : To which the Queen answer'd, That she had already declar'd, *That as she held a Regal Scepter, so she desired no other than a Royal Successor*. And the Secretary desiring she would explain herself ; she reply'd, *I would have a King succeed me ; and who shou'd that be, but my nearest Kinsman the King of Scots ?*

A. 1602-3
A. 45 Eliz.
All Men
apply to
the King
of Scots.

She nominates King *James* for Successor.

The Queen expir'd on the 24th of *March*, The Q's
1602-3, in the seventieth Year of her Age, Death.
having reign'd forty four Years and four
Months. As to the Person of this Princess,
she

A. 1602-3 she was moderately tall, slender and strait;
 A. 45 *Eliz.* her Complexion fair, her Hair of a pale Yel-
 low, her Forehead large, her Eyes sweet and
 lively, her Nose a little rising in the middle,
 Her Per- her whole Countenance something long, and
 son and yet of admirable Beauty, according to *Cambden*;
 Character. form'd, as a certain * Writer observes, by
 Nature and Education, for the Greatness she
 was born to; she was furnish'd with Learn-
 ing, Sense, and Courage to an unusual Degree;
 she spoke *Latin*, *French* and *Italian* with Ease
 and Propriety, and understood *Greek* and *Span-
 ish*; she translated *Salust de Bello Jugurthino*,
 the greatest part of *Horace de Arte Poetica*,
 and *Plutarch de Curiositate*; she had a good
 Ear for Musick, and play'd upon several In-
 struments: Her Mien and Behaviour was grace-
 ful and majestick; and being prepar'd to
 answer Ambassadors Speeches in the Language
 they were deliver'd, and discourse upon Go-
 vernment, and the State of foreign Kingdoms,
 she appear'd with great Advantage at her
 giving Audience, and upon other publick Oc-
 casions. Thus the Duke of *Anjou*, and other
 Strangers of Quality, are said to have admir'd
 her extremely. She was generally awake for
 the Functions of Government. Her Measures
 for Precaution were well taken, and her Poli-
 ticks were carry'd to the farthest Improve-
 ment: And when the Prospect was black, and
 the Crisis grew dangerous, nothing was more
 brave than this Princess. For instance, when
 the *Spanish* Armada was ready to descend upon
 the Kingdom, she appear'd at *Tilbury* with an
 Air of Resolution; rode about the Army,
 harangued her Troops, and encourag'd them
 like an Heroine.

Neither was she less remarkable in her Administration at home: She knew how to govern her Dominions as well as guard them. She always took care to keep a due Distance between the Subject and the Sovereign, and never suffer'd her People, either without Doors or within, to grow upon the Prerogative. And, notwithstanding these Reserves of Majesty, this holding the Reins strait, and keeping the Spirit of Government always stirring, she avoided the Imputation of a rigid Prince, and gain'd the Affections of the Generality: She had the Secret of engaging the People, without lessening her Authority; was condescending and popular in her Gestures and Discourse, and knew how to stoop without shrinking her Stature: And, to make her Management more acceptable, she never burthened the Country with unnecessary Taxes; and that, which was given, was constantly apply'd to the publick Benefit. To which I may add, the Recovery of the Mint to a just Standard of Fineness.

A. 1602-3

A. 45 Eliz.

But the greatest Blessing she was instrumental in conferring on this Kingdom, was, THE RESTORATION AND ESTABLISHMENT OF THE REFORMATION, which she effected by a most wise and steady Conduct: Had she given in to the narrow *Geneva* Scheme, or alter'd her Measures as often as the Sectaries alter'd their Minds, the Nation had been distracted with Schisms, and probably return'd to Popery again. Her Courage and Resolution therefore, in maintaining the Reformation on the Foot it was instituted by that noble Courage of Martyrs who suffer'd for it in the Reign of Queen *Mary*, can never be sufficiently admired or applauded.

She was the Restorer of the Protestant Religion.

A. 1602-3

A. 45 Eliz.

Her sus-
fering the
Execution
of the Q.
of Scots
consider'd.

As to the Death of the Queen of *Scots*, and the conferring some of the Lands and Revenues of the Church on the Laity, generally esteem'd the greatest Blemishes of her Reign: If it be consider'd as to the first, that the whole Nation were of Opinion, that the saving of the Queen of *Scots* would prove the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*; which would infallibly have been attended with the Return of Popery, and the Destruction of the Protestant Religion, not only in *England*, but in every other Kingdom in *Europe*: That the Queen was importun'd, from time to time, by both Houses of Parliament, to permit that Execution: That the Queen of *Scots* was actually engag'd in several Plots, to introduce a foreign Power and to dethrone Queen *Elizabeth*; if not in *Babington's* Conspiracy, and other Assassination-Plots, with which *Mary* was charg'd: The Queen's permitting so dangerous a Rival to be put to Death, can scarcely be ascrib'd to her as a Fault; and it may still be made a Question, whether she did consent to it, tho' she sign'd the Warrant, and left it in the Hands of *Davis* (in case of an actual Invasion and Rebellion) to be executed. Add to this, that if Queen *Elizabeth* did consent to it, she was not induc'd to it by any *personal* Fear, but for the Preservation of her People and the Protestant Religion. We have seen her threatned with Invasions by the most formidable Powers in *Europe*, and innumerable Plots laid to assassinate her, in which her own Court and Servants were employ'd, some of them upon the Point of putting their villainous Treasons in execution; and yet we do not perceive she ever express'd any Signs of Fear; but as Dangers increas'd, so did her Courage; and she took the properest Means,

Means, in every Exigence, to defeat her own and the Nation's Enemies : Whereas there are few Princes, even of the other Sex, but would have been amaz'd and confounded at such repeated Attempts to dethrone and murder them, and, in so distracted a State, have abandon'd the Care and Protection of their People. I take it for granted therefore, that the Queen was of that intrepid Spirit and Resolution, that she would never have suffer'd the Queen of *Scots* to have been put to Death, if her own Preservation only had been concern'd, how justly soever she might have done it ; but was entirely influenc'd, in this Matter, by her Compassion for her People, and her Zeal for the Protestant Religion.

And as to the Queen's bestowing some of the Lands and Revenues of the Church upon the Courtiers and great Men ; this she might apprehend necessary to engage them in the Protestant Interest, and prevent the Nation's relapsing into Popery : And, if they were granted with this View, she ought not to be reproach'd with it. But after all, should it be admitted, she was liable to Censure on these Accounts ; what Mortal is there free from Errors ? And if it be consider'd, that neither the People of *England*, nor any other Nation under Heaven, was ever so happy under any Prince since the World began, as the Queen's Subjects were under her glorious Administration ; her Miscarriages, which, in a Reign of between forty and fifty Years, were so very few, ought never to be reflected on by a People that still enjoy the Effects of her admirable Conduct.

In the Character *Rapin* gives us of Queen *Elizabeth*, he does not seem very consistent with

A. 1602-3

A. 45 Eliz.

Her alienating some of the Revenues of the Church consider'd.

A. 1602-3 himself; for in the 8th of *Edw.* Vol. 8. p. 263, he says, As she had true Merit in herself, she esteem'd it in another; and therefore could *never* bring herself to confer Dignities upon Men who had never merited them: And yet in p. 275, of the same Volume, he observes, That the Queen visibly prefer'd *Dudley* (afterwards Earl of *Leicester*) to all who had the Honour to be about her Person; and that the Distinction with which she honour'd him, made it plain, she had more than a bare Esteem for him; tho', when his Pretensions to such distinguishing Favours were look'd into, NO ONE QUALITY was discover'd in him capable of making an Impression on so discerning a QUEEN; *his Vices had so much the Ascendant of his Virtues.* But is not this a manifest Contradiction? *She never prefer'd any but Men of Merit; and yet she prefer'd a Man not furnish'd with one good Quality:* And this not by Surprize or Inadvertency, but continued to heap her Favours on him, after she knew him fully, for many Years, even to the Day of his Death; and scarce any one was advanc'd at Court, but by this worthless Man, who probably recommended those who had some Resemblance to himself, or who would be govern'd by his Nod.

Again he says, p. 223, of the 9th Volume, That *the continual Fear of losing a Crown* is what characterises her Reign, because it was the *main Spring* of almost all her Actions.— And page 224, That in assisting the Protestants abroad, *she had none but worldly Views.*

And yet, p. 26, of the 9th Vol. he says, *She had a true Esteem for the Reform'd Religion;* and makes that one Inducement for her supporting

porting it. And p. 225, in summing up her Character, he says, *She had many Virtues and noble Qualities, and but few Faults.* A. 1602-3
A. 45 Eliz.

But if the continual Fear of losing a Crown was the main Spring of almost all her Actions, and she had none but worldly Views in assisting the Protestants, Where was her Religion? Where the Virtue and noble Qualities he ascribes to her?

Elizabeth was the only Daughter of *Henry VIII.* by his second Wife *Anne Bolein*, Daughter of *Thomas Bolein*, Earl of *Ormond* and *Wiltshire*. She had an hereditary Title to the Crown, admitting her Father *Henry's* Marriage with *Katherine of Spain* was void: However, her Parliamentary Title was unquestionable to the Crown, being limited to her by her Father's Will, in pursuance of an Act of Parliament, which enabled him to limit the Succession. Her Title.

The Taxes of this Reign have been already mention'd; I shall proceed therefore to take notice of the principal Statutes; which, besides those enumerated before in relation to Religion and the State, were these that follow; viz. 1 *Eliz. cap. 11.* The Preamble whereof recites, That the Customs of Wares and Merchandizes imported and exported, is an ancient Revenue annex'd to the Crown; and enacts, That no Goods shall be laden or unladen, but in the Day-time, and at such Ports as are named in the Act; nor without Notice given to the Custom-house Officer; and that Entry should be made only in the Proprietor's Name. Taxes.
Statutes.
Customs.

1 *Eliz. cap. 15.* enacts, That no Timber should be converted into Coals or Fuel for the making of Iron. Timber.
Iron.

A. 1602-3

A. 45 Eliz.

Fish.

1 *Eliz. cap. 17.* prohibits the taking of Salmon, Trouts, Eels, Pikes, and other Fish out of Season ; and of the Spawn of Fish, and of Fish under the Size mention'd in the Act ; on pain of twenty Shillings, and the Loss of their Nets, &c.

Leases of
Bishops.

1 *Eliz. cap. 19.* enacts, That all Leases and other Assurances, made by Bishops, of Lands, for more than one and twenty Years, and where the usual Rent was not reserv'd, should be void.

Servants.

5 *Eliz. cap. 4.* declares, how long Servants shall be hired for ; and which sort of Persons are compellable to serve in Handicraft-Trades,

Labourers.

and in Husbandry ; how long Labourers shall continue at their Work ; that their Wages shall be settled by the Justices of Peace in their Sessions : The Punishment of a Servant or Labourer assaulting his Master : What Artificers shall be oblig'd to work in Hay-time or Harvest : What Women obliged to go to Service : Who may take Apprentices, and who shall be oblig'd to serve an Apprenticeship.

Apprentices.

Subornation.

5 *Eliz. cap. 9.* enacts, That every Person guilty of Subornation of Perjury, shall forfeit forty Pounds ; and, if he be not worth forty Pounds, stand in the Pillory, and suffer half a Year's Imprisonment ; and every Person guilty of corrupt Perjury, to forfeit twenty Pounds, and suffer half a Year's Imprisonment : And, if such Person have not Goods to the value of twenty Pounds, he is to be set in the Pillory, and have both his Ears nail'd to it.

Perjury.

Servants.

Felony.

5 *Eliz. cap. 10.* revives the Statute of the 21st of *Hen. VIII. cap. 7.* which makes it Felony for a Servant to steal or imbezzel his Master's Goods to the Value of forty Shillings.

5 *Eliz.*

5 *Eliz. cap. 11.* makes the clipping of the Coin High Treason : See 18 *Eliz. cap. 1.* A. 1602-3

5 *Eliz. cap. 14.* enacts, That whoever forges or publishes any Deed or Will relating to the Inheritance of Lands, shall pay the Party grieved double Damages, be set in the Pillory, have both his Ears cut off, and his Nose slit, and fear'd with a hot Iron: And whoever shall forge, or publish a Lease or Bond, shall forfeit double Damages, and be set in the Pillory, and lose one of his Ears ; and the second Offence is made Felony. A. 45 *Eliz.*
Coin.
Forgery.

5 *Eliz. cap. 17.* revives the Statute 25 *Buggery.*
Hen. VI, which makes it Felony to commit Buggery with Man or Beast.

5 *Eliz. cap. 18.* declares the Authority of the Lord-Chancellor and Lord-Keeper to be the same. Ld. Chan-
cellor.

5 *Eliz. cap. 20.* makes it Felony without Benefit of Clergy, for *Egyptians* or *Gypsies*, or Persons pretending to be so, to remain a Month within the Realm. Gypsies.

5 *Eliz. cap. 21.* enacts, That if any Person shall destroy a Fish-pond, or take the Fish in it without the Owner's Leave, he shall suffer three Months Imprisonment, and yield treble Damages to the Party griev'd. The same Punishment inflicted on those, who shall hunt in any Park. Fish-
ponds.

Parks.

8 *Eliz. cap. 2.* enacts, That the Defendant shall recover his Costs, where the Plaintiff delays or discontinues his Suit, or is Non-suit. Costs.

8 *Eliz. cap. 4.* takes away the Benefit of Clergy from Pick-pockets. Pick-
pockets.

8 *Eliz. cap. 5.* The Court of Delegates is made the last Resort in Civil and Marine Causes. Delegates.

- A. 1602-3* 13 *Eliz. cap. 5.* enacts, That fraudulent Deeds made to deceive Creditors, shall be made void.
- A. 45 Eliz.* 13 *Eliz. cap. 7.* provides against Frauds committed by Bankrupts.
- Fraudulent Deeds. Bankrupts Dilapidations. 13 *Eliz. cap. 10.* Fraudulent Deeds, made by Spiritual Persons to defeat their Successors of a Remedy for Dilapidations, declared void.
- Leases. 13 *Eliz. cap. 20.* enacts, That no Lease of any Ecclesiastical Living shall be good, where the Lessor (or Minister) shall be absent eighty Days in any one Year: See 18 *Eliz. cap. 11.*
- Residence. 14 *Eliz. cap. 3.* enacts, That it shall be Misprision of Treason to forge Money which is not the Coin of this Realm.
- Foreign Coin. 14 *Eliz. cap. 5.* enables the Justices in their Sessions to tax the Country towards the Relief of Prisoners in the County Jail.
- Prisoners. 18 *Eliz. cap. 3.* empowers two Justices of Peace to punish the Mother and reputed Father of a Bastard, and to order them to contribute to the Maintenance of it.
- Bastards. 18 *Eliz. cap. 6.* enacts, That upon Leases made by Colleges, the third part of the Rent shall be reserv'd in Corn.
- Leases of Colleges. 18 *Eliz. cap. 7.* takes away Clergy from Persons convicted of Rape or Burglary.
- Rape. 18 *Eliz. cap. 10.* declares, who shall be chargeable to the High-ways, and for what?
- Burglary. 18 *Eliz. cap. 15.* enacts, That Goldsmiths shall set their Marks to their Wares; and what Fineness Gold and Silver Plate shall be of.
- Highways. 27 *Eliz. cap. 4.* enacts, That fraudulent Conveyances, to defeat Purchasers, shall be void.
- Goldsmiths. 27 *Eliz.*

27 *Eliz. cap. 13.* declares by whom Hue and Cry shall be made; and the Penalty of those that make Default. *A. 1602.3*
A. 45 Eliz.

29 *Eliz. cap. 4.* enacts, That the Sheriff may have Twelve-pence in the Pound for Goods taken in Execution, to the Value of an hundred Pounds; and Six-pence in the Pound for all above that Value, and no more. Hue and Cry.
Execution.
Sheriff.

31 *Eliz. cap. 4.* enacts, That the embezzelling of the Queen's Ordnance, Armour or Stores to the Value of twenty Shillings, shall be Felony. Royal Stores,
Felony.

31 *Eliz. cap. 6.* inflicts Penalties on those who present Fellows, Scholars, &c. in any Church, Colleges, Hospitals, &c. for Reward; and on those also who present to Benefices for Rewards. Corrupt Presentations punished.

31 *Eliz. cap. 7.* enacts, That no new Cottage shall be erected without laying four Acres of Land to it. Cottages.

31 *Eliz. cap. 12.* declares, how Horses shall be tolled and vouched in Fairs. Horses.

39 *Eliz. cap. 9.* takes away Clergy from those who steal a Woman that hath Lands or Goods, or that is Heir apparent to her Ancestor, and afterwards marry or defile her. Women stolen.

39 *Eliz. cap. 15.* Clergy taken away from those who rob Houses or Out-houses in the Day-time, to the Value of five Shillings. Robbery.

43 *Eliz. cap. 2.* directs how Overseers of the Poor shall be chosen, and how the Poor shall be provided for. Poor.

43 *Eliz. cap. 4.* enables the Lord Chancellor to appoint Commissioners from time to time, to enquire how Lands or Goods given to any charitable Uses have been apply'd, and to see them put to such Uses as the Donor intended them. Lands, &c. given to charitable Uses.

A. 1602-3 43 Eliz. cap. 7. enacts, That Persons cutting any standing Corn ; robbing of Orchards ; breaking any Hedges or Pales ; or Robbers of cutting or spoiling any Under-woods, with Orchards, intent to carry them away, shall make Satisfaction for the same ; or, if unable, shall be whipped by the Constable.
 A. 45 Eliz.
 Breakers of Hedges,
 &c.







JAMES. I.

C H A P. II.

Contains the Reign of J A M E S I.

QUEEN *Elizabeth* dying on the twenty-fourth of *March* 1602-3; about two in the Morning; the Privy-Council caus'd *James VI*, King of *Scotland*, to be proclaim'd in the City of *London* and *Westminster*, the same Day at Noon, King of *England*, *France* and *Ireland*. In which Proclamation, they deduce his Title from *Elizabeth* Daughter of *Edw. IV*, and Wife of *Henry VII*. At ten o'Clock the same Evening, they dispatch'd Sir *Charles Percy*, Brother to the Earl of *Northumberland*; and *Thomas Somerses*, Son to the Earl of *Worcester*, with a Letter to King *James* at *Edinburgh*; wherein they acquaint his Majesty, that he had been proclaim'd King with the unanimous Consent of the Nobility and People, as next Heir to the late Queen, and that they were resolv'd to maintain his Title with their Lives and Fortunes; but complain, that Sir *Robert Cary*, Brother to the Lord-Chamberlain, had that Morning set out for *Scotland*, contrary to their Orders and to all Decency and good Manners, to acquaint his Majesty with the Queen's Death; without being able to give any Account of the Measures that were taken for his Majesty's Service, or of the Disposition of the Nation towards him: They desire also to know his Majesty's Pleasure, as to the Administration of the Government; and whether the Squadron of the Men of War, that had been fitted out against the Coasts of *Spain*, should attend him in *Scotland*; and conclude with desiring, they may soon enjoy the com-

A.D. 1603

A.1 Jac.I.

K. James
proclaim'dOf which
the Coun-
cil send
him Ad-
vice.

A.D. 1603 fortable Prefence of his Highness in *England*.

A. 1 Jac. I.

And invites him to *England* Sir Robert carries the first News of the Queen's Death.

A Proclamation for all Magistrates and Officers to act.

And to remain in their several Counties.

Another for the Gentlemen to attend his Majesty in his Journey.

The King sets out from *Edinburgh*.

Sir Robert Cary used so much Expedition in his Journey to *Edinburgh*, that he arriv'd there in three Days from *London*; and notwithstanding his coming without Orders, was very graciously receiv'd. Soon after arriv'd Percy and *Somerset* with the Letter from the Council; which the King caused to be communicated to his Subjects of *Scotland*; and sent Orders to the Privy-Council of *England* to publish a Proclamation, That all Ministers of State, Magistrates and Officers should continue to act in their respective Stations; and all Persons, especially Magistrates and Persons of Distinction, should remain in their several Counties till the King's Arrival, as well for the Preservation of the Peace, as that there might not be too great a Concourse of People in the Counties thro' which his Majesty pass'd, so as to occasion a Scarcity of Provision; and a Proclamation was publish'd accordingly, dated at *White-hall* the tenth of *April*, 1603.

Another Proclamation was publish'd, requiring the several Sheriffs of *England* to attend his Majesty in the Counties he was to pass thro' between *Berwick* and *London*, together with the Justices of Peace and Gentlemen of each County, who were to receive the King at the Entrance of the County where they were respectively Sheriffs, &c. and to attend him till he was come to the utmost Bounds of their County.

All Things being in a Readiness, his Majesty set forward from *Edinburgh* on the seventh of *April*, and arriv'd at *Berwick* the same Day; from whence he advanc'd, by easy Journeys, hunting all the Way he came, till the third of *May*; when he arriv'd at *Theobalds*,
a Seat

a Seat of Secretary Cecil's, within half a Day's Journey of *London*; the King having been entertain'd all the Way at the Charge of the respective Counties, or by the Noblemen and Persons of Distinction, whose Houses he visited in this Progress, till he arriv'd in *Hertfordshire*. The King was met at *Theobalds* by all the Privy-Council: And the Duke of *Lenox*, the Earl of *Marre*, the Lord *Hume*, Sir *George Hume*, Sir *James Elphinstone*, and the Lord of *Kingslofs*, all Natives of *Scotland*, were call'd to the Council-Board; Sir *George Hume* at the same time was made Earl of *Dunbar*, Sir *Thomas Ereskin* Earl of *Kelly*, Sir *John Ramsay* Earl of *Holderness*, Sir *James Hay* Earl of *Carlisle*, and Sir *Richard Preston* Earl of *Kildare*. The King, continuing his Journey to *London*, was met, on the 4th of *May*, by the Mayor and Aldermen on the Road, who conducted him to the *Charter-house* in *Smithfield*, a Palace of the Lord *Thomas Howard's*, thro' Multitudes of People, who made the Air ring with their joyful Acclamations. Here the King created fourscore Knights, and a hundred more a few Days after; which, with those he made in his Journey, amounted to upwards of two hundred: And on the 20th of *May*, Sir *Robert Cecil* was created Baron of *Epindon*, Sir *Robert Sidney* Baron of *Pentburst*, Sir *William Knolles* Baron of *Greys*, Sir *Edward Wotton* Baron of *Morley*, and not long after, the Lord *Henry Howard* Earl of *Northampton*, and *Thomas Sackville*, Lord *Buckburst*, Earl of *Dorset*.

The King was so wise to remove very few of Queen *Elizabeth's* Ministers. The Lord Chancellor, the Treasurer and Admiral were continued in their Places, and Secretary *Cecil* had made his Court so very early, that he was confirmed

A.D. 1603

A. 1 Jac. I.

He is met at *Theobalds* by the Privy-Council.

Creations of the Nobility.

He arrives at *London*.

Above 200 Knights made.

More Creations of the Nobility.

Most of the late Q's Ministers continued. Secretary *Cecil* prime Minister.

A.D. 1603 confirmed in his Post of Prime Minister. It is related of this Gentleman, that as he was taking the Air with the late Queen in her Coach, the Post from *Scotland* came by ; and her Majesty desiring to see the Packet, *Cecil* was in some Pain, lest she should discover his Correspondence with that Prince : As he was cutting open the Strings thereof, he pretended the Packet had an ill Smell, and was not fitting for her Majesty to touch till it was air'd : Whereupon it was given to a Servant, and the Secretary found means to take out the obnoxious Papers before the Queen saw them. But to proceed : The King, observing with what Transports of Joy he was every-where receiv'd by his *English* Subjects, and that he had no room to doubt of their Loyalty and Affection for his Person, immediately sent for the Queen, his Son Prince *Henry* and the Princess *Elizabeth* ; who arriv'd about the middle of *June* : As to Prince *Charles*, it was thought fit he should remain in *Scotland* till the Year following, being then but three Years of Age.

The Q.
and Princes
sent for.

Foreign
Ambassa-
dors con-
gratulate
the King's
Accession.

Master of
the Cere-
monies
first insti-
tuted.

Earl of
Tirouen
pardoned.

In the mean time Ambassadors arriv'd from the Prince Palatine, the States of *Holland*, *France*, *Spain*, &c. to congratulate the King on his Accession ; and now it was, that the Office of Master of the Ceremonies, for introducing Ambassadors to their Audience, was first instituted in *England* ; Sir *Lewis Lewkenor* being the first Master. The Lord *Montjoy* about the same time brought over to *England* *Hugh O-Neale* Earl of *Tirouen*, who had given the Government so much Disturbance during the late Reign ; and the King, in this Time of general Joy, thought fit to pardon him ; tho' he was not so indulgent to *Valentine Thomas*, whom

whom he found in Prison, and charg'd with a Conspiracy against Queen *Elizabeth*; for he order'd him to be try'd at the *King's-Bench* Bar; where, being convicted of High-Treason, he was soon after executed. His Majesty is much censur'd by some Writers, for ordering a Pick-pocket to be hang'd, on his own Warrant, in his Journey to *London*, without a legal Trial; but the Sheriff and Officers about the King were surely much more to blame, in not representing to his Majesty, that it was Murder in them to put any Man to Death without a legal Trial, or such a Warrant by the Laws of *England*, which the King probably was ignorant of.

A.D. 1603

A. 1 Jac. I.

Thomas executed for a Conspiracy against *Q. Elizabeth*. A Pick-pocket executed without Trial.

Before the Coronation, which was appointed to be celebrated on the 25th of *July*, being *St. James's Day*, the King created several other Noblemen; the Lord *Montjoy* was made Earl of *Devon*; Sir *Thomas Egerton*, Lord-Chancellor, Baron of *Ellesmere*; Sir *William Russel*, Baron of *Thornhaugh*; Sir *Henry Gray*, Baron of *Groby*; Sir *John Peter*, Baron of *Writtle*; Sir *John Harrington*, Baron of *Exton*; Sir *Henry Danvers*, Baron of *Dautsey*; Sir *Thomas Gerrard*, Baron of *Gerrard-Bromley* in *Staffordshire*; and Sir *Robert Spencer*, Baron of *Wormleyton*: The King also knighted the Judges, Serjeants at Law, and many more; and created sixty-two Knights of the *Bath*, most of them Noblemens Sons and Persons of Distinction: After which, the King and Queen were crown'd at *Westminster*, on the 25th of *July*, by Archbishop *Whitgift*, in the Presence of the Nobility; but the Plague raging in *London*, only the Lord-Mayor, Sir *Robert Lee*, and his Brethren the Aldermen, with twelve of the principal Citizens, were permitted

Other Creations.

More Kts made.

62 Kts of the *Bath* made. The King and Queen crown'd.

A.D. 1603

A. 1 Jac. I.

Sir *Walter Raleigh*,
&c. try'd
and condemn'd for
H. Treason.

permitted to be at that Ceremony; and all Persons were prohibited to appear at Court the following Winter, there dying no less than thirty thousand of the Plague in *London* only within the Compass of a Year, which occasion'd the Courts of Justice to be remov'd to *Westminster*; where several great Men, who had been apprehended on suspicion of their Conspiracy against the Government, were brought to their Trials on the fourth of *November*, particularly the Lord *Cobham*, the Lord *Gray*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, Sir *Griffin Markham*, *George Brook* and *Anthony Cockby*, with *William Watson* and *William Clark* Priests; who being all convicted of High Treason, *Brook* and the two Priests were executed, and the rest repriev'd, but continued in Prison for some Time, their Estates being confiscated.

The
Charge
against Sir
Walter.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* was charg'd in the Indictment, with a Conspiracy to set the Lady *Arabella Stuart* upon the Throne, and applying to the King of *Spain* for Money and Troops to effect it: And it is generally suppos'd, that Sir *Walter* being turn'd out of his Place of Captain of the Guards, at the King's Accession, did keep Company with some that were disaffected to the Government; and that the advancing the Lady *Arabella* to the Throne, was mention'd by some of them; tho' 'tis not suppos'd, Sir *Walter* was engag'd in any form'd Design to subvert the Government: But however that was, he had certainly very hard Measure at his Trial; being convicted only on the Deposition of the Lord *Cobham*, which that Lord had retracted; whereas it was justified, that by 25 *Ed. III*, there ought to have been two Witnesses produc'd *vivâ voce*: But this

this Act, Sir *Edward Coke*, the Attorney-General, and even the Lord Chief Justices, *Popham* and *Anderfon*, shamefully affirm'd, was not in force; and probably, the King's being acquainted with the Defects in the Evidence, occasion'd the reprieving all but the Priests and *Brook*, whose Cases were very different from the rest: But I refer the Reader to the *State Trials* for a more particular Account of Sir *Walter's* Defence, and for the Trials of *Brook* and *Markham*, &c.

A.D. 1603

A. 1 Jac. I.

Before I proceed further, I shall beg leave to reflect on some Facts related by *Rapin* in the first Year of this Reign, and the Inferences drawn from them; and first, he tells us, That the first thing the Council did, after the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*, was, *to open her Will*; where they found she had named King *James* her Successor: But I believe it will be very difficult to prove that she nominated King *James* her Successor by a written Will, or indeed that she made any Will at all; nay, in the Proclamation, and in the Letter the Council sent King *James* to acquaint him with the Queen's Death, they mention no such Will, and only take notice of his Title by Descent; which to me is a Demonstration, the Queen made no such Will as *Rapin* mentions. And his other Assertion, That King *James* had three Titles; one by the Queen's Will, another by Act of Parliament, and another by Descent, is still more extraordinary; for, first, the Queen made no such Will; 2dly, if she had, *that* would not have limited the Succession of the Crown without an Act of Parliament to authorize her to make such a Will; and 3dly, King *Henry VIII.* was impower'd, by Act of Parliament, to limit the Succession of

Facts that are false related by *Rapin*.

Particularly, that the Queen made a written Will concerning the Succession.

And that K. *James* had a Parliamentary Title.

A.D. 1603 the Crown; and in pursuance of that Act, did settle it on the Issue of his younger Sister *Mary*, to the Exclusion of the *Scotish* Line; and consequently, King *James* could have no Parliamentary Right, or indeed any Appearance of a Title but by Descent, which he was always conscious of; and *therefore* constantly declar'd *that* to be his Title, and not with any arbitrary Views to subvert the Constitution, as *Rapin* maliciously affirms: But I shall consider this Prince's Title more at large, at the latter End of his Reign, in my usual Method. As to King *James*'s not altering his Countenance on receiving the News of Queen *Elizabeth*'s Death; his lifting up his Eyes to Heaven to give Thanks for it, and other ill-natur'd Suggestions of *Rapin*'s; I look upon these Circumstances to be entirely feign'd, either by himself or some whimsical Authors he follows, who lay more Stress upon such Incidents, than on Facts of moment; and indeed these are generally thrown in, either to amuse the Reader, or prejudice him in favour of their Party, before they enter upon the History: For the same Reason, Mr. *Rapin*, and some of his Brethren, begin their Histories with the Character of the Prince whose Reign they write, letting their Readers know, that, agreeable to the Picture they have drawn, they are to interpret all his Actions; whereas, surely, the more equitable Way would be, first, to give us the History of the Reign, and from thence to collect the Prince's Character. I must confess, there are a Set of Readers that chuse to be directed in all their Reflections, and can't endure to go without Leading-strings: And, if Mr. *Rapin* affirms, that King *James* was a vain Fool, and a Tyrant, they will believe it upon his Word, without giving

Unfair to
prejudice
People a-
gainst a
Prince, at
the Be-
ginning of
his His-
tory.

giving themselves the Trouble to examine the Truth of the Assertion, tho' they see him in another Place declaring (*That he had good natural Parts, a great Share of Learning, and that he was able to form the Plan of a good Government, the general Maxim whereof he knew perfectly well*) as he does, Vol 9. p. 236. These Gentlemen, *Rapin's* Readers, seem to have so implicit a Faith in their ador'd Author, that they can even swallow Contradictions from him, and still rely on his Infallibility with greater Assurance than the Catholicks do on the Pope's: Whereas, if they would consider, that as to Facts that happen'd an hundred and fifty Years ago, *Rapin* knows no more of them than another; that he must either take them from former Historians, or *invent* them, as in the Case of Queen *Elizabeth's* Will; and that they ought to presume them *invented*, where he advances any thing new, without citing his Authorities: I say, if these Things were consider'd, People would not so entirely pin their Faith upon his Veracity. And as to his Inferences, I cannot forbear thinking, but an *Englishman* is as capable of drawing just Conclusions as a *Frenchman*, and may possibly understand the Constitution of his Country as well as a Foreigner; especially one, who has discover'd his Ignorance of it in numerous Instances in this very History: But I shall leave my Remarks on the Character *Rapin* gives King *James*, and on the Constitution, to its proper Place, at the End of the Reign, and not run into the Fault I am censuring, of endeavouring to *prepossess* People before they have read the History. But to return:

From the Time of the King's Accession, he express'd a passionate Desire to see the two

A.D. 1603

A. 1 Jac. I.

Of Facts that happen'd many Years ago, *Rapin's* Authority is not to be rely'd on.

A.D. 1603 Kingdoms united ; and to that end, publish'd
 a Proclamation in his first Year, requiring the
 Borderers, and all others, to cease from Acts of
 Hostility, and to treat each other as Friends ;
 for he now look'd upon the Inhabitants of both
 Realms to be the Subjects of one Kingdom ;
 declaring, that he intended this Union should
 be establish'd by the States in Parliament, as
 soon as possible.

Another,
 whereby
 Monopo-
 lies are re-
 vok'd.

Another Proclamation was publish'd, where-
 in the King declares his Satisfaction at the
 People's recognizing his Title to the Throne,
 and receiving him with such Transports of
 Joy ; adding, that he should be as forward in
 requiting their Love, as they had been in ex-
 pressing it : And, as an Instance of his gracious
 Intentions, revok'd all those Patents for Mo-
 nopolies granted by the late Queen, which yet
 remain'd uncanceled ; to the end (he said)
 that a People, so dutiful and dear to him,
 might know and feel how desirous he was to
 make them happy. By the same Proclama-
 tion, he vacated all Royal Protections for the
 Delay of Law-Suits ; prohibited the Abuses
 committed by Purveyors, and the Officers im-
 power'd to search for Salt-petre ; reprehended
 the Extortions of Lawyers and Officers in the
 Courts of Justice ; and encourages the People
 to petition him for a Redress of any of their
 Grievances, promising, they should receive
 such Answers as should manifest his Regard to
 Justice and their Welfare. — These Declara-
 tions the impartial *Rapin* passes over very
 slightly, and, instead of them, entertains his
 Disciples with a Satyr upon the King's Go-
 vernment, before he had well enter'd upon it,
 making this doubty Remark ; That Procla-
 mations were much more frequent in this Reign,
 than

than in the late Queen's; and boldly affirms, that the King expected they should be obey'd as Laws; tho' he is so good indeed to remember, that when the Papists petition'd his Majesty for a Toleration of Religion, he answer'd them, That he was oblig'd to support the Religion he found establish'd in the Kingdom.

A.D. 1603

A. 1 Jac. I.

The modest Puritans, on the other hand, would not be content with a bare Toleration: They insisted, That the King should proceed to a further Reformation, and abolish several Rites and Ceremonies observ'd by the Church of *England*: And this occasion'd that famous Conference the King appointed to be held on the 14th of *January*, 1604, at *Hampton-Court*, between the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the Bishop of *London* and others, in behalf of the Church; and Dr. *Reynolds*, (afterwards a Bishop) Dr. *Spark*, Mr. *Knewstubb*, and *Chadderton*, in behalf of the Puritans. But I should have remembred, that before the Petition above-mention'd was presented, several of the Puritan Ministers began to omit great part of the Common Prayer; to lay aside the Surplice, and neglect the Ceremonies of the Church; and even to hold classical and synodical Meetings; as if, says my Author, the Laws themselves had died when the Queen expired: And this oblig'd the King to issue another Proclamation, prohibiting all People to make any Innovations in Religion, till his Majesty, on mature Deliberation, should take Order in it.

A.D. 1604

A. 1 Jac. I.

The Puritans petition the K. against the Rites of the Church

On the Day appointed for the Conference, the Bishops and Puritan Ministers, who were to manage it, resorting to *Hampton-Court*, the King commanded the Puritans to shew what were their Grievances: Whereupon Dr. *Reynolds*,

The Conference at Hampton-Court.

A.D. 1604 *nolds*, in the Name of his Brethren, answer'd, That there were some Things, relating both to the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church, which they objected to : That in the Articles of Religion, several Things were obscure, and others defective, which they desir'd might be supply'd and explain'd, and produc'd some Instances they apprehended to their Purpose. Whereupon the Articles objected to, were debated, and the Doctor and his Friends acknowledged, they had receiv'd entire Satisfaction. Then they proceeded to consider the Ceremonies of the Church, which the Puritans scrupled ; as, the Cross in Baptism, the Surplice, the Ring in Marriage, &c. And both Parties having offer'd what they had to urge on these Subjects, they were appointed to attend his Majesty another Day (the 18th of *January*;) when the Archbishop presented to the King certain Notes containing an Explanation of some Parts of the Liturgy the King had recommended to the Care of the Bishops ; with which *Dr. Reynolds* and the other Puritan Divines, also declar'd themselves satisfy'd. Whereupon the King exhorted them not to break the Unity of the Church, and recommended it to the Bishops to use the mildest Methods to reclaim those who differ'd in Opinion from them ; but added, he would have a Time limited by the Bishops of every Diocese, for the Clergy to submit and conform ; and that those who refus'd should be remov'd, for he must not prefer the Credit of a few private Men to the general Peace of the Church (for it seems, the Puritans insisted, that it would diminish their Credit to wear a Surplice or use the Cross in Baptism, which they had so long condemn'd.)

The Puritans declare themselves satisfy'd, and promise Conformity.

The Conference was no sooner ended, but the Puritans gave out, they had obtain'd an absolute Victory over the Bishops and conformable Clergy; that the King condescended to whatever Dr. *Reynolds* requir'd; and that if any one reported the contrary, he ly'd: That these Things were but the Beginning of Reformation, but greater Matters were expected: That his Majesty used very hard Words to the Bishops, but embrac'd Dr. *Reynolds*, and spoke to him with all imaginable Kindness: And this they endeavour'd to support at the Credit of their Party. Whereupon the King found it necessary to publish a Proclamation to undeceive the People, who would not believe the Puritans would have asserted these Things with so much Confidence, if there had not been some Grounds for it. The King, in this Proclamation, observes, that the Success of the Conference was such as happens to many other Things, which give great Expectation before they are closely examin'd: That he found strong Remonstrances, supported by such slender Proofs, that both himself and his Council perceiv'd, there was no Ground for any Change in those Things which were most loudly clamour'd against: That the Book of Common Prayer, and the Doctrine of the establish'd Church, were both unexceptionable: And as to the Rites and Ceremonies, they had the Practice of the Primitive Church to plead in their Defence: Notwithstanding which, some Passages had been alter'd, or rather explain'd, for their Satisfaction; and (having shewn in what Instances the Common Prayer had been so explain'd) he adds, that he requires all his Subjects should conform to it, as being the only publick Form of serving God establish'd

A.D. 1604

A. 1 Jac. I.

The Puritans triumph.

A Proclamation concerning the Success of the Conference, and requiring the Puritans to conform.

A.D. 1604 establish'd in this Realm; and takes notice, that *the Ministers present at the Conference, had promis'd Conformity to it*; admonishes the People therefore, not to expect any Alteration in the publick Service, for he was not ignorant how much a Government must suffer by admitting Innovations, and going off from Things settled upon a thorough Debate: That such was the desultory Levity of some People, that they were always longing after Change and Novelty; and that, if they were humour'd in their Inconstancy, it must expose the publick Management, and make the Administration ridiculous.

Another
banishing
of Jesuits.

On the other hand, he publish'd a Proclamation, commanding all Popish Priests and Jesuits to depart the Realm; from whence, both Papists and Puritans might understand, that the King was not inclin'd to make any Alterations in Religion in favour of either of them.

It was not long after the above-mention'd Conference, before Archbishop *Whitgift* dy'd, and was succeeded in that See by Dr. *Richard Bancroft*, Bishop of *London*.

A Parlia-
ment
call'd.

The Plague, which had hitherto prevented the Calling of a Parliament, beginning to abate, Writs were issu'd for the Election of the Commons, and the Meeting of the two Houses at *Westminster*, on the 19th Day of *March*; and the King, at the same time, publish'd a Proclamation, admonishing the Electors to make Choice of Persons qualify'd, as the Law requir'd; namely, of Persons of Quality and Estates, and such as were not Enemies to the Constitution, &c.

The Parliament meeting, according to their Summons, on the nineteenth of *March*, his Majesty

Majesty made a Speech to both Houses ; *A.D. 1604*
 wherein he tells them, That one principal
 Reason of his assembling the representative *A.2 Jac.I.*
 Body of the Nation at this Time was, to
 thank them for the Joy they had express'd on
 his Accession to the Throne ; *which God, by his* An Ab-
Birthright and lineal Descent, had, in the ful- tract of
ness of Time, provided for him immediately, the King's
after he had been pleas'd to call their late Sove- Speech.
raign of famous Memory, full of Days, but fuller
of immortal Trophies of Honour, out of this tran-
sitory Life.

Then he shew'd, that God had bestow'd His
 two great Blessings on them in his Person ; Thoughts
 namely, Peace with all their Neighbours, and of Reli-
 the Union of the whole Island under one Head: gion.
 He found, he said, but one Religion establish'd
 in the Kingdom, which he himself profess'd ;
 besides which, there were some call'd Catho-
 licks, but truly Papists ; and others Puritans,
 and Novellists, whom he call'd rather a Sect
 than a Religion, who did not differ from the
 Church so much in Points of Religion as in
 their confus'd Form of Policy and Purity ; be-
 ing ever discontented with the present Go-
 vernment, and impatient to suffer any Supe-
 riority, which made their Sect insufferable in
 any well-govern'd Common-wealth ; and as
 to the Course he design'd to take with them,
 his Majesty refer'd to the Proclamation already
 mention'd on that Subject.

As to the Papists, he acknowledg'd the
 Roman Church to be our Mother Church, tho'
 defil'd with some Infirmities and Corruptions :
 Nor was he to be look'd upon as an Enemy to
 that Church, because he would have them re-
 form their Errors ; and refer'd it to the Parlia-
 ment, to consider of the Laws made against
 them ; whether they had not been more rigo-

A.D. 1604

A. 2 Jac. I.

rously extended by the Judges than was design'd ; and to make some Provision, that the Innocent might not be included with the Guilty ; for he made a great Distinction between his Popish Subjects of the Clergy and of the Laity : Their Clergy were not to be suffer'd in the Kingdom while they maintain'd the Pope's Supremacy, and his Power of dethroning Sovereign Princes, and justified their detested Doctrines of Assassination and Rebellion, when they were sanctified by the Pope, *that Triple-crown'd Monarch, or rather Monster, their Head.* He wish'd he could be instrumental in a general Union of Christians. If the Papists would abandon their gross Corruptions, he would, for his part, be content to meet them in the mid-way ; but he would admonish the Papists of this Land, not to presume so much on his Lenity, as to think it lawful to increase their Number and Strength in the Kingdom, in hopes thereby to erect their Religion again : For tho' he was a Friend to their Persons, if they were good Subjects ; so he was an avow'd Enemy, and did denounce mortal War, to their Errors. And therefore he advises them, to confer with learned Men, and be instructed in the Principles of the Church of *England*, exhorting the Bishops and Clergy to endeavour their Reformation. Then he recommends to the Parliament, the making of good Laws ; and to the Judges and Magistrates, the putting them in execution ; observing, that a few good Laws well executed, are better than a multitude, which do but confound the People, and are generally neglected : And for his own part, he protested he should never be weary, or omit any Occasion, of executing good Laws ; tho', when he should have done all he had promis'd in this Speech, he acknowledg'd it was no more than

than he was bound to do ; he was accountable to God for the contrary : For the Difference between a rightful King and a usurping Tyrant, was this ; that the proud and ambitious Tyrant doth think, his Kingdom and People are ordain'd for Satisfaction of his Desires and unreasonable Appetites ; the righteous and just King doth, on the contrary, acknowledge himself to be ordain'd for procuring the Wealth and Prosperity of his People, and that his greatest and principal worldly Felicity would consist in the Prosperity of his Subjects.

A.D. 1604

A. 2 Jac. I.

The first thing the Parliament fell upon was, a Recognition of the King's Title, which afterwards pass'd into an Act, viz. 1 Jac. I. Cap. 1. In the Preamble whereof it is recited, That great and manifold were the Blessings this Nation enjoy'd by the Union of the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster* ; but more inestimable were the Blessings deriv'd to it by the Union, or rather Re-union, of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland* (formerly but one) in his Majesty's Royal Person, who was lineally, rightfully, and lawfully descended from the Lady *Margaret*, eldest Daughter of King *Henry VII.* and the Princess *Elizabeth* his Wife, eldest Daughter of King *Edward IV.* They thank God also for blessing them with a Sovereign, adorn'd with the rarest Gifts of Mind and Body, and upon the Knees of their Hearts agnize their most constant Faith, Obedience, and Loyalty to his Majesty and his Royal Progeny ; and beseech his Majesty, that as a Memorial of their Obedience, Loyalty and Affection, it may be enacted, That they, being bound thereto by the Laws of God and Man, did recognize and acknowledge, that immediately upon the Decease of Queen *Elizabeth*, the Imperial Crown

An Act of
Recogni-
tion.

A.D. 1602

A. 2 Jac. I.

}

of this Realm did, by inherent Birthright, and lawful and undoubted Succession, descend, and come to his Majesty, as being lineally, justly, and lawfully next and sole Heir of the Blood Royal of this Realm; and to him and his Successors did submit and oblige themselves, their Heirs and Posterities for ever.

Commis-
sioners ap-
pointed to
treat of a
Union.
Bishops
disabled to
part with
their
Lands.
Tonnage
and Poun-
dage gran-
ted to the
King for
Life.

By 1 Jac. I. cap. 10. an Authority is given to certain Commissioners, Members of both Houses, to treat of a Union with *Scotland*.

By 1 Jac. I. cap. 3. Bishops are disabled from alienating or conveying away the Lands or Revenues of their several Sees to the Crown.

By 1 Jac. I. cap. 33. the Dates of Tonnage and Poundage are granted to the King for Life, as the Act recites they had been to his Predecessors *Henry VII*, *Henry VIII*, *Edward VI*, *Queen Mary* and *Queen Elizabeth*, and others the King's Progenitors, time out of mind, for the Defence of the Realm, and Guard of the Seas. The Tonnage of Wine, by this Act, was laid at three Shillings a Ton for Wine imported by Denizens, and six Shillings per Ton for Wine imported by Aliens; and the Poundage on Goods and Merchandizes imported and exported, was laid at twelve Pence in the Pound; Tin, exported by Aliens, at two Shillings: (The Woollen Manufacture of *England* is exempted from paying any Duty.) They also grant the King for Life a Duty of three Shillings and four Pence on every Sack of Wool; and upon every two hundred and forty Wool-felts three Shillings and four Pence; and upon every Last of Hides and Backs three Pounds six Shillings and eight Pence. Provided, that no Duty or Custom be paid for Herrings or other Sea-fish exported by Denizens.

And a
Duty on
Wool and
Leather.

The rest of the Acts of this Session, which ended on the 4th of *July*, 1604, will be found at the End of the Reign.

A.D. 1604

A.2 Jac. I.

The King
proclaim'd
King of
Great Bri-
tain.

The Convocation, being assembled at the same Time the Parliament was conven'd, fram'd many excellent Canons, which are in force at this Day. After the Rising of the Parliament, the King caus'd himself to be proclaim'd *King of Great Britain*. The *Scottish* Coin was made current in *England*; and St. *George's* and St. *Andrew's* Crosses were order'd to be quarter'd in all Flags and Colours: But notwithstanding the great Encouragement the King gave towards the bringing about a full and compleat Union between the two Kingdoms, he had not the Happiness of seeing it effected in his Reign: Nor was his Majesty less desirous of a universal Peace abroad than of a Union at home. From his first coming into *England*, he had declar'd his Intention of making Peace with *Spain*, the only Nation we were then at War with; and had accordingly order'd all Letters of Mart to be recall'd: And there arriving a magnificent Embassy from *Spain*, soon after the Rising of the Parliament, a Treaty between the two Crowns was negotiated, and concluded on the 18th of *August*.

A Peace
concluded
with *Spain*.

By this Peace, the contracting Parties agreed not to assist the Rebels or Enemies of each other: But it is evident from one of the Articles mention'd by *Du Chesne*, that the Confederacy between *England* and *Holland* was not to be dissolv'd thereby; for this Article provides, That Things should remain as they were, as to the States of the United Provinces; and that the King of *England* should not be oblig'd to recall his Troops from the *Low-Countries*,

A.D. 1604 *Countries*, or prohibit his Subjects serving the States; and that the Trade between *England* and the United Provinces, should remain on the same Foot it did in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Rapin's
Account
of the Con-
ference,
contrary
to that of
his Puri-
tan Bre-
thren.

Give me leave here to make some further Observations on the ingenious and good-natur'd *Rapin*: And, first, as to the Conference at *Hampton-Court*; he says, "That the Puritan Ministers perceiving the King was their Adversary, which they did not expect, chose to be silent, and make as if they were satisfy'd." Whereas it appears, that the Puritans themselves gave out, immediately after the Conference, that the King treated Dr. *Reynolds* and his Brethren with the greatest Goodness and Condescension: And our Ecclesiastical Historians expressly say, *That the Puritan Ministers declar'd, they were satisfy'd, and promis'd to conform.* The Proclamation also publish'd by the King, on this Occasion, declares in like manner, That the Puritan Ministers, who were Managers at that Conference for their Brethren, *promis'd* to conform to the Liturgy; which is something more than *making as if they were satisfy'd.* Another Proclamation, the squeamish *Rapin* cannot digest, is, that for calling a Parliament: In his Reflections on which, he takes the Liberty of diving into the King's Breast; telling us, "That King *James* was persuaded, that the Parliament's and People's Privileges were so many Usurpations, or at best but Concessions of the Kings his Predecessors; which might be revok'd: And this, he says, the King discover'd both in the Writs and Proclamation for calling the Parliament; taking upon him to describe what sort of Representa-

He pre-
tends to
dive into
the King's
Thoughts.

“ tives

“tives should be elected, and on what Con-
 “ditions they should be admitted into the
 “House, *assuming a Power to inflict Penal-*
 “*ties by his bare Proclamation; the Authority*
 “*whereof the King maintain’d to be equal to*
 “*that of the Laws.*” But the Falsity of these
 Assertions, advanc’d by *Rapin*, will appear by
 examining this Proclamation, and the Laws
 and Statutes on which it was founded.

As to the Proclamation which we meet with
 in *Rymer’s Fædera*, Vol. 16: a Book which *Ra-*
pin pretends to be very intimate with; the King
 there charges and admonishes all Persons inte-
 rested in the Choice of Knights of Shires,
 that they be elected out of the principal Knights
 or Gentlemen of Substance within the County
 where they are chosen; and that the Burges-
 ses be discreet and substantial Men, without par-
 tial Respects or factious Combination. He
admonishes them also, to chuse Men of com-
 petent Years and Experience, and Men of a
 modest Conversation, Men sincerely religious;
 and that they avoid the chusing Men noted for
 their Superstition or turbulent Humours; that
 they also avoid the electing Bankrupts, or
 Outlaw’d Persons; it being absurd to chuse
 Persons for Law-makers, and empower’d to
 grant Subsidies, who are out of the Protection
 of the Laws, and had nothing to dispose of.
 Then the Sheriffs are directed not to send their
 Precepts to any ancient Boroughs for electing
 Burges-
 ses, where the Borough-Town is utterly
 ruin’d and decay’d, and there are not Resi-
 dents sufficient to make a Choice; and to charge the
 Inhabitants of all Cities and Boroughs not to
 sign Blanks, leaving it to others to insert the
 Names of their Citizens or Burges-
 ses; but *that*
they make open and free Election according to
Law;

A.D. 1604

A. 1 & 2

Jac. I.

Found-
 his Surmi-
 ses upon
 Facts
 that are
 false.

Rapin’s
 Remarks
 on the Pro-
 clamations
 for calling
 a Parlia-
 ment exa-
 min’d.

A.D. 1604 *Law*; setting down the Names of the Persons they chuse before they seal the Certificate. His Majesty *notifies* also, That all Returns are to be made in *Chancery*, and filed, of Record; and that if any are made contrary to this Proclamation, they are *unlawful* and insufficient, and the City or Borough ought to be fin'd; and if they shall have committed any gross or wilful Contempt in their Elections, that then their Liberties might by *Law* be seiz'd as forfeited: And if any Person took upon him to sit as a Member, not being duly elected, return'd, and sworn, *according to the Laws and Statutes, and the true Intent and Meaning of this Proclamation*, he was to be fin'd and imprison'd for the same.

He suppresses the first Part of the Proclamation with an Intent to asperse the King.

It is to be presum'd, Mr. *Rapin* suppress'd the first Part of this Proclamation, that the Reader might not discover it was founded upon the Laws of the Land, as well as upon solid Reasons; and that it was intended to explain and enforce the Laws of the Land, and not to break thro' them, or make any new Laws by his Majesty's sole Authority, as that Writer falsely affirms.

Rapin must be notoriously ignorant of our Constitution, or exceeding malicious and unjust, when he charg'd the King with assuming a Power contrary to Law, when he directed the Electors what kind of Men they should chuse; because there never were any Writs issued for the electing Representatives since Parliaments were in being, but what mention the Qualifications of the Members to be elected, and that by way of Command, and not by way of Advice: Whereas the King, in this Proclamation, only *charges* and *admonishes* the Electors to chuse such Men, as the Law, and their own Reason

Reason dictated they ought to chuse, on pain of such Punishments as the same Law provided.

A.D. 1604
A. 1 & 2
Jac. I.

The usual Direction in the Writs for the Election of Knights, is, that they chuse, *Duos Milites Gladiis cinctos magis idoneos & discretos*; Two discreet Knights, who are best qualify'd to set in that grand Council. And for the Election of Citizens and Burgeesses, the Words are, *Duos de discretioribus & magis sufficientibus*; Two of the most discreet and most substantial.

4 Inst. 48.

And under these Heads may be reduc'd most of the Qualifications requir'd by the King's Proclamation.

As to the Acts of Parliament, in relation to Elections, it is directed by 7 Hen. IV. cap. 15. how Elections shall be made. And by 11 H. IV. cap. 1. it is enacted, That the Justices of Assize shall have Power to enquire of the Returns of Sheriffs; and that if the Sheriff have made Return contrary to 7 Hen. IV, he shall forfeit 100*l.* and the Knight unduly return'd shall lose his Wages. By 1 Hen. V. cap. 1. and 10 Hen. VI. cap. 2. both Candidates and Electors are to be Resident in their Counties and Boroughs. By 23 Hen. VI. cap. 15. farther Penalties are laid upon the Return, Officers not making due Returns, and Actions given to the Parties griev'd. And by the same Act, a Member sitting in the House, not duly return'd, forfeits 100*l.* to the King, and another 100*l.* to the Person injur'd. The same Act requires Knights, or Gentlemen of Quality and Fortune, to be elected for Counties: And the Common Law requires several other Qualifications in Persons to be elected; as appears, 4 Inst. 46, 47, &c.

The K's
Proclamation
founded on the
Statutes
relating to
Elections.

A.D. 1604

A. 1 & 2

Jac. I.

{

And after this, possibly Mr. *Rapin's* Friends will admit, that the King might, by his Proclamation, declare what sort of Persons the Law required to be elected, and the Penalty of making false Returns, without incurring the Reputation of an arbitrary despotick Governor ; for it is evident, as I have hinted already, that the End and Use of Proclamations is, to explain and enforce the Laws ; which the common People, of whom the greatest part of the Electors consist, cannot be suppos'd to be sufficiently appriz'd of and instructed in.

It is observable, that the King mentions the very same Qualifications in his Proclamation, as the Common and Statute Laws require : And then, in the Conclusion of the Proclamation, declares, that if any Member should sit in the House, not being duly elected and sworn *according to the Laws and Purport of the Proclamation* (conjunctively, and not disjunctively) such Offender was to be fin'd and imprison'd ; for which, no doubt, he had the Opinion of his prime Minister *Cecil*, the same who was prime Minister to Queen *Elizabeth*, and of the Lawyers of those Times. Mr. *Rapin* himself, how credulous or willing soever to asperse the King, could not suppose that this Proclamation was issued without the Advice of the Council, or the Opinion of the Learned, when his Majesty had not been a Year in the Kingdom. Upon the whole therefore, how Mr. *Rapin's* Friends will quit him either of defaming or calumniating King *James*, or of gross Ignorance in our Laws and Constitution, is not easy to conceive.

The same admired Author relates, that the Time for the Meeting of the Parliament approaching,

proaching, the King, *to gain the Affections of his Subjects*, thought it necessary to suppress some Abuses in the late Reign; and therefore publish'd Proclamations against Monopolies, the Extortions of Purveyors, &c. Whereas it appears, that those Proclamations were publish'd the Year before, immediately after the King came to *England*, bearing Date the 7th of *May*, in the first Year of his Reign; which is a Mistake one would not have expected to have met with in so very exact a Writer, who pretends to correct all that went before him.

A.D. 1604
A. 1 & 2
Jac. I.
Mistaken
in the
Time of
some other
Proclama-
tions.

As to his wresting and torturing the King's first Speech to his Parliament, and putting unnatural'd Constructions on almost every Paragraph of it; this is obvious to every Man of common Sense: But nothing can be more ridiculous than his insinuating, that the King was offended with the Parliament, for bringing in a Bill for recognizing his Title; for they do not pretend to make him a new Parliamentary Title, but only acknowledge his Hereditary Right, and promise, that they and their Posterity will for ever remain obedient to him and his Heirs. Surely this could be no Prejudice to his Title by Descent, or give the least Offence to a Prince endued with but a very ordinary Store of Sense; and therefore it must be look'd upon as another false and malicious Suggestion of our celebrated Author.

Rapin's
Remarks
on the K's
Speech
consider'd.

He adds, that *all* the Protestants in general heard, with Grief, the Advances the King made to the Papists, especially in the Offer of *meeting them half way*: But it is very much to be question'd, whether any Protestants, except his Brethren the Puritans, were griev'd at the Expression; which only shew'd a generous Concern to see all Christendom united, that

A.D. 1604 they might be one Fold under one Shepherd ;
 the pious Wish of all good Men : That he
A. 1 & 2 never intended to espouse any of their Errors, is
Jac. I. evident from the same Speech, where he says,
 he was an avow'd Enemy, and denounc'd
 mortal War to their Errors ; and that he would
 never cease to tread down their Errors and
 wrong Opinions.

His Re-
 flections
 on the Bi-
 shops and
 Clergy
 consider'd.

But to proceed ; *Rapin* tells us, in one place,
 that it was Secretary *Cecil* that inspired the King
 with arbitrary Notions : And, p. 299 of the
 9th Vol. “ *That it was the Bishops and Clergy*
 “ *of the Church of England ; and falls upon*
 “ *Archbishop Bancroft* in particular, who
 “ was one of the first, as he relates, that at-
 “ tempted to leap over the usual Bounds, by
 “ causing some Things to depend on the King's
 “ Will, which was undeniably within the Ju-
 “ risdiction of the Parliament : And, as an
 “ Instance of this, he tells us, that he exhibited
 “ twenty-five Grievances of the Clergy, where-
 “ in he desired Redress, and pray'd his Maje-
 “ sty he would be pleas'd to grant Prohibi-
 “ tions, that the Courts of Common Law
 “ might have nothing to do with them : But
 “ that his Majesty consulted the Judges, who
 “ advised him not to grant the Bishops
 “ Request.”

Query, if
 he be not
 mistaken
 in his
 Charge.

Here the sagacious *Rapin* seems to have
 mistaken the Case pretty much ; for the Dis-
 pute was concerning the Jurisdiction of the Ec-
 clestialtical Courts, and the Courts of Common
 Law ; they are both of them the King's
 Courts, and establish'd by the Laws of the
 Land : But the Judges frequently disputed,
 whether certain Cases belong'd to the Juris-
 diction of the Spiritual Courts, which they
 claim'd Cognizance of, and would grant Pro-
 hibitions

A.D. 1604

A. 1 & 2

Jac. I.

hibitions to stay the Proceedings of the Ecclesiastical Judges. This the Bishops look'd upon as a great Grievance, and petition'd the King and Council, that Prohibitions might not be granted to stay such Causes as of right belong'd to the Bishops Jurisdiction: But the King and Council referring the Matter to the twelve Judges, they were of opinion, that the Causes mention'd in the Bishops Petition, belong'd to the Temporal Courts; which was indeed a Determination in their own Favour: However, the King was govern'd by the Opinion of the Judges, and the Petition rejected: But could any Man, besides *Rapin*, from hence have brought such a terrible Charge against the Bishops; *That they attempted to leap over the usual Bounds, by causing Things to depend on the King's Will, which belong'd to the Jurisdiction of the Parliament?* If he had said, *which belong'd to the Jurisdiction of the Council in Westminster-hall*, he had came pretty near the Truth; for it appears, that the Judges determin'd that the Cases mention'd belong'd to their Courts, and it is not to be conceiv'd what the Parliament had to do with the Matter. It may be observ'd farther, how far the King and Council were from acting *arbitrarily*, even in behalf of their Friends the Bishops; in that they referr'd the Matter to the Judges, and acquiesc'd in their Opinion, tho' it was against them. Another Observation cannot be pass'd by, which is, that whatever was amiss, whatever arbitrary Measures were entred upon, *Rapin constantly ascribes them to the Influence and Advice of the Clergy of the Church of England*, so extremely just and impartial he appears, when he has occasion to mention that Body. By these few Instances we may judge

The Clergy always charged by *Rapin* with putting the King upon arbitrary Measures.

*A.D.*1604 of the Ability, Impartiality, and other Qualifications of the admired *Rapin* for an *English* Historian ; but it will not consist with my Design to trace him through all his Shifts and Doubtings, his misrecited Facts and unjust Inferences ; tho' I shall hint at some of the most notorious, as I go along, for the sake of the Friends of the Constitution : For, as to the Enemies of it, I look upon them to be so prejudic'd and harden'd in their Errors, that they are past Conviction ; and that Arguments are, for the most part, thrown away upon them.

*A.D.*1605 The following Year, the Town of *Ostend* was taken from the *Dutch* by the *Spaniards*, after it had endured three Years Siege, and a hundred and twenty thousand Men had been lost, either in attacking or defending it. The whole Town and Walls were reduced to a Heap of Rubbish : However, the Place was still of Importance, on account of its Harbour, which is the best upon the Coast of *Flanders*.

Promotions and Creations of the Nobility.

There were several new Promotions in the Court of *England* about the same time. The King's second Son, *Charles*, Duke of *Albany*, was created Duke of *York* ; and, on the Feast of *St. George* (the 23d of *April*) Duke *Ulrick*, of *Norway*, Brother to the Queen, with the Earl of *Northampton*, were made Knights of the Garter. Some few Days after, Secretary *Cecil*, Viscount *Cranburn*, was created Earl of *Salisbury* ; *Thomas Cecil*, Lord *Burleigh*, his eldest Brother, Earl of *Exeter* ; Sir *Philip Howard*, younger Brother to the Earl of *Pembroke*, Earl of *Montgomery* ; *Robert Sidney*, Baron of *Penhurst*, and Lord Chamberlain to the Queen, Viscount *Lisle* ; Sir *John Stanhope*,

hope, Vice-Chancellor to the King, was made *A.D. 1603*
 Lord *Stanhope* of *Harrington*; Sir *George*
Carew, Vice-Chamberlain to the Queen (the *A. 3 Jac. I.*
 Gentleman who carried King *James* the first
 News of Queen *Elizabeth's* Death) Lord
Carew of *Clopton*; *Thomas Arundel*, of *De-*
vonshire, Lord *Arundel* of *Wardour*; and
William Cavendish was created Lord *Cavendish*
 of *Hardwick*. As these Creations were all
English, it seems probable, that the King was
 induced to make them, to give some Satisfac-
 tion to those who began to murmur at the Fa-
 vours he daily heaped on his *Scotish* Subjects;
 and, as a further Instance of his impartial Jus-
 tice, he caused *Thomas Douglas*, a Native of
Scotland, to be try'd and executed for High
 Treason, in counterfeiting the Privy Seal;
 whereby he imposed on several of the *German*
 Princes, and particularly the Elector *Palatine*,
 who discover'd the Cheat, and sent the Offen-
 der Prisoner to *England*. But there was a Set
 of more notorious Traitors discover'd, and
 brought to Justice, the latter End of this Year;
 namely, the Conspirators concern'd in the in-
 famous Powder-Plot. The Jesuits, and most
 bigotted Papists, it seems, finding the King
 determin'd not to tolerate their Religion, but
 to banish all those who acknowledg'd the
 Pope's Supremacy and the deposing Doc-
 trines, became extremely discontented, and held
 Consultations how they might restore their Af-
 fairs: The most desperate of these were, *Ro-*
bert Catesby, a Gentleman of a good Family
 in *Northamptonshire*; *Thomas Percy*, a near
 Relation of the Earl of *Northumberland*, and
 one of the Band of Pensioners; *Thomas Win-*
ter, *John Grant*, *Ambrose Rockwood*, *Christo-*
pher Wright, *Francis Tresham*, Sir *Everard*
Digby,

A.D. 1605 Digby, and *Guy Fawkes*; who had frequent Meetings in *London*: At one of which *Perry* proposed the killing the King, and offer'd to be one of the Assassins: To which *Catesby* answer'd, that if the King was taken off, there were still two young Princes and the Princess, with the greatest Part of the Nobility and Gentry, devoted to the Protestant Religion; and unless these were involved in the same Fate with the King, they should render their Condition rather worse than better, by attempting his Majesty's Life only: He proposed therefore the blowing up the King, Queen, and Prince, with both the Houses of Lords and Commons, at the next Assembly of the Parliament, when the King should come to the House, and make his Speech there, at the opening of it; which being approved by the rest as a most glorious Undertaking, it was resolved to put it in Execution; only some, scrupling the Lawfulness of committing so terrible a Slaughter on a Religious Account, they agreed, before they proceeded in it, to demand the Opinion of their Confessors; whereupon *Henry Garnet*, the Superior, with *Oswald Tesmond* and *John Gerard*, two other Priests of the Jesuits Order, were consulted; who did not only declare the Enterprize lawful, but applauded the Design as just, and even pious; since it was to be executed upon excommunicated Hereticks. Then an Oath of Secrecy was taken by the Conspirators; and Mass being celebrated by *Gerard*, they also took the Sacrament to be true to each other, and promote the Plot with all their Powers: After which, *Percy* took a House adjoining to the House of Lords, from whence they proposed to dig a Mine under it, which would contain
a suf-

a sufficient Quantity of Gun-powder to blow up the whole Building; and they began to work on their Mine about *Christmas* 1604: But the Parliament being prorogued first to *February*, then to *October*, and again to the 5th of *November* 1605, they had Time enough, or rather too much, to effect their Design, tho' they were oblig'd to dig thro' the Foundation of a very thick Wall. When the Conspirators had almost conquer'd this Difficulty, they were surpriz'd to hear a Noise and the talking of People near the Place where they were at work, and began to conclude they were discover'd; but sending out *Guy Fawkes* for Intelligence, he brought them word, that the Voices he had heard were in an adjoining Cellar, where Coals were expos'd to Sale; that it was exactly under the House of Lords, and now offer'd to be let: Whereupon *Percy* went immediately and hir'd it, putting thirty-six Barrels of Gunpowder into it, which he imported from *Holland*, and cover'd them with Coals and Faggots.

Having made this Provision for their grand Design, it was consider'd, that tho' the King and Prince might be taken off by this Means, yet the Duke of *York* and the Princess *Elizabeth* would be out of their Power; and consequently the Success of their Enterprize must still be very doubtful: But *Percy*, being one of the Band of Pensioners, and well acquainted with the Palace, undertook to secure the Duke of *York*; and it was look'd upon as no difficult Matter to surprize the Princess, who resided at the Lord *Harrington's* in *Warwickshire*, under a pretence of a Hunting-match. It was next consider'd, what Money and Horses they could raise towards effecting their Purpose:

A.D. 1605 Whereupon *Digby* promis'd fifteen hundred Pounds, *Tresham* two hundred, *Percy* the Rents of *Northumberland*, which he was impower'd to receive, and computed they would amount to four thousand Pounds: He also engag'd to provide ten Horses from the same Quarter; and the rest of the Conspirators promised to raise what Money and Troops they could, that they might be able to make a Stand, and encourage their Friends to take Arms in Defence of their Religion, when the great Blow was given. It was debated also, whether they should require the Assistance of any Princes of their Communion; but it was thought proper to defer this till after the Fact was committed, lest the Plot should be discover'd by being communicated to too many. And it was resolv'd to proclaim the Princess *Elizabeth* Queen, when they had assembled their Troops, a Proclamation being drawn up with this View, in which they made no Mention of the intended Alteration of Religion; this being agreed to be defer'd till their Forces should be join'd by some of the Catholick Powers. In the mean time, they resolv'd to charge the Puritans with the Destruction that was intended: And, as to the Duke of *York*, it is generally suppos'd, they design'd to have assassinated him, by their proposing to proclaim he Princess *Elizabeth*.

Thus had the Conspirators form'd their Scheme, and proceeded so far in the Execution of it, that there remain'd little more for them to do, than to set fire to the Train they had laid for blowing up the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Nobility, and the Representatives of a great and flourishing People. When, on a sudden, an unaccountable Fit of Tenderness seiz'd

feiz'd one of these merciless Wretches, who, by his endeavouring to rescue a Friend from this unparallel'd Destruction, discover'd the deep-laid Design, which *Lucifer* only, say some of our Historians, could be the Contriver of. This Discovery was made by the following Letter sent to the Lord *Monteagle* by one of the Conspirators, about ten Days before the Meeting of the Parliament, viz.

A.D. 1605

A. 3 Jac. I.

M Y L O R D,

OUT of the Love I bear to some of your Friends, I have Regard to your Preservation; therefore would advise you, as you tender your Life, to invent some Excuse to shift off your Attendance at this Parliament; for God and Man have concurr'd to punish the Wickedness of this Time. Think not slightly of this Advertisement, but retire yourself into the Country, where you may expect the Event in Safety; for tho' there be no Appearance of any Stir; yet, I say, they shall receive a terrible Blow in this Parliament, and shall not see who hurt them. This Counsel is not to be contemn'd, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm, for the Danger is past, as soon as you have burnt the Letter: And I hope God will give you the Grace to make good Use of it. To whose holy Protection I commit you.

The Letter sent to the Lord *Monteagle*.

This Lord carry'd the Letter, the same Evening he receiv'd it, to Secretary *Cecil*; who communicated it to some other Members of the Council: But they did not think it of that Consequence, to make any Enquiries about the Matter, till the King should return from *Royston*, whither he was gone to hunt, and did not return till the last of *October*. The next Day

The Ministry slight it.

A.D. 1605; this Letter was shewn his Majesty ; who, upon perusing it, said, he did not think it was to be condemn'd : To which *Cecil* answer'd, he was of opinion, that it was written either by a Fool or a Madman, by that Expression in it, *The Danger is past, as soon as you have burnt the Letter* : For he observ'd, the Warning given by it could be of no Use, if the burning the Letter would remove the Danger : But the King interpreted it, *That the Danger would be over in as little Time as he could burn the Letter* ; having great Regard to that Passage, *They should receive a terrible Blow this Parliament, and yet should not see who hurt them*. Which sudden Blow, he apprehended, would be the Effect of Gun-powder ; and therefore order'd the Cellars, and all other Places near the Parliament-house, to be searched. The Earl of *Suffolk*, who was then Lord-Chamberlain, and whose proper Business it was to see all Places prepared for the King's Reception, put off the Search till the Day before the Parliament was to meet ; and then, taking the Lord *Monteagle* with him, view'd all the Rooms about the Parliament-house, and particularly the Cellar under the House of Lords ; which he found full of Wood and Coals : And having asked, who it belong'd to ? was answer'd, to Mr. *Percy* ; who being a Servant of his Majesty's, and one who made some Figure at Court, the Earl returned, and acquainted the King in what State he found Things, without searching farther : But the King's Suspicion being rather increas'd than diminish'd by this Report, he order'd all the Wood and Coals in the Cellar, already mention'd, to be remov'd forthwith ; and Sir *Thomas Purvet*, a Justice of Peace of *Westminster*, and Gentleman of the Privy-Chamber,

The K.
discovers
the true
Meaning
of the Let-
ter.

And or-
ders the
Rooms
near the
Parlia-
ment-
house to
be search-
ed.

Chamber, was order'd to see it done, tho' it was then late at Night. This Gentleman was so fortunate, as to discover the six and thirty Barrels of Powder hidden under the Coals; he found also a Man standing near the Place booted and spurr'd, with his Cloak on; whom he search'd, and found upon him a Dark Lantern and three Matches. This Person prov'd to be *Guy Fawkes*, one of the Conspirators, who pass'd for *Percy's* Man; who seeing their hopeful Plot disappointed, swore, when he was apprehended, that had he been found within the Cellar, he would have blown up himself and all of them. This Discovery being made, the Secretary and the Lord-Chamberlain immediately acquainted the King with it, who was then in Bed; and the Prisoner being, examined before the Council, was so far from being in any Consternation, that he acknowledg'd the villainous Design, took it all upon himself, said his Religion and Conscience prompted him to it, and would name none of his Accomplices; only observ'd, *That the Devil had betray'd a very good Design, and that there was no Crime in destroying an heretical King.* However, being carry'd to the Tower the next Day, and threatned with the Rack, he confess'd the Conspiracy, and nam'd his Accomplices; who having some Intimation of the Discovery, fled into *Warwickshire*; where some of his Friends were preparing to rise in Arms, and surprize the Princess *Elizabeth*, according to the Scheme they had laid; and they actually had broke open a Stable of one *Bourch*, and seiz'd seven or eight manag'd Horses for their Purpose: But understanding by their Friends, who fled from *London*, that the Enterprize was entirely defeated, they assembled about an hundred Horse,

A.D. 1605

A.3 Jac.I.

The Gun-
powder
under the
House of
Lords dis-
cover'd.

Fawkes
appre-
hended.

The Con-
spirators
fly, and
endeavour
to defend
them-
selves.

A.D. 1605

A. 3 Jac. I.

Some of
them are
killed, and
others ap-
prehend-
ed.

Horse, and endeavour'd to persuade their Brethren, the Papists, to take Arms in the Defence of their Religion : But no-body joining them, they fled, and were pursued by Sir *Foulk Grevill*, Deputy-Lieutenant of *Warwickshire*, and the Sheriffs of that and the Neighbouring Counties, till the Rebels took Shelter at a House call'd *Holback* in *Staffordshire*. Here they endeavour'd to defend themselves, when a Spark of Fire falling into a Parcel of Gun-powder, they were drying by the Fire, blew up Part of the House ; whereupon they endeavour'd to sally out of the Gate, and make their Way with their Swords in their Hands, but were repulsed ; *Catesby*, *Percy* and *Winter* setting themselves Back to Back, resolv'd to die fighting : The two first had their Desire, and were killed on the Spot, but *Winter* was wounded and taken ; *Digby*, *Rockwood*, *Grant* and *Boter* surrender'd, and *Tresham*, *Robert Winter* and *Littleton* were apprehended at their Lodgings at *London*, and all of them committed to the *Tower*.

Thomas Winter, upon his Examination, confess'd the whole Conspiracy, and acknowledg'd their Crimes too great to be forgiven ; while *Digby*, on the other hand, said they were provok'd to this desperate Attempt by the severe Usage they met with from the Government, after Hopes had been given them of a Toleration ; and *Tresham*, in his Examination, accused *Garnet* the Jesuit as privy to the Conspiracy, tho' he afterwards retracted it, and pretended he had not seen *Garnet* in sixteen Years.

The Conspirators being most of them in Custody, or fled, the Parliament assembled on the ninth of *January* ; to whom his Majesty made a Speech, setting forth the Danger they had

A.D. 1606

A. 4 Jac. I.

The K's
Speech on
the Disco-
very of the
Plot.

had been all expos'd to, and the infinite Mercy of God in discovering and preventing it; observing, that there was no Religion or Sect in the World but this, even amongst the *Turks*, *Jews*, or *Pagans*, that held it meritorious to murder Princes, and destroy the best constituted Governments for the Advancement of their Religion; nor did he imagine, that all *Roman Catholicks* maintain'd such Principles; and therefore thought a Distinction ought to be made between those who were quiet and peaceable Subjects, and such as *had imbib'd these accurs'd Principles*. And, as the further Examination of the Plot was like to take up some Time, the King thought fit to prorogue the Paliament to the 21st of *January*; soon after which, the King receiv'd the Congratulations of the foreign Ministers, upon his Deliverance from the Powder-plot. And among others, the Ambassadors of the King of *Spain* and the Arch-Duke paid their Compliments, and made Presents to the King and Queen upon the Occasion: They also made Bonfires before their Doors in *London*, to manifest their Joy. But still I find their Sincerity was pretty much question'd, the *Spaniard* being to have reap'd the greatest Advantage by the Plot, if it had succeeded. As to the Lord *Monteagle*, who was so instrumental in the Discovery of it, the King settled Fee-farm Rents upon him and his Heirs, to the Value of two hundred Pounds *per Annum*, besides an Annuity of five hundred Pounds *per Annum* during his Life.

And here give me leave to mention some of *Rapin's* smart Remarks on this Plot, and the King's Conduct: He tells us, p. 295, of the 9th Vol. 8vo Edit. "*That the People consider'd, with Grief and Astonishment, the tender*"

Rapin's
Remarks
on the Plot
consider'd.

A.D. 1606 “ *tender Regard the King express’d for the Ca-*
 “ *tholicks in general*, in his Speech, when he
 A 4 Jac. I. “ made that imaginary Distinction between
 “ the King-killers of that Religion and the
 “ rest of the Papists: But what offended
 “ *Rapin* still more was, the King’s declaring
 “ in the same Speech, That he thought the
 “ Cruelty of the Puritans, who would allow
 “ no Salvation to any Papist, was worthy of
 “ Fire; and from hence *Rapin* takes an Op-
 “ portunity to remark, That this Prince
 “ shew’d an extreme Tendernefs for *Roman*
 “ *Catholicks* thro’ the whole Course of his
 “ Reign, and a great Aversion for the Pu-
 “ ritans.”

But what Authority this Writer has to say, that the People consider’d, *with Grief and Astonishment*, the King’s Tendernefs for the Catholicks, he is not pleas’d to tell us; and, indeed, all our Historians (except *Rapin*, and his Puritan Brethren, who were piqu’d at his Majesty’s censuring their Uncharitableness) observe, that the King’s Wisdom and Conduct was highly applauded, and the Rejoicings of the People were *universal*. Mr. *Rapin*, indeed, insinuates, *That the King ought to have mas- sacred and extirpated all the Roman Catholicks in the Kingdom*, on the Discovery of the Plot: What else does he mean, when he calls the Distinction *imaginary*, which the King made between the innocent and the guilty of that Persuasion? As his Brethren doom all Papists (and indeed every-body else, but their own Sect) to the Flames in the next World; so this charitable Man would assign them all to the Ax or the Gibbet in this: But the generality of Men are more mercifully disposed I presume; nay, I question whether there will be

be found a Sect in *Europe*, except the Disciples of *Calvin*, who charge *all* the *Roman* Catholics with the same pernicious Principles ; and why King *James* should not make the same Distinction, as all other impartial Men do, I cannot conceive : I acknowledge that this Prince does, upon several Occasions, take an Opportunity of letting the World know, that he will make a Difference between such Papists as are peaceable, and those whose Principles lead them to disturb the Government ; but I cannot admit, that he did this Act out of any Esteem or Affection he had for the Popish Religion : He was himself, without doubt, a sincere Protestant, and caused his Sons to be educated in the same Religion ; but he had no mind to make a religious War of it, and draw all the Popish Princes of *Christendom* upon him ; as he would have done, if he had declar'd himself an Enemy to Papists as such, and sacrificed all his Subjects of that Religion to his Resentment, as the Puritans would have had him done. He saw with what extreme Difficulty and Hazard, that most accomplish'd Princess *Elizabeth*, his Predecessor, maintain'd herself upon the Throne, while she had *Spain* for an Enemy : And he had not the Vanity to think, he was better able to withstand the Power of *Spain* than she was. It may be allow'd also, that this King was naturally timorous, and that the Dread of a War made him put up a great many Affronts, and submit to many Things to the Prejudice of the Nation ; but there is no reason to infer from thence, that he was not a true Protestant. It is evident, that the Puritans call all Princes Papists, as well as King *James*, who do not favour their Superstition ; and this seems to be the sole

A.D. 1606

A. 3 Jac. I.

Reason for styling him so. But farther, would our Dissenters take it kindly, if we should involve all of them in the Guilt of *King-killing*, because some of them murder'd *King Charles*: If they would not; let them cease their Clamours at the King's Declaration, that he did not believe the Papists were all of the same murdering Principles,

The Parliament meet.

The Parliament meeting again on the 21st of *January*, a Bill was brought in for solemnizing the 5th of *November* annually, as a Thanksgiving for the Deliverance from the Powder-plot; and, at the same time, a Commission was issued out to several of the Nobility and Judges for the Trial of *Sir Edward Digby*, *John Grant*, *Ambrose Rookwood* and *Robert Winter*, Esquires; together, with *Thomas Winter*, *Robert Keys*, *Thomas Bates* and *Guy Fawkes*; who being convicted and condemn'd for High Treason, were soon after executed, viz. four of them at the West-end of *St. Paul's*, and the other four in the *Palace-Yard*, *Westminster*; but I must refer the Reader to the first Volume of the *State Trials* for the Particulars of the Evidence against them. Only I shall observe here, that their several Examinations were shewn them in Court; wherein every one of them had confess'd the Treason, and they acknowledged the same to be true: And that when *Sir Edward Digby* objected, that they had been provok'd to this Attempt on his Majesty's breaking his Promise to be favourable to them; the Earls of *Salisbury* and *Northampton* declar'd, that his Majesty had made no Promise, or given them any such Encouragement as was pretended.

The Conspirators try'd and condemn'd.

Henry Garnet, superior of the Jesuits, was afterwards try'd for being privy to the said Treasons,

A.D. 1606

A. 3 Jac I.

Treasons, and not revealing them : To which he pleaded, That the Plot was communicated to him only in Confession ; and that he had sent to *Rome* to procure a Countermmand to the Conspirators. But this being no legal Plea ; and, as it was observ'd, that the Blow must have been given long before such Countermmand could have arriv'd from *Rome*, if he had writen for it the Time he pretended, he was condemn'd and executed at the West-end of *St. Paul's*, on the third of *May*, when he acknowledged his Offence, begged Pardon, and exhorted the Papiſts never to make the like Attempts for the future, inasmuch as God would not prosper such Treasons against the King and State. These were all that suffer'd Death by the Hand of the Executioner. But the Lords *Mordant* and *Sturton*, being suspected to have some knowledge of it, by their not appearing in Parliament ; the former was fin'd ten thousand Pounds, and the other six thousand, by the *Star-Chamber* : And the Earl of *Northumberland*, Captain of the Band of Pensioners, who had admitted his Cousin *Percy*, one of the Conspirators, into that Body, without tendring him the Oath of Supremacy, tho' he knew him to be a Popish Recusant, was fin'd forty thousand Pounds, condemn'd to lose all his Places, and to be imprison'd during the King's Pleasure.

Garner,
superior of
the Jesuits,
executed
for con-
cealing the
Powder-
Plot.

Justice was scarce done upon the Conspirators, when a Report was spread, that the King was stabb'd with a poison'd Knife, at *Oking*, twenty Miles from *London*, which put the two Houses of Parliament and the City into the utmost Consternation ; but the King arriving in Town two Hours afterwards, and publishing a Proclamation, to let the World

A Report
that the
King was
stabb'd.

A.D. 1606 know he was safe, all was quiet again ; however the Fright they had been in, made the Parliament very careful to make Provision for his Majesty's Security, by enacting Laws that might be a Terror to those who should conspire against his Life for the future.

A. 3 Jac. I.

The principal Acts pass'd this Session, in relation to Religion and the State, were these, viz.

Acts pass'd this Session for keeping the 5th of *Novem.*

3 *Jac. I. cap. 1.* An Act for solemnizing the fifth of *November* annually, as a Day of Thanksgiving for the Deliverance from the Popish Plot.

For attainting the Conspirators.

3 *Jac. I. cap. 2.* This Act confirms the Attainders of the Conspirators who had been executed ; and contains an Attainder of those who were kill'd, or had fled from Justice, whereby their Estates were forfeited to the Crown.

For discovering and repressing Popish Recusants.

3 *Jac. I. cap. 4.* This Act was made for the discovering and repressing of Popish Recusants, whereby the Church-wardens are requir'd to present their Absence from Church ; and the Crown is impower'd either to levy the twenty Pounds *per* Month for their absenting from Church, by a former Statute, or to seize two parts in three of the Recusants Lands, till the Offenders shall conform ; and every Person refusing the Oath of Allegiance or Obedience, prescribed by this Act, incurs a *Præmunire*. The Act also, for levying a Forfeiture of Twelve-pence on every one that did not come to Church every *Sunday*, is revived.

3 *Jac. I. cap. 5.* By this Act great Rewards are given to those who discover any that harbour Popish Priests, or any that have heard or said Mass ; and Recusants are prohibited to come near the Court, on severe

Pa...

Pains: They are also excluded from the Practice of Law, Physick, &c. and disabled to execute any publick Office, to be Patrons of Livings, to be Executors or Guardians; and, in short, are disabled, as Persons excommunicated, and their Arms order'd to be taken from them: They are also obliged to baptize their Children by a Minister of the Church of *England*, and prohibited sending them beyond Sea for Education, under great Penalties; and Popish Books, Crucifixes, and Reliques, are order'd to be burnt.

A.D. 1606

A. 3 Jac. I.

Popish Reculants disabled as excommunicated Persons.

3 Jac. I. cap. 18. This Acts empowers the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London* to cut a Channel for bringing the *New River* to *London*.

Act for cutting the New River.

3 Jac. I. cap. 21. enacts, That every Player, who shall use the Name of *God* prophanely on the Stage, shall forfeit ten Pounds.

Players.

3 Jac. I. cap. 25. confirms four Subsidies, amounting to four Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy.

Subsidies granted.

3 Jac. I. cap. 26. contains a Grant of three entire Subsidies, and six Fifteenths and Tenths, by the Laity. *A Subsidy of the Laity amounted this Year to 69,666 l. and one Fifteenth and Tenth to 36,500 l. And the Clergy's four Subsidies amounted to 25,000 l. The Reason they made no more was, because Estates were then charged at the ancient Rents in the King's Books, and not at the improved Value.*

The whole Sum raised this Year was 453,000 l.

3 Jac. I. cap. 27. contains a Confirmation of the King's general Pardon.

After the passing of which Acts the Parliament rose, viz. on the 27th of *May*; being prorogued to the 18th of *November* 1606.

A. 4 Jac. I.

The King appears at this Time to have been exceeding happy, both in the Affections of

of

A.D. 1606 of his Subjects, and the Peace he enjoy'd with
A. 4 Jac. I. all Foreign Powers ; and, to add to his Satisfac-
 tion, there arrived in *July, Christian, King*
 The King of *Denmark*, the Queen's Brother ; who, ha-
 of *Den-* ing remain'd in the *English* Court three Weeks,
mark ar- and been splendidly entertain'd, return'd home
ives. on Board the Squadron of *Danish* Men of War
 that brought him over. Soon after, *Francis,*
 And Pr. Prince of *Vaudemont*, Son to the Duke of
Vaudemont *Lorrain*, with a great Train of *German* and
French Noblemen, came over to see the Court
 of *England* ; who met also with a very hospi-
 table Reception from their *Britannick* Maje-
 sties.

A Union of the two Kingdoms proposed. The Parliament meeting again on the 18th
 of *November*, the Day to which it was proro-
 gued, the establishing an entire Union between
 the Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland* was
 proposed ; but as the *Scots* always insisted it
 should be consider'd as a third Part of the
 Island, and the *English* being of Opinion that
 their Share in the Government ought to be but
 in proportion to the Supplies they contributed
 towards the Support of it, the Bill was re-
 jected. However, an Act passed 4 *Jac. I. cap. 1.*
 All hostile Acts repealed. whereby all hostile Laws between the two
 Kingdoms were repealed : And, by the Judg-
 ment in *Calvin's* Case in *Coke's* Reports, it
 appears, that the *Scots* were in a manner natu-
 ralized not long after ; being adjudged entitled
 to all the Privileges of *Englishmen*, if born
 after the King's Accession.

Penalty of being drunk. By 4 *Jac. I. cap. 5.* a Penalty of five Shil-
 lings was inflicted on every Person that should
 be drunk ; and, in case of Inability to pay,
 he was to be set in the Stocks.

A.D. 1607 The Parliament having pass'd several other
A. 5 Jac. I. Acts, of a more private Nature, which will
 be

be found at the End of this Reign, were pro-
rogued, on the 4th of *July* 1607, to the 16th
of *November* following.

A.D. 1607
A. 5 Jac. I.

There happen'd some inconsiderable Insurrections this Year, in the Counties of *Northampton*, *Warwick* and *Leicestershire*, upon account of Enclosures; which were soon suppressed, and Captain *Pourel*, the Chief of the Rebels, was executed as a Traitor; but most of his Followers, who were taken, were only prosecuted as Rioters, and fined.

Insurrections on account of Enclosures

About the same time, the faithless and ungrateful Earl of *Tirouen* in *Ireland*, who had been so often pardon'd, fled with *Tyrconnel*, *Dungannon*, and several other *Irish* Lords, out of that Kingdom, offering to transfer their Country to the Pope, and soliciting Foreign Powers to make War on their Sovereign. These Events, however, were not capable of disturbing the Tranquillity of the Court of *England*: And, had not the King's Favours been so unbounded towards his Countrymen, the *Scots*, he might have enjoy'd a perpetual Calm during his Reign; but the Distinction he made between them and his *English* Subjects created an unlucky Emulation. His squandering away his Money upon that People, also brought his Treasury low; and these, with the Perverseness of the Puritans, were the Sources of most of the Misfortunes that happen'd afterwards.

Tirouen solicits an Invasion.

The King's Partiality to the *Scots* discontents the *English*.

The King, dining with Sir *John Watts*, the Lord Mayor, and the Company of Clothworkers, in *June* that Year, was, after Dinner, presented by them with a Purse of Gold, and his Freedom in that Company; which his Majesty graciously accepted: And the Prince receiv'd the like Present the next Year from
the

The King accepts his Freedom in the Clothworkers Company.

A.D. 1607 the Merchant-Taylors, when the King, and the Royal Family, were pleased to honour them with their Presence; and his Majesty was acquainted, that they had seven Kings, a Queen, and a Multitude of Noblemen, of their Fraternity.

A. 5 Jac. I.
 Creations. There were some Creations of Nobility about the same Time: Sir *Thomas Knevet* was made Baron of *Estrick*, and Sir *Jervis Clinton* Baron of *Layton-Brameswold*.

A.D. 1608 The Parliament of *Scotland* shew'd a great Inclination for the Union of the two Kingdoms this Year, passing an Act, whereby they approved of the Articles agreed on by the Commissioners of both Kingdoms; but the Parliament of *England* not expressing the like Satisfaction in the Articles, the Matter was dropt. In the mean time, Sir *George Jervis*, a Seminary Priest, and *Thomas Garnet*, a Jesuit, not regarding the Law that made it High Treason for them to remain in *England*, on the King's Proclamation thereupon, requiring them to depart the Kingdom, were both of them executed as Traitors: *Garnet* was offer'd his Life, if he would have taken the Oath of Allegiance; but refused it. There were about twenty notable *English* Pirates executed also about the same time, who had turn'd *Mahometans*, and lived a considerable time in great Splendor with the *Turks* at *Tunis*.

Two Popish Priests executed.

Pirates executed

Earl of *Salisbury* made Lord Treasurer. Among other Ministers of State advanced this Year, were the celebrated *Robert Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, who, on the Death of the Earl of *Dorset*, was made Lord Treasurer; a Post that his Father, the late Lord *Burleigh*, had long enjoy'd with Applause; and he was some little time before made Knight of the Garter: A Gentleman, as our Historians ob-

serve,

serve, equally remarkable for the great Endowments of his Mind, and the Deformity of his Person, being very crooked. The Earl of *Northampton* also was made Lord Privy Seal ; who may be deem'd to have had the greatest Share in the Administration, during the first Part of this Reign, next to the Earl of *Salisbury*.

A.D. 1608

A. 6 Jac. I.

The Year 1609 was remarkable for the Truce concluded between *Spain* and the United Provinces, by the Mediation of the Kings of *England* and *France* ; wherein the States were allow'd to be a free People, independent of *Spain*. King *James* is charged with very mean Condescensions for the *French* at this Treaty, allowing their Ministers to take place of those of *England* : And it is suggested by some, that King *James* was not sincere in this Treaty, but condemn'd the *Dutch* for throwing off the Sovereignty of *Spain*, as a very ill Precedent ; and that *Henry IV.* of *France* said of him on this Occasion, with great Contempt, *I know his Capacity, and the Inclinations of his Subjects.* But this appears to be a piece of Tradition, or secret History, for which there is very little Authority. Nay, it appears, from *Cecil's* Letters, that it was all a Fiction of the *Spanish* Ministers, to serve their Master's Turn. [See the State Papers in the Reign of King *James I.* p. 469, 472, & seq.]

A.D. 1609

A. 7 Jac. I.

The Dutch

own'd a

free State

by *Spain*.

The Earl of *Salisbury*, about this Time, built the *New Exchange* in the *Strand* ; to which King *James* gave the Name of *Britain's Bourse*, designing it for the Meeting of Merchants, 'tis presum'd, like the *Royal Exchange* ; but I don't perceive it was ever put to that Use.

The New

Exchange

built.

But, notwithstanding the King seem'd to approve of the building of the *New Exchange*

A.D. 1609 by his Prime Minister, he express'd a great Dislike to the encreasing other Buildings in *London* and *Westminster*; and publish'd a Proclamation, prohibiting the erecting any House or Edifice in these two Cities, or within two Miles of either of them: But this was not universally obey'd, there being no Law or Statute then in Being, to support a Proclamation of that Nature; tho', it is true, some of his Majesty's Predecessors had publish'd the like.

Against
Foreigners
fishing on
the Coast.

Another Proclamation appear'd, prohibiting all Foreigners fishing on the Coasts of *England*, *Scotland*, or *Ireland*, or the Islands thereunto belonging, without Leave; which affected the *Dutch* more than any other People. The King also was pleased to monopolize the Alum Manufacture, which was brought to Perfection in *England* about this Time by Sir *John Bourcher*, and all foreign Alum was prohibited.

A.D. 1610

A. 8 Jac. I.

Pr. Henry
created
Prince of
Wales.

Prince *Henry* now entering the seventeenth Year of his Age, the King, according to ancient Custom, receiv'd an Aid of the Subject, towards making him a Knight; and immediately afterwards created him Prince of *Wales*, assigning him a separate Court, and Officers belonging to it; and the Prince resided at the Palace of *St. James's*, with his Family; where he appeared so well qualify'd for Government, 'tis said, that he even eclips'd the King his Father, and all Men paid their Court to him; insomuch, that his Majesty became jealous of his growing Popularity, if we may credit some of our Historians: But, in reality, the King was so far from envying his Son's Accomplishments, that he endeavour'd to render him still greater in the Eye of the World, by matching

The King
far from
being jea-
lous of
him.

matching him to the eldest Daughter of the King of *Spain*, then the most powerful Monarch in *Europe*. A.D. 1610
A. 87 ac. I.

This Year, on the 14th of *May*, *Henry IV.* of *France*, usually styled *Henry the Great*, was assassinated; being stabbed to the Heart by *Ravillac*, a Monk, as he rode in his Coach through the Streets of *Paris*. The Assassin was taken with the Knife in his Hand; and, being put to the Torture, took the whole upon himself, and would confess no Accomplices. He appears to have been an Enthusiast; and apprehending that the King was about to make War upon the Pope, in Favour of the Hugonots, he thought he could not do God greater Service than to kill him; for the making War against the Pope, he affirm'd, was making War against God. It is observed of *Henry the Great*, that he had escaped above fifty Conspiracies against him by Priests, or the Votaries of Popery, who question'd the Sincerity of his Conversion; and was at length made a Sacrifice by them in the fifty-eighth Year of his Age, and thirty-eighth of his Reign, as King of *Navarre*; and in the twenty-first Year of his Reign, as King of *France*. The French King Henry IV. assassinated.

Advice was no sooner brought to *England* of this Murder, but a Proclamation was issued, commanding all Popish Priests and Jesuits to depart the Kingdom, and all Popish Recusants to remain at their Dwellings, and not come within ten Miles of the Court, as the like Statutes had provided: And the Oath of Allegiance was tender'd to all the King's Subjects. The King of England alarm'd at it.

About this Time, the Bulk and Strength of our Shipping, both Men of War and Merchant.

A.D. 1610 chant-men, began to increase wonderfully ;
A. 8 Jac. I. for it appears, that the *East-India* Company
 built a Ship this Year of twelve hundred Tuns,
 call'd, the *Traders Encrease* ; which was un-
 fortunately lost between the *Red Sea* and *Ban-*
tam. And it is observ'd, that Ships of such
 Dimensions most commonly miscarry in the
Indian Seas : But, I presume, the Reason our
East-India Company sent such large Ships
 thither, was, because about this Time the
Dutch were endeavouring to beat us out of the
 Trade of the fine Spices ; which they accom-
 plished in this Reign, our Merchants not be-
 ing protected by the Government as they ought
 to have been. But to return : The King also
 this Year built the largest Man of War that had
 been seen in *England*, being of fourteen hundred
 Tuns Burthen, and sixty-four Guns, and call'd
 it, the *Prince Henry*, in honour of his eldest
 Son, to whom he made a Present of it ; which
 shews, he was very far from endeavouring to
 depress that Prince's Fame, or bearing his
 Son any Ill-will, as his Enemies suggested.

The Par-
 liament
 meets.
Cecil's
 Speech.

The Parliament, meeting on the ninth of
February, was open'd by a Speech of the
 Lord-Treasurer *Cecil's*, wherein he shews the
 Necessities of the Crown, and demands a Sup-
 ply : He observ'd, that the three hundred
 thousand Pounds left in the Treasury by the
 late Queen, had been laid out in redeeming the
 Crown Lands, which were mortgaged to the
 City of *London* : That the King had been
 oblig'd to keep up an Army of near twenty
 thousand Men, till he made Peace with *Spain* :
 That the several Obsequies of the late Queen
 had been a great Expence to him ; as had also
 the Journey of the Royal Family from *Edin-*
burgh ; and the Entertainment of Ambassadors ;
 who

who came to congratulate his Accession ; and the sending others abroad, to return those Compliments : And he said, it was true, some Money had been advanc'd to the King's Servants and Friends of the *Scotish* Nation, as a Reward of their Affection and Services, which could not be well avoided. But, notwithstanding this Account the Court gave of their disposing of the publick Money, and that the King had but once in his Reign receiv'd any Supplies from his Subjects ; such was the ill Temper of the Commons, that, instead of going upon the Supply, they began to enumerate their Grievances : They were disgusted at the King's Partiality to his Country-men, and at seeing him lavish away his Treasure upon them ; and with these Malecontents, those who were puritanically inclin'd, struck in, and railed at the Proceedings of the High Commission-Court and the King's Proclamations, which they suggested he design'd should be of the same Force as the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom ; tho' I don't find, that hitherto the King had attempted any thing more by his Proclamations, than the late Queen and the rest of his Predecessors had done ; or that the High Commission-Court, which executed his Majesty's Authority in Ecclesiastical Affairs, by virtue of the Act which establish'd the King's Authority, had exceeded in any one Instance the Power they exercised in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*. And as to that other Grievance of Monopolies, which was complain'd of, they were much more frequent and burthensome in the Queen's Reign than in this. It was not therefore the King's extending his Prerogative beyond the Limits his Predecessors had done, that occasion'd this ill Blood ;

but

A.D. 1610

A. 8 Jac. I.

The People discontented at the Money lavished away on the Scots. The Puritans clamorous.

A.D. 1610

A. 7 & 8

Jac. I.

}

but a Concurrence of ill Humour, occasion'd by the King's Bounty and Partiality to the *Scots*, and his necessitous Circumstances the Consequence of it, that render'd him despicable in the Eyes of all the People, and alienated the Hearts of his *English* Subjects from him: To which, his mean Condescensions to *France* and other Powers; his suffering Foreigners to encroach on our Commerce; and his neglecting to assert his Dominion of the narrow Seas, did not a little contribute.

The K's
Speech to
both
Houses.

The King, being acquainted with the Debates in the House of Commons on his Conduct, order'd both Lords and Commons to attend him at *White-hall*, where he made them a Speech; and, among other Things, assured them, he had no Intention to govern them by any other Rule than the Law of the Land, tho' he found it had been suggested, he designed to govern arbitrarily: That he knew, indeed, the Power of Kings, who were Judges of all, and could be judged by none but God; but that all Kings, who were not Tyrants, or perjur'd, would always confine themselves within the Limits of the Law; and they that advised them otherwise, were Vipers and Pests, both to their Sovereign and Common-wealth. Yet, as it was Blasphemy to dispute what God might do, so it was Sedition to dispute what Kings might do in the Height of their Power: And as he would not have his Subjects discourse of his Power, so he would do nothing but what was agreeable to Law and Reason; and concluded, setting forth the Necessities of the State, urging, that his Reputation would suffer, if they refused him their Aid. The World must think it want of Love in them, or of Merit in him, he said, that had

had lessen'd their Hearts and tied up their Hands. But all these Instances proved at last but a very moderate Supply : Whereupon this Parliament, which had continued about six Years, and sat five several Sessions, was dissolved on the first Day of *December*.

A.D. 1610

A. 7⁵ 8

Jac. I.

The Acts that pass'd of the most Importance were these that follow, viz.

Acts passed.

7 Jac. I. cap. 1. Declaring, that an *English* Man who should commit Felony in *Scotland*, and fly into *England*, should be sent into *Scotland* to be try'd there ; provided that the like Law was made in *Scotland*, in relation to *Scots* Men who should commit Felony in *England*.

Trials.

7 Jac. I. cap. 2. enacts, That all those who should be naturaliz'd, or restor'd to Blood, should receive the Sacrament according to the Church of *England*, and take the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy.

Naturalization.

7 Jac. I. cap. 6. enacts, That all Noblemen, Members of Parliament, Judges, and Officers Civil and Military, Ecclesiastics and Practisers of Law and Physick, shall take the Oath of Obedience or Allegiance, mention'd in the Statute of 3 Jac. I, on pain of being disabled, as Popish-Recusants Convict.

Oaths.

7 Jac. I. cap. 22. is a Confirmation of a Subsidy of six Shillings in the Pound, granted by the Clergy.

Subsidies.

7 Jac. I. cap. 23. contains a Grant of one Subsidy, and one Fifteenth and Tenth by the Lairy.

7 Jac. I. cap. 24. is a Confirmation of the King's General Pardon.

Pardon.

The latter End of this Year, viz. the second of *November* 1610, died Dr. *Richard Bancroft*, Archbishop of *Canterbury* ; a Prelate learned in Controversy, an excellent Preacher,

Bishop Bancroft dies.

a great

A.D. 1610 a great Statesman, a vigilant Governour, and
 one who fill'd that See with great Applause,
 according to our Ecclesiastical Writers. He
 was succeeded by Dr. *George Abbot*, Bishop of
London.

A. 7 & 8
 Jac. I.

Succeeded
 by Dr. *Ab-*
bot.

A.D. 1611

A. 8 & 9
 Jac. I.

The Court of *England* liv'd in a very splen-
 did manner at this Time; and, indeed, there
 were three Courts instead of one. The King
 held his Court at *White-hall*; the Queen had
 another at *Somerfet-house*, which, from her
 residing there, obtain'd the Name of *Denmark-*
house during her Life; and Prince *Henry* held
 a third at *St. James's*. At one or other of these
 were almost every Day exhibited Jufts or
 Tournaments in the Day-time, with Plays,
 Masquerades and Balls every Evening. To
 maintain these Expences, various Ways were
 projected for raising Money; and among the
 rest, it was propos'd to create a new Order of
 Knights, who should be hereditary, and styled
 Baronets, or petty Barons; who were to pay
 near eleven hundred Pounds on receiving their
 Patents, and to be chosen out of the Gentry of
 the best Quality and Estates. Of these there
 were about two hundred created in a short
 Time; Sir *Nicholas Bacon* of *Redgrave* in
 the County of *Suffolk*, being the first whose
 Patent bare Date the twenty-second of *May*
 1611: And this being found an easy Way of
 raising Money without disgusting the Subjects,
 there were many more Baronets made after-
 wards in this Reign. But to proceed:
Carr, a young *Scotish* Gentleman, happening
 to break his Leg, at one of these Tourna-
 ments, in the King's Presence, his Majesty
 understanding he had formerly been one of his
 Pages, order'd him to be lodg'd in the Palace,
 and his own Physicians and Surgeons to take

Baronets
 first made.

The Rise
 of *Carr*,
 afterwards
 Earl of
Somerfet.

care

A.D. 1611

A. 8 & 9

Jac. I.

care of him. *Carr* was then about twenty Years of Age, in the Bloom of Youth, and just come from *Paris*, where he had been learning his Exercises. The King, our Historians relate, was, at first sight, captivated with the Beauty of his Person, his genteel Address and engaging Behaviour; for 'tis observed to be the Foible of this Monarch, to be more delighted with an agreeable Outside than with the Beauties of the Mind; the latter of which, *Carr* is said to have had no great Share of. The King, however, visited this young Gentleman daily, during his Illness; and he no sooner recovered, than he was knighted, and made a Gentleman of the Bed-chamber, and increased so fast in the King's Favour, that all Men made their Court to his Majesty thro' him; and he was, in a very short time, created Viscount *Rocheſter*, and Knight of the Garter: And that he might be enabled to live suitably to the great Posts he possess'd, the King conferr'd on him Lands and Offices of considerable Value, and was perpetually making him Presents of vast Sums of Money, even without his asking; for it is agreed, that Covetousness was none of *Carr's* Vices. The Treasurer *Cecil*, amaz'd at the King's extravagant Bounty to this young Favourite, and finding the Treasury grow extremely low, thought fit to represent the ill Consequences that must infallibly attend this profuse Management; which having but little Effect, he used the following Stratagem, to make his Majesty more sensible of what he gave. Being ordered to pay the Viscount five thousand Pounds, he caused the Money to be heap'd up in a Room the King was to pass thro'; who demanding, what all that Treasure was design'd for? was

A.D. 1611 answered, for the Viscount *Rochester*: Where-
 upon the King, who had not before consider'd
 the Value of the Present, revoked his Grant,
 and order'd, he should have but two thousand
 Pounds of it.

A.D. 1612 Some few Years before the Rise of this Fa-
 vourite, the Lady *Frances Howard*, Daughter
 of the Earl of *Suffolk*, was marry'd to the
 Earl of *Essex*: And as the Lady was then but
 thirteen Years of Age, and the Earl but four-
 teen, their Relations thought fit that the young
 Earl should travel for some Time before the
 Marriage was consummated; the Countess in
 the mean while remaining in *England* under
 the Care of her Mother. Her Wit and Beauty
 every Day increasing, she became, in a short
 time, the Admiration of the Court; even
 Prince *Henry*, and the new Favourite the Vis-
 count *Rochester*, made their Addresses to her
 at the same time; and the Lady giving
 greater Encouragement to *Rochester* than to
 the Prince, 'tis said, his Highness slighted the
 young Countess in his turn, but vowed to be
 revenged upon his Rival.

The Pr.
 courts her,
 but she en-
 courages
Rochester.

The Courtship had gone so far between
Rochester and this young Lady, before the Earl
 of *Essex* returned from his Travels, that she
 was come to a Resolution her Husband should
 never enjoy her, and that she would reserve all
 her Charms for the Favourite: Whereupon,
 when the Earl came to co-habit with her, she
 absolutely refused him her Embraces, and con-
 sulted one Mrs. *Turner*, a Physician's Widow,
 and *Foreman*, a pretended Conjuror and Quack,
 how she might avoid the Earl's Importunity
 and insure *Rochester's* Affections. *Foreman*
 promised, by Magick Arts, to render the Earl
 incapable of enjoying the Countess; as also

She refuses
 to consum-
 mate her
 Marriage.

Goes to a
 Conjuror
 for Ad-
 vice.

to secure *Rochester's* Affections for her; but I find *Foreman* did not trust so much to the Black Art, as to certain Drugs he gave the Lady to mix with her Husband's Food, to render him incapable of the Duties of the Marriage-Bed; and in this he met with great Success, as appear'd afterwards by the Earl's own Deposition; who declared, he had no Inclination to lie with his Countess for several Months: However, as this was not always the Case, he complain'd to his Father-in-Law, the Earl of *Suffolk*, of the Unkindness of his Wife, and the Jealousy he had of *Rochester*: Whereupon the Lady was order'd to retire into the Country with her Husband, that being at a Distance from the Court and her Lover, she might learn to know her Duty. But this had no other Effect upon her, than to render her sullen and unfociable: She gave herself up to Melancholy, and would not be satisfy'd till she found Means to return to Court again, where she renew'd her Intrigues with the Viscount; and he received her, after this Absence, with Transports of Joy, which was ascrib'd to the Love-potions *Foreman* had furnished her with. Sir *Thomas Overbury*, *Rochester's* intimate Friend, at first assisted him in making a Conquest of this Lady; but finding she began to influence the Viscount's Conduct, and that the *Howards*, her Relations, (Enemies to *Overbury*) were like to have the Direction of Affairs, *Overbury* did all that lay in his Power to break off the Intrigue between the Viscount and the Countess of *Essex*: He represented the Injustice of having an Amour with another Man's Wife, as well as the Offence he would give the Earl, and the *English* Nobility in general, in gratifying this

Overbury
first assists
Rochester
in this In-
trigue, and
afterwards
endea-
vours to
break it
off.

A.D. 1612 *Passion*; declaring, that this Intrigue would probably be his Ruin if he persisted in it: But as this Advice came with a very ill Grace from *Overbury*, after he had encouraged and assisted his Friend in corrupting the Lady, *Rocheſter* appear'd to have very little Regard for it.

10 Jac. I.

Several
Settle-
ments
made by
the *Engliſh*
in *Ame-
rica*.

Tho' the Court was pretty much taken up at this Time with Gallantry and soft Amusements, our Foreign Trade, and the Improvement of the Plantations, were sometimes attended to; particularly, it appears that this Year several Settlements were made in *Virginia*, and other Parts of the Continent of *America*, and a Lottery was set up by the Ministry for the Advantage of the Adventurers: Attempts also were made for the Discovery of the North-east and North-west Passage to *China*; and the *Engliſh East-India* Company disputed with the *Dutch* the Property of the fine Spices in the *Molucca's*, *Ambogna* and the *Banda* Islands; the Importance of which, the Ministry did not seem to have been sufficiently apprized of then, or they would not have suffered the *Dutch* to have driven us from thence in the manner they did.

Cecil dies. This Year, in the Month of *May*, died that celebrated Politician *Robert Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury* and Lord-Treasurer, and was succeeded in that high Office by the Earl of *Suffolk*, Father to the Countess of *Effex*, already mentioned.

Sir *Robert Shirley* arrived in *England* about the same Time, as Ambassador from the *Sophy* of *Persia* to King *James*, offering our Merchants a free Trade to that Country upon very advantageous Terms. This *Shirley* had spent ten Years in the Court of *Persia*, and been preferred there to the Post of General of the Artillery: He had also married into the Royal Family,

Trade
with *Persia*
settled.

Family, and brought over his *Persian* Princess to *England*; where she was delivered of a Child, to whom the Queen stood Godmother and the Prince Godfather; and, after a Year's Stay in *England*, Sir *Rober* returned, with his Lady, to the Court of *Persia*.

A.D. 1612

10 Jac. I.

There arriv'd also this Year, on the 16th of *October*, *Frederick*, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, to celebrate his Marriage with the King's Daughter the Princess *Elizabeth*, a Treaty having been already concluded between the two Courts for that End. On this Occasion, the Court of *England* appeared in all its Splendor, and great Preparations were making for solemnizing the Wedding; when, on a sudden, all their Joy was turned into Mourning, by the Death of Prince *Henry*, the Darling of the Nation, which happened on the sixth of *November*, in the nineteenth Year of his Age: And, as the World is ever apt to suspect some foul Play, where a Prince of great Expectations is suddenly taken from them; some ascribed his Death to poison, and were apt to accuse *Rochester*, the King's Favourite, with taking away the Prince's Life to secure his own; his Highness having threaten'd the Viscount upon his rivalling him in that Amour with the Countess of *Essex*; and this was the more credited afterwards, when *Rochester* appeared to be guilty of poisoning Sir *Thomas Overbury*. Nor were there malicious People wanting to charge even the King with being accessary to his Son's Death, on a Jealousy of his growing too popular: But, as the Prince was but between eighteen and nineteen Years of Age when he died, and had never been charg'd with an undutiful Action or Thought against his Father; and his Majesty,

The Pr.
Palatine
arrives.

Prince
Henry dies.

A.D. 1613

11. Jac. I.

Majesty continued to the last to testify his Esteem and Affection for so deserving a Son ; and, if we consider farther, that his Death was, in reality, the greatest Loss the King could sustain, it was barbarous to suspect his Majesty should conspire, or even desire his Death ; tho' this is as likely, as many other malicious Stories, invented by the Puritans, to blast the Memory of a King, who would not be persuaded to establish their Idol Presbytery. But to return ; in order to remove all Suspicion of the Prince's dying a violent Death, he was open'd in the Presence of several eminent Physicians and Surgeons ; who all gave it under their Hands, that there was no Marks of his being poisoned. After which, the Prince's Funeral Obsequies were solemniz'd with great State, on the seventh of *December*, in *Westminster-Abbey*.

The *Palatine* marries the Princess *Elizabeth*.

The King having indulged his Grief for the Loss of his Eldest Son some time, was importuned by the *Palatine* to suffer his Marriage with the Princess *Elizabeth* to be solemnized ; which his Majesty consenting to, it was consummated on the 14th of *February* 1613 ; the Count having been installed Knight of the Garter the Week before, together with *Grave Maurice of Nassau*. Great Rejoycings there were on this Occasion in the Court of *England*, and so expensive were these Nuptials, that they cost the King an hundred thousand Pounds, if we include the Fortune he gave with the Princess : He did, indeed, demand an Aid of his Subjects, on the Marriage of his Daughter, as all his Predecessors had done ; but this did not bring him in more than twenty-five thousand Pounds of the Money he expended. It is worth observing, therefore,

The Portion of the Princess was 40,000 *l*.

fore, how honestly and impartially the admired *Rapin* relates this Occurrence : He says, *The King demanded an Aid of his Subjects, according to ancient Custom ; tho' it was an hundred Years since this Custom had been out of use, there having been no Occasion for it since the Reign of Henry VII. However, few or none durst refuse what the King demanded, and great Sums were raised by this Means.* From whence he plainly suggests ; first, that the King's Demand was illegal ; and, secondly, that the King extorted extravagant Sums from his Subjects under Colour of this Aid. But, as to the first Objection, The Custom being out of use, and consequently the Demand illegal, he seems to contradict himself ; by admitting, that it was put in Practice by the very last King that had occasion for it (*Henry VII.*) and, consequently, it could not be said to be disused or illegal. A Man may as well say, the Laws of Descent and Inheritance were out of use, where the Ancestor happens to live fourscore or a hundred Years, and there has been no Opportunity for the Estate to descend in the mean time : And then for the vast Sums that were raised, I have met with no Writer that pretends there were more than twenty-five thousand Pounds raised in the whole Kingdom, or that any Man was taxed beyond his Proportion ; and, consequently, there was nothing in the Transaction that deserved those smart Remarks. It is presumed, therefore, that these, and a multitude of other malicious Suggestions of our Friend *Rapin*, levell'd at the Family of the *Stuarts*, and founded upon Facts falsely related, will give him but little Credit with his Readers. But to proceed ; the *Palatine* and his Princess, having remain'd in *Eng-*
land

A.D. 1613

11 Jac. I.

Rapin
furlous
and incon-
sistent with
himself,

A.D. 1611 *land* till the Month of *April*, and been splendidly entertained by the City, the Inns of Court, &c. embark'd for *Germany*; the City of *London* having first made the Bride a Present of a Pearl Necklace, valued at two thousand Pounds.

13 Jac I.

Rocheſter and the Counteſs of *Effex* reſolve to marry.

And ruin *Overbury* for oppoſing it.

The Amour between the Viſcount *Rocheſter* and the Counteſs of *Effex*, has been already mentioned; and the Representations of Sir *Thomas Overbury* againſt it. The Lovers had new Thoughts of an Expedition to render the Intrigue legal and ſpecious in the Eye of the World; and that was, for the Lady to procure a Divorce from the Earl of *Effex* for Inſufficiency, and then to marry the Viſcount. And accordingly, *Overbury's* Opinion of their Project was again demanded, as well as his Aſſiſtance, in accompliſhing it: But *Overbury* imagining, if the Counteſs was marry'd to *Rocheſter*, ſhe would ſtill have more Influence over him, appeared more averſe to this Project than the former, and adviſed the Viſcount to place his Affections on a more worthy Object, and not upon a Lady whoſe Diſloyalty to her preſent Huſband would be branded with perpetual Infamy, and which muſt reflect on the Man that ſhould marry her. But *Rocheſter* was ſo far from altering his Reſolution, that he went immediately and acquainted the Counteſs of *Effex* with what *Overbury* had ſaid; and hereupon both of them vow'd his Ruin, not only by way of Revenge for oppoſing their Happineſs, but to prevent any Obſtacle he might lay in their Way, and for fear he ſhould make ſome unlucky Discoveries. Accordingly, *Rocheſter* propoſed to his Maſteſty, the ſending *Overbury* his Ambaſſador to *Flanders*; adviſing the Knight however to reſuſe the Employment,

ployment, and promising him a better Post at home, that he might incense the King against him; and, by this Means, procured *Overbury* to be sent to the *Tower* for his Contempt. He also caused the Governor of the *Tower*, Sir *William Wade*, to be removed, and put Sir *Jervis Elvis* in his Room; who order'd *Overbury* to be close confined, removed all his Servants from him, and suffer'd no-body to come near the unhappy Man, but those whom *Rochester* made use of to destroy him.

A.D. 1613

11 Jac. I.

Overbury being thus secured, the Earl of *Northampton*, the Lady's Uncle, was made use of to open the Matter to the King, and acquaint him with the Insufficiency of the Earl of *Essex*; and to entreat his Majesty, that some Means might be found out to separate the Lady from a Husband, who was only so in Name, being disabled to perform the Duties of the Marriage-Bed. This, 'tis said, was seconded by the Viscount *Rochester*, who declared the mutual Affection between him and the Countess of *Essex*; but I am apt to think, that the King was not acquainted with this part of the Scheme till afterwards, because he must evidently have seen through so thin a Design. But however that was, the King granted a Commission to the Archbishop, and several other Bishops and learned Doctors, to examine the Cause; who, in the first place, impanell'd a Jury of Matrons to inspect the Lady, and see if she was really a Virgin, as she pretended; and a Report was made in her Favour. Some relate, that dissembling a more than ordinary Modesty, she procured Liberty to cover her Face with a Veil, while the Inspection was made; and, by that Stratagem, put a

K. James
apply'd to
get the E.
of *Essex*
and Court-
teses sepa-
rated.

Commis-
sioners as-
sign'd to
try the
Cause.

A.D. 1613 young Girl upon the Matrons, which induced them to make such a Report as she desired.

11 Jac. I.

A Divorce
decreed.

The Commissioners, having heard the Verdict of the Jury, and the Earl of *Essex* declaring, he never had enjoy'd the Countess, and believed he never could, tho' he affirm'd, at the same time, he found no Defect in himself, but apprehended he was capable of lying with any other Woman; a Majority of the Commissioners were of Opinion, that they ought to be divorced; from whom the Archbishop dissented, declaring, there was no Authority for annulling a Marriage for an Impediment or Impotency towards a particular Woman, where the Man was capable as to others. His Majesty himself, it seems, took upon him to answer the Archbishop's Arguments; but not being able to assign any natural Cause for this partial Impediment, or *Maleficium versus hunc*, suggested, that it might have been brought about by Witchcraft, or the Power of the Devil: But it is sufficiently evident, from the Trials of *Rocheſter* (then *Somerſet*) and the Countess afterwards, for *Overbury's* Murder, that there were very ill Arts used to abuse his Majesty and the Court of Delegates, in order to obtain a Divorce. But however foul the Fact might appear to be on the Discoveries that were made at those Tryals, surely it had another Face at the Time of this Examination; for we find that *Rocheſter* and the Countess soon after celebrated their Marriage; that he was made Earl of *Somerſet* upon it; and that not only the Court, but the City of *London*, congratulated them on the Occasion, and they were splendidly entertain'd in that Metropolis: But Sir *Thomas Overbury* died before

Rocheſter
marries
the Coun-
tess.

A.D. 1614

12 Jac. I.

before this Marriage was solemnized. One *A.D. 1614*
Weston, who was order'd to attend him in the *12 Jac. I.*
Tower, gave him Poison several times in his *Overbury*
 Food and Physick: but the Goodness of the *poison'd in*
 Knight's Constitution got the better of it; or *the Tower.*
 rather, it was administer'd in such small Quan-
 tities, that it might not appear to be the Occa-
 sion of his Death: However, it reduced the
 Patient to a very ill State of Health; and he
 endured the most racking Pains, till at length
Rocheſter and the Countess, being afraid that
Overbury should, by some Means or other,
 escape out of the *Tower*, and expose all their
 Villanies, bribed a poor Apothecary to assist
Weston in giving the Patient a poison'd Clyster,
 that carried him off at once: And it was after-
 wards reported, that *Overbury* died of the Pox,
 in such loathsome Circumstances, that they were
 forced to bury him immediately, before his
 Friends could see his Corpse.

The King, having try'd some extraordinary *The Par-*
 Ways of raising Money, which did not how- *liament*
 ever produce a Supply sufficient to answer his *meets.*
 Necessities, summon'd a Parliament to meet
 on the 5th of *April*; where, having repre- *The K's*
 sented the great Expences he had been at in *Speech.*
 marrying the Princess, and on other Occasions,
 and the small Aids he had hitherto received of
 his Subjects, he demanded a Supply suitable to
 the Exigencies of the Government; but the
 Commons, piqu'd at the King's Bounty to the *The Com-*
Scots, and more to see the Administration in *mons re-*
 the Hands of a young Debauchee of that Na- *fuse a Sup-*
 tion, refused to consider of Ways and Means *ply.*
 till their Grievances were redress'd; amongst
 which they mention'd Monopolies, the En-
 couragement given to Papists at Court, and
 the Endeavours to marry the late Prince *Henry*
 and

A.D. 1614 and Prince *Charles* to Popish Princeſſes :
 12 *Jac.* I. Whereupon, his Maſteſty, having waited about
 two Months, to ſee if the Houſe could be re-
 duced to a better Temper, and finding all
 their Debates levelled at his Adminiſtration,
 he thought fit to diſſolve the Parliament on the
 7th of *June*, before there was any one Bill
 ready for the Royal Aſſent ; and, upon the
 riſing of the Parliament, imprifon'd two of
 the Members of the Commons, who had ap-
 pear'd moſt diſaffected to his Government, and
 had created a Tumult in the Houſe.

The Par-
 liament
 diſſolv'd.

Some of
 the Mem-
 bers im-
 priſon'd.

The King
 levies a
 Benevo-
 lence.

When the King found there was no Money
 to be raiſed in the ordinary Way, he had Re-
 courſe to a Benevolence ; a kind of Tax which
 had indeed been levied by moſt of his Prede-
 ceſſors, but deteſted more than any other by
 the Subjects of *England* ; nor did this, at laſt,
 produce much more than fifty thouſand Pounds,
 which was moſt of it expended in entertain-
 ing the King of *Denmark*, who paid a ſecond
 Viſit to the King and Queen of *England* about
 this Time.

The King
 of *Den-*
mark ar-
 rives.

A.D. 1615

13 *Jac.* I.

The King
 in Diſtreſs
 for Money.

Cecil, the Treasuſer, being dead, on whoſe
 Shoulders the Weight of the Government, reſted
 in the beginning of this Reign, was now exceed-
 ingly miſſ'd, not only by the King, but even by
 his Favourite, who uſed to look upon the Trea-
 ſurer as his Enemy ; for now the Adminiſtration
 of the Government being lodged in the Hands
 of *Somerſet*, and his Father-in-Law the Earl of
Suffolk, the preſent Treasuſer, the King ex-
 pected the ſame Services from them he had re-
 ceived from *Cecil* ; but *Suffolk* was no ways
 equal to the Poſt he poſſeſſ'd, any more than
 the Favourite. The King found himſelf fur-
 rounded with Difficulties, which his unbounded
 Generoſity had reduced him to ; and his Mi-
 niſters

nisters appear'd incapable of extricating his Majesty out of these perplex'd Circumstances, or relieving his Wants: Whereupon *Somerſet* ſoon loſt the King's Eſteem; his Majesty made it evident to the whole Court, he had no longer that Affection for this Miniſter he formerly expreſs'd; and *Somerſet's* Enemies, obſerving the Change, uſed all their Arts to ruin the Favourite effectually, but were ſo ſucceſſful in none as the introducing a new Favourite. It has been already obſerved, that the King was in a manner enamour'd with Youth and Beauty, wherever he beheld it; to which, if fine Cloaths, and a genteel Addreſs, were added, the Charm became irrefiſtible: A young Fellow, thus accompliſh'd, infallibly won his Heart at firſt Sight; a Failing that *Somerſet's* Enemies were too well acquainted with, he himſelf having gain'd the King's Favour in the like Circumſtances. They brought a young Gentleman to Court therefore, whoſe Name was *George Villars*, a younger Son of Sir *George Villars*, of *Brooksby* in *Leiceſterſhire*, by a ſecond Wife, of the Family of *Beaumonts*. As the Perſon of this Gentleman was exceeding amiable, his Mother took Care he ſhould have a ſuitable Education; and, at length, ſent him to *Paris*, where he learnt the *French* Language, and ſuch Exerciſes as Men of Quality uſually apply themſelves to; in which he became a great Proſicient, eſpecially in Dancing: And when he was about one and twenty Years of Age, he return'd to *England*. The Earl's Enemies, apprehending *Villars* for their purpoſe, furniſh'd him with Money, and put him upon dreſſing in the richeſt Cloaths, after the *French* Mode, and took all Opportunities of recommending him.

A.D. 1615
 13 Jac. I.
Somerſet
 out of Fa-
 vour.

The Riſe
 of *George*
Villars.

A.D. 1615 to the King; in which they succeeded so happily, that his Majesty, struck with the glittering Appearance he made, order'd him immediately to be retain'd in his Service, as his Cup-bearer. In a very few Weeks he was knighted, and made a Gentleman of his Bed-chamber; and now all the World began to make their Court to him; even the Queen, and the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who could not bear the insolent Behaviour of *Somerſet*, contributed to advance the new Favourite, in order to depreſs the old one.

Somerſet
applies to
the King
for a Par-
don.

Somerſet, apprehending that the Advancement of this Favourite would, ſooner or later, prove fatal to him; and, conſcious that his Adminiſtration would not bear examining into, or, as others ſuggeſt, dreading to be call'd to an Account for *Overbury's* Murder; repreſented to the King, that having been truſted with the Management of publick Affairs, when he was very young, by his Majesty's Indulgence, it was probable, his want of Experience might have led him into ſome Miſtakes, which his Enemies would take Advantage of, to ruin him; and beg'd, therefore, that his Majesty would be pleaſed to grant him his Pardon, that he might enjoy in quiet what he had been pleaſed to confer upon him: Which the King conſented to, and order'd a Pardon to be drawn up accordingly, as he was beginning his annual Progreſs; but the Queen afterwards prevail'd on the Lord Chancellor *Egerton* not to ſuffer it to paſs the Great Seal, till the King's Return; for which, it ſeems, the Chancellor had a very good Pretence, there being ſome Clauſes contain'd in it that were unuſual; as that his Majesty pardon'd all Crimes, that the Earl either had been, or ſhould be,

guilty

guilty of; and the Discovery of *Overbury's* Murder happening in the mean time, the Pardon never was sealed.

A.D. 1615

13 Jac. I.

Overbury's
Murder
discover'd.

Rapin, and some other Writers, relate, that this Murder was discover'd by the Apothecary's Boy, who gave *Overbury* the poison'd Clyster; but it appears they were under a Mistake; inasmuch as it was not known, at the Trial of the Murderers, what was become of the Person who assisted *Weston* in that Operation. On the contrary, we find it was discover'd accidentally, by some Questions put to Sir *Jervis Elvis*, Governor of the *Tower*, as will be shewn more at large hereafter, in the Account of those Trials: But however the Matter was discover'd, it being communicated to the King, at his Return from the West, his Majesty commanded the Lord Chief Justice, Sir *Edward Coke*, to make a strict Enquiry into it; wishing, as 'tis said (but I could never meet with any manner of Proof of it) that the Curse of God might light upon him, if he spared any that were guilty of the Murder. The King, indeed, does not seem to have suspected that *Somerfet* had any Concern in it, at this time, by taking the Earl a Hunting with him to *Royston*. The Lord Chief Justice, however, finding, upon the Examination, that there was just Reason to suspect that the Earl of *Somerfet*, and his Countess, had been the Contrivers of *Overbury's* Death, sent down his Warrant to *Royston*, to apprehend the Earl; and he was taken, as 'tis reported, in the King's Presence: Whereupon, he complain'd to his Majesty of the Officer's Contempt, in apprehending him in a manner under his Protection; but was answer'd, the Chief Justice's Warrant was not to be disputed; and the Officer

Somerfet
apprehended.

A.D. 1615 ficer was suffer'd to carry his Prisoner off. A great many foolish and improbable Speeches have been made for the King on this Occasion; as, that he told Somerset, *he could not live without him, and desired he would return to him as soon as he could*: And yet Somerset was no sooner got into the Coach, but the King said, in the Hearing of some about him, *The De'il go with thee, I will never see thy Face again*. This foolish and unnecessary Piece of Hypocrisy the admired *Rapin*, however, seems to give Credit to, when he says, *King James took Delight in Things of this Nature*: And, indeed, he countenances every Calumny raised on King James by his greatest Enemies; tho' that Prince must surely be a perfect Idiot, who should say to a Person he had just surrender'd into the Hands of Justice, *Return to me as speedily as you can*; when it was obvious to every one, he must remain a Prisoner till his Trial was over, which must take up more time than it could be supposed the King should stay at *Royston*. And, after the King had shewn such Tenderneſs, as is pretended, for his old Favourite, for his Majesty to turn about immediately, and, in the Presence of several Witnesses, to say, *The De'il go with thee, I will never see thy Face again*: To what purpose could this serve? but to expose himself to the Hatred and Contempt of all Mankind; unless we can think the King guilty, therefore, of endeavouring to render himself ridiculous to his Subjects. These Circumstances can never be believed: And, after all, it is not said who heard his Majesty say any of these smart Things, which, with me, is a strong Presumption they were never said; and, indeed, should we collect all the absurd and extravagant

The King
scanda-
lously af-
pers'd on
this Occa-
sion.

gant Speeches the King's Enemies have made for him, I question if they would not fill a Volume alone. But to return: At the same time the Earl was apprehended at *Roxston*, his Countess was made Prisoner at *London*; and *Richard Weston*, who attended *Sir Thomas Overbury* during his Confinement; the Widow *Anne Turner*, who, with the Countess of *Somerset*, contrived the Mischiefe; *Sir Jervis Elvis*, made Governor of the *Tower* to favour the Murder; and *James Franklin*, the Apothecary, who prepared the Poison, were all brought to their Trials in the Month of *November*.

A.D. 1615

13 Jac. I.

Richard Weston was indicted for procuring a certain Poison, and mixing it in Broth he gave to *Sir Thomas Overbury*: He was charged also with giving him White Arsenick and Mercury in his Tarts, and other Food; and, lastly, with giving him Mercury in a Clyster. The Prisoner acknowledg'd his administering the Food and Physick to *Sir Thomas Overbury*, with which he was charged; but pleaded he did not know they were poison'd: However, it being prov'd that he had received an hundred Pounds of the Countess of *Somerset* for this Service, he was condemn'd.

The inferior Agents condemn'd and executed.

Anne Turner was convicted of applying to *Forman*, the pretended Conjuror, with the Countess of *Essex*; and of sending Poison to *Weston*, for *Sir Thomas Overbury* to take.

Sir Jervis Elvis was convicted of suffering his Prisoner to be poison'd; and *James Franklin*, the Apothecary, of preparing the Poison for *Overbury*: And they were all of them executed.

As to *Forman*, the Conjuror, whom the Countess consulted in this Affair, he was dead

A.D. 1615 before the Murder was discover'd; but his Widow produced several Letters in Court, wherein the Countess begs him to assist her in getting rid of the Earl of *Essex*, and securing *Rocheſter's* Affections for her, by Charms, or otherwise.

13 Jac. I.
A.D. 1616 The Trial of the Countess of *Somerſet* was deferred till the 24th of *May*, the following Year; when ſhe was arraign'd before her Peers, as acceſſary, before the Fact, to the poiſoning of Sir *Thomas Overbury*, and confeſs'd herſelf guilty. The Attorney-General, the celebrated Sir *Francis Bacon*, thought fit, however, to relate the Circumſtances of the Murder, as well as the manner how the Diſcovery was made; which our Friend *Rapin*, and the Hiſtorians he follows, were abſolutely miſtaken in; as appears from the Account we meet with in theſe Proceedings in the Firſt Volume of State-Trials.

The Diſcovery of the Murder, as declared by the Attorney-General at the Trial.

Bacon there ſhews, that the Diſcovery was made in this manner, viz. The Lord *Shrewsbury* having recommended Sir *Jervis Elviſ* to a certain Counſellor of State for Preferment; that Counſellor objected, that there was a heavy Imputation on Sir *Jervis*, in relation to *Overbury's* Death; which the Lord *Shrewsbury* acquainting *Elviſ* with, he was in ſuch Conſuſion, and gave ſuch Answers, as render'd him ſtill more ſuſpected: He even acknowledg'd, that there had been ſome Attempts made upon *Overbury*; but ſaid, they had no Effect, having been check'd by him (Sir *Jervis*.) This being communicated to the King, his Maſteſty order'd *Elviſ* to ſet down, what he knew of the Matter, in Writing; which he did, and accused ſeveral, but endeavour'd to excuſe his own Conduct: Whereupon the Matter was referred to ſome of the Council, and afterwards to the

Lord

Lord Chief Justice *Coke*, the Lord Chancellor, *A.D. 1616*
 and others; and, upon the Discoveries made 14 Jac. I.
 at the Examinations of *Weston, Elvis, Turner,*
 and *Franklin*, they were order'd to be brought
 to their Trials. But no Practices were left un-
 tried, says the Attorney-General, to suppress
 the Discovery, and engage *Weston* to stand
 mute; and it was a great while before he
 could be prevailed on to plead: However,
 they all put themselves upon their Trials at
 length, and were condemn'd, as has been ob-
 served already. And now, as a farther Con-
 firmation of their Guilt, the Countess confess'd
 the Crime; and being demanded what she had
 to say, why Judgment of Death should not be
 pronounced against her, she answer'd, *She could*
say much to aggravate, but nothing to extenuate,
her Fault; and only desired the Lords would
 interceed for her to the King for Mercy.

The Day following, being the 25th of *May*, The E. of
 the Earl of *Somerset* was brought to his Trial; *Somerset's*
 who thought fit to stand upon his Defence, and *Trial.*
 plead *Not Guilty*, tho' the Countess had con-
 fess'd the Crime: Whereupon the Attorney-
 General, Sir *Francis Bacon*, open'd the Evi-
 dence; and said, they were commanded by the
 King not to expatiate or make Invectives, but
 purely to pursue the Evidence, as it conduced
 to the Point in question; and tho' they were
 glad they had so good a Warrant for this, yet
 they should have done it of themselves, it be-
 ing far from them, by any Strains of Wit or
 Art, to seek to play Prizes, or to blazon their
 Names in Blood: That the Offence the Pri-
 soner stood charged with, next to High Trea-
 son, was the greatest and foulest Felony; it
 was Murder by Poison, Murder committed on
 the King's Prisoner, Murder under the Colour

A.D. 1616 of Friendship. Then Sir *Francis* proceeded to shew the Nature and Course of the Evidence; observing, that about a Year before *Overbury's* Imprisonment, the Earl of *Somerset* fell into an unlawful Love with the Countess of *Essex*, and purposed to marry her; which *Overbury*, with all his Might, impugn'd, under pretence of Friendship; for that he accounted her an ill Woman: But that, in truth, *Overbury* had little of solid Religion or Virtue; but, wholly possess'd with Ambition and Vain-glory, was loth to have a Partner in my Lord of *Somerset's* Favour, especially one of the House of the *Howards*, to whom he had always profess'd an Aversion; and that *Overbury* had been so far from making a Scruple of Conscience of the Matter, that there was a Time, when *he boasted he had won him the Love of the Lady by his Letters and Industry.*

And that however the tragical End of this poor Gentleman might obliterate his Faults; yet their Business at this Time not consisting in Points of Civility, but to discover the Face of Truth before the Face of Justice, it was material, towards the true Understanding of this Cause, to know that *Overbury* was naught and corrupt.

For, when *Overbury* found himself possess'd of this Lord's Favour, by whose Greatness he had promis'd himself to do Wonders, and being a Man of an unbounded and impudent Spirit, he began not only to dissuade, but to deter him from the Love of that Lady; and, supposing he had my Lord's Head under his Girdle, in respect of Communication of Secrets of State, he dealt violently with him to make him desist, by Menaces of a Discovery; And from hence there flow'd two Streams of Hatred

Hatred against *Overbury*; one from the Lady, *A.D. 1616*
 who was cross'd in her Love, and expos'd in
 her Reputation; and the other from my Lord *14 Jac. I.*
Somerset, who was afraid of *Overbury's* Na-
 ture, who, if he did fly out, might trouble his
 whole Fortunes: To which might be added a
 third Stream, proceeding from the Earl of
Northampton's Ambition, who, desiring to be
 first in Favour with my Lord *Somerset*, and
 knowing *Overbury's* Malice to himself and his
 House, thought it necessary that that Man
 should be removed, and cut off; so as cer-
 tainly it was resolved and decreed, that *Over-*
bury must die.

Then Mr. Attorney goes on, and shews the Evidence
 Methods that were taken to effect it; but I against
 shall only take Notice of such Parts of the *Somerset.*
 Evidence, as tend to illustrate the History, and
 correct the Mistakes of some other Writers;
 referring the Reader to the First Volume of
 the State-Trials for the Particulars of these
 Proceedings,

Henry Payton, a Servant to Sir *Thomas*, de-
 posed, That in the Gallery of *Whitehall*, the
 Lord *Somerset*, coming late at Night to his
 Chamber, met Sir *Thomas*, and said to him,
How now, are you up yet? Nay, reply'd
 Sir *Thomas*, *what do you do here at this Time*
of Night? Will you never leave the Company
of that base Woman? Since you neglect my
Advice, I desire we may part To-morrow. Let
me have what is due to me, and I will leave
you free to yourself, to stand upon your own
Legs. To which Somerset answer'd, His Legs
were strait enough to bear himself; and went
away in a Passion.

Two Letters also, written by *Overbury* from
 the Tower to *Somerset*, were produced; in
 which

A.D. 1616

14 Jac. I.

Two Letters of Overbury's produced against the Earl.

Overbury owns his promoting the Intrigue at first.

which are these Expressions: *Is this the Fruit of my Care and Love for you? Are these the Fruits of common Secrets, common Dangers? As a Man, you cannot suffer me to lie in this Misery: Your Behaviour betrays you. All I entreat of you is, that you will free me from this Place; and that we may part Friends. Drive me not to Extremities, lest I should say something that you and I both repent — You told my Brother, That irreverend Style might make you neglect me. With what Face could you do this, who know you owe me all the Fortune, Wit and Understanding that you have; and yet pretend the Reason you seek not my Liberty, is my irreverend Style; while, in the mean time, you sacrifice me to your Woman. I am upon the Rack, and you are at Ease; and yet I must say nothing. Notwithstanding my Misery, I heard you went to your Woman, curl'd your Hair, preferred Miss to your Bed-Chamber, and in the mean time send me nineteen Projects how I should cast about for my Liberty. I wonder to see you neglect him, to whom Secrets of all Kind have been communicated — Well! I have written the Story between you and me: How I have lost my Friends for your Sake; what Hazards I have run; what Secrets have pass'd betwixt us: How, after you had won that Woman by my Letters, that then you concealed all your After-Proceedings from me; and how, upon this, there arose many Breaches between us: Of the Vow you made to be even with me; and sending for me twice that Day, I was caught in the Trap; persuaded me it was a Plot of my Enemies to send me beyond Sea, and urged me not to accept of it (the Embassy) assuring me you would free me from any long Trouble. If you persist to use me thus, assure*
your

yourself it shall be publish'd. Whether I live or die, your Shame shall never die, but ever remain to the World, to make you the most odious Man living.

A.D. 1616

14. Jac. 1.

The Earl of *Somerſet*, in his Petition to the King not to be try'd, ſets forth, That having committed no Offence againſt his Maſteſty or the State, he hoped he would not ſuffer him to be brought to a publick Trial, for his Reputation-ſake: That it was not enough to grant him Life, if he did not ſave his Reputation too, which muſt be wounded by a Trial; be- cauſe the Preſumptions were ſtrong againſt him, in regard he had adviſed the Imprisonment of *Overbury*; tho' he deſign'd it for his Reformation, not for his Ruin: But if he muſt be brought to a Trial, he implored his Maſteſty's Mercy; and that he would allow him to diſpoſe of his Eſtate to his Wife and Child, and pardon her who had confeſs'd the Fact.— I ſhall only add, that the Earl was convicted upon full Evidence, not one of his Peers diſſenting; whereas, had the King intended to ſcreen him, it is ſtrange he ſhould have put none of the Earl's Creatures into the Commiſſion for trying him.

The Earl's
Petition
not to be
tried.

The Earl
convicted.

The Counteſs of *Somerſet*, ſome ſhort Time after, received a Pardon, with this Reſtriction; That her Imprisonment in the *Tower*, or any other Priſon appointed by his Maſteſty, was not pardon'd.—The Earl had not his Pardon till a little before the King's Death; and both of them remained Priſoners in the *Tower* ſeveral Years: But, on the 18th of *January* 1622, the following Order of Council was made,

Both par-
don'd as
to Life.

viz. Whereas his Maſteſty is graciously pleaſed to enlarge and ſet at Liberty the Earl of Somerſet and his Lady, now Priſoners in the Tower of London;

The Earl
and Coun-
teſs re-
leased out
of the
Tower.

A.D. 1616

14 Jac. I.

London; and that nevertheless it is thought fit, that both the said Earl and his Lady be confin'd to some convenient Place: It is therefore, according to his Majesty's gracious Pleasure and Command, ordered, That the Earl of Somerset and his Lady, do repair either to Grays or Cowsham, the Lord Wallingford's Houses in the County of Oxon, and remain confin'd to one or other of the said Houses, and within three Miles Compass of either of the same, until farther Order be given by his Majesty.

The Motives on which they were pardon'd.

It appears, by the Pardon of the Countess, that these were the Motives that induced the King to grant it: 1. In respect to her Father, Friends, and Family. 2. Her voluntary Confession, when she was Prisoner, and at the Bar. 3. The Promise made publicly by the Lord High Steward and her Peers, to intercede with his Majesty for Mercy. 4. That she was not accused as Principal, but as accessary before the Fact, by the Instigation of base Persons.

And it seems the King permitted the Earl to enjoy the greatest Part of his Estate, notwithstanding his Attainder.

Pr. Charles created Pr. of Wales.

Prince Charles, being now about seventeen Years of Age, was created Prince of *Wales*; and his Majesty was pleased to create five and twenty Knights of the *Bath* at the same time. Soon after, an Ambassy was sent to *France*, to propose a Match between the Prince and the Daughter of *Henry IV*: But here being a Treaty of Marriage already begun between the Prince of *Piedmont* and that Princess; and the *Spanish* Ambassador intimating, that the King his Master would be proud of an Alliance of that Nature with *England*; a Treaty of Marriage was set on Foot between Prince Charles and the King of *Spain's* youngest Daughter;

A Match proposed between him and the Infanta.

Daughter ; with which the *Spanish* Court *A.D. 1616*
 amus'd King *James* for several Years, and
 led him into Measures not very advantageous
 to the *English* Nation. 'Tis said, the first ill
 Consequence of this Treaty was, the Delivery
 up of the *Brill* and *Flushing*, with their
 Forts, which had been put into the Hands of
 Queen *Elizabeth* by the *Dutch*, as a Security
 for the Repayment of the Sums she had lent
 them, and laid out in their Defence against the
Spaniards, and were usually call'd, the Cautio-
 nary Towns. These Places were of the last
 Importance, as they commanded the Naviga-
 tion of the *Maes* the *Rhine* and the *Scheld*,
 and rendred the *Dutch*, in a manner, inde-
 pendent on *England*. The *Hollanders*, it
 seem'd, had form'd a Design of driving our
 Merchants out of the Spice Islands in the *East-*
Indies, and from the *Greenland* Fishery, and
 the Trade of *Russia* ; and were conscious,
 that while the King of *England* remained
 in Possession of the *Brill* and *Flushing*, it
 would always be in his Power to make him-
 self ample Satisfaction for their Piracies
 and Depredations on his Subjects in the
Indies, and elsewhere : They ordered their
 Ambassador *Carroon* therefore, to offer King
James about a fifth, or, as some relate, a
 tenth Part of the Money that was due to him,
 the Whole amounting to about a Million
 Sterling, for the Redemption of those Towns.
 They had solicited this Affair some Years, as
 appears by the Preamble of his Majesty's
 Commission to the Lords of the Council to
 treat with them ; but their Offer had been re-
 jected, on account of their demanding so
 great a Proportion of the Debt to be sunk.
 But now the King being in great Distress for
 Money,

A.D. 1616

14 Jac. I.

The Cau-
tionary
Towns de-
liver'd up
to the
Dutch.

Money, and the *Dutch* refusing to pay the Garrisons in the Cautionary Towns, as they had stipulated to do in their Treaty with Queen *Elizabeth*, which brought a Charge upon the Crown of *England*; the King agreed to the Proposals of the *Hollanders*, and ordered those Places to be surrender'd to them: But the great Inducement, 'tis said, for his accepting the Money they offer'd at this time, was, the Treaty of Marriage between Prince *Charles* and the *Spanish* Infanta; for promoting which, the King, according to some Writers, neglected every thing else: He was apprehensive, they tell us, that the *Spaniard* would demand those Towns, as formerly belonging to him, if the Match went forward; which, if the King had gratify'd him in, he would not only have lost all the Money due to him from the *Dutch*, but have given the King of *Spain* an Opportunity of recovering the *Low-Countries* again; which would never consist with the Interest of *England*: He chose, therefore, to accept the *Hollanders* Money, and put them in Possession of these Towns, that they might create no Difference between him and the *Spaniards*, and thereby obstruct the Match he was so fond of. The Court was not, 'tis presumed, then apprised what treacherous Allies the *Dutch* would prove. It could never have been supposed, that a People, just rescued from Destruction by the *English* Arms, should immediately attempt to ruin the Trade of their Benefactors in all Parts of the World; drive them from their Settlements; murder their Merchants and Factors, and deprive them of their Fisheries; as it appears they did, within less than seven Years after the Surrender of these Towns; and, lest the *English* should call them to an Account,

The Prac-
tices of the
Dutch to
ruin our
Trade and
disturb the
Govern-
ment ever
since.

and

and do themselves Justice, it is firmly believed, *A.D. 1616*
the *Dutch* contributed in a great measure to the
involving us in that destructive Civil War, *14 Jac I.*
which happen'd in the succeeding Reign; and
that they have ever since nourish'd and sup-
ported a Faction in our Bowels, that bids De-
fiance to our Constitution, in which they have
a double View, *viz.* the Encouragement of
their Sect, and the ingrossing the Trade of the
World. Whenever they attempt to monopo-
lize any valuable Branch of Commerce, there
is ever a Party amongst us that encourage
them in it; telling us, we must not oppose
their Encroachments, because we cannot sub-
sist without the Protection of this High and
Mighty State: And what their Party can't
bring about by Menaces, is usually effected by
Bribes. Never any thing is proposed for the
Advantage of our Trade or Fisheries, but this
cunning People ever ruin our Designs, by such
Applications as have hitherto proved irresi-
stible. But to return:

Sir *Edward Coke*, Lord Chief Justice of the *Sir Edw.*
King's Bench, was displaced, and succeeded by *Coke's Dis-*
Sir *Henry Montague*. The Reason of *Coke's* *grace.*
Disgrace is variously related; some say his
Contentions with the Lord Chancellor *Egerton*
occasion'd it. The Chancellor, it seems, had
determined a Cause in Equity, in which Judg-
ment had been given in the *King's Bench*, and
Execution thereupon had, upon some Evidence
appearing afterwards which was not produced
in the Trial at Law; for which, *Coke* insisted,
the Chancellor had incurred a *Præmunire*, and
encouraged a Prosecution against him in the
Star-Chamber: At which the King was of-
fended, and order'd the Attorney-General, Sir
Francis Bacon, and other learned Counsel, to

A.D. 1616 search Precedents, and report what had been done in the like Cases; who declared, that the Chancellor had assumed no greater Power than his Predecessors had formerly exercised.

14 Jac. I.

A second Occasion of *Coke's* Disgrace is held to have been his opposing the King's granting to some of the Bishops the Livings they held before, together with their Bishopricks, in *Commendam*; which he declared to be illegal, as prejudicial to the Patrons of such Livings: For which he begged Pardon, and was soon after restored to his Place at the Council-Board, tho' not to the Post of Lord Chief Justice; and, by way of Punishment in the mean time, he was order'd to review his Reports, and alter some Things which were supposed to encroach on the King's Prerogative.

There was a third Reason affirm'd by some to have contributed to the King's Displeasure against *Coke*; and that was, his letting fall some Expressions, as he sat upon the Bench, at the Arraignment of Sir *Thomas Monson*, as accessary to *Overbury's* Death; whereby he suggested, that Prince *Henry* had been poison'd: But this is a piece of secret History that depends upon uncertain Guesses, and seems to have been propagated only by People that would have it so. As to Sir *Thomas Monson*, there does not appear to have been any other Evidence against him, than his recommending *Weston* to the Governor of the *Tower* to attend Sir *Thomas Overbury*, at the Instance of the Countess of *Essex*: There was no Proof of his being apprized of the Countess's Intention to poison *Overbury*, and therefore he was not brought to a Trial; which, however, occasion'd abundance of Clamour against the Government. But whatever was the Occasion of turning

A.D. 1616

14 Jac. I.

The Earl
of *Suffolk*,
Lord-
Treasurer,
his Dis-
grace.

Lord
Chancel-
lor *Egerton*
succeeded
by Sir *Fr.*
Bacon.

turning out *Coke*, he was not long so much out of Favour, but he was called to the Council-Table again, as has been observed already, and took his Place in the Court of Star-Chamber; where we find him, the same Year, inveighing against the Earl of *Suffolk*, the Lord Treasurer, who was proved to have taken Bribes, and imbezzled the King's Treasure, to a very great Value; for which he was not only turn'd out, but fined thirty thousand Pounds; and was succeeded in that Post by Sir *Henry Montague*. Sir *John Bennet*, Judge of the Prerogative Court, also being convicted of Bribery, about the same time, in the Star-Chamber, was fined twenty thousand Pounds. The Lord Chancellor *Egerton* was dismiss'd from his Employment much more honourably, having nothing laid to his Charge during the many Years he had filled that Post; and only resign'd it on account of his great Age: He was succeeded by the celebrated Sir *Francis Bacon*, the greatest Man of that Age; who was, however, convicted of that very Failing (Bribery) for which he had so often and so pathetically inveigh'd against the late Lord Treasurer, and others, in the Star-Chamber.

End of the Twentieth Volume.





THE
TABLE
OF THE
TWENTIETH VOLUME.

A

ABBOT, Dr. succeeds
Archbishop Bancroft in
the See of Canterbury
Page 424

Alenſon, Duke, prepares to come
to *England*, but is advis'd by
the Queen to defer it 130

Allegiance, a Subject born can-
not transfer it to another
Prince 115

America, ſeveral Settlements made
there by the *Engliſh* 428

Amiens taken by the *Spaniards*,
and retaken by the Aſſiſtance
of the *Engliſh* 315, 316

Anabaptiſts aſſert, that Dominion
is founded in Grace p. 137

ANJOU, Duke, comes over to
England 148

Articles of Marriage between
him and Queen *Elizabeth*
ſign'd 167

He is choſen Sovereign of the
Netherlands 168

The Queen excuſes her ſolem-
nizing the Marriage *ib.*

He returns to *Flanders* 173

He is recogniz'd Duke of *Bra-
bant*, &c. *ib.*

Antwerp, a Maſſacre there 140

Apprentices, Statutes relating to
them 366

Apparel, a Proclamation for re-
ſtraining

The T A B L E.

straining the Excess of it

Page 155

Arrests, the Queen's Servants
privileg'd in Parliament-
time 345

Articles, 39, of the Church of
England, to be subscrib'd by
Ecclesiasticks 113

ASSOCIATION enter'd into for
the Preservation of Queen
Elizabeth 189, 193

B

B *Abington's Conspiracy* 208
Bacon, Sir Nicholas, made
Lord-Keeper 6

Bacon, Sir Francis, Lord-Chan-
cellor 453

Bancroft, Archbishop, dies 423

Baronets first made 424

Bastards, poor, Justices to punish
the Parents 368

Beggars infest the Country 312

Benevolence levy'd by the King
436

Bishops disabled to part with their
Lands 388

Blaney, Sir Edward, the Lord
Blaney's Ancestor 328

Bodley, Sir Thomas, furnishes the
Oxford Library with Books
320

Bothavell insults *James VI.* King
of *Scotland* 294

Britain, Great, James I. pro-
claim'd King thereof 389

Brown, the Father of the Sect of
Brownists, some Account of
him and his Principles 181

Buchanan becomes a Loyalist 174

His Character *ib.*

Buggery made Felony 367

Buildings, a Proclamation against
new ones in and about *Lon-*
don and *Westminster* 418

Burglary, Clergy taken away
368

C

C *ADIZ*, the *English* de-
stroy the *Spanish* Fleet
there Page 306

The Town taken 307

The Loss of the *Spaniards*

20,000,000 Ducats 308

Calais taken by the *Spaniards* 305

CAMBDEN charg'd with
Forgery and Ignorance by
Rapin 74

His Authority well supported *ib.*

He had the Materials for his
History from *Cecil*, who had
the Direction of Affairs both
in *England* and *Scotland* 75

Rapin contradicts him, without
producing any Authority for
it 81

Campion and three other popish
Priests executed 172

The Reason of these Severities *ib.*

Carr, afterwards Earl of *Somer-*
set, his Rise 424

Cautionary Towns deliver'd to
the *Dutch* 450

CECIL Secretary of State ac-
cus'd of engaging the Nati-
on in a War with *Spain* 92

He is protected by the Queen 93

He is created Baron *Burligh* 106

Cecil made Lord-Treasurer 127

Cecil Lord-Treasurer dies 319

Cecil Earl of *Salisbury* made Lord-
Treasurer 416

Cecil dies 428

Charles the French King succeeds
his Brother *Francis* 33

Charles, Prince, a Match pro-
pos'd between him and the
Infanta of *Spain* 448

Charity-Lands, Lord-Chancellor
impower'd to inquire how
they have been apply'd 369

Churches, Pictures therein de-
fac'd 37

Church, a Bill to new-model the
Ceremonies

The T A B L E.

Ceremonies of the Church	Page 119	Queen's ordering a Warrant for the Execution of the Queen of Scots	Page 226
Church, a Bill preferr'd for the Reformation of it	138	His Tryal for acting contrary to the Queen's Orders	232
The Queen prevents their Proceedings in it	<i>ib.</i>	His private Apology	235
Absenters therefrom to forfeit 20 <i>l.</i> a Month	161	<i>Denmark</i> , King, arrives in <i>England</i>	414
Coaches, a Bill brought in against them	344	<i>Don John</i> proposes to marry the Queen of Scots, and depose Queen <i>Elizabeth</i>	144
<i>Coke</i> , Sir <i>Edw.</i> his Disgrace	451	<i>D R A K E</i> , some Account of his Voyage round the World	156
COMMONS order a Fast by their own Authority	159	He plunders the <i>Spanish</i> Settlements in <i>America</i>	202
The Queen reprimands them for it	<i>ib.</i>	His Booty	<i>ib.</i>
A Member fin'd and imprison'd by the House for 6 Months	160	He dies in his Expedition to the Isthmus of <i>Darien</i>	303
COMMONS, the Speaker's Warrant for a new Election to be directed to the Clerk of the Crown	345	Drunkennes, the Penalty for it	414
They are very tumultuous	353	<i>Dublin</i> , Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> erects a University there	266
Force us'd upon a Division of the House	<i>ib.</i>	<i>DUDLEY</i> , <i>Robert</i> (afterwards Earl of <i>Leicester</i>) taken into Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> 's Favour	30
A Collection for the Poor at the End of the Parliament	354	The Queen proposes a Match between <i>Dudley</i> and the Queen of Scots	49
Refuse a Supply	435	Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> offers to settle the Crown of <i>England</i> on <i>Mary</i> Queen of Scots, if she would marry <i>Dudley</i> , and at the same time creates him Baron of <i>Denby</i> and Earl of <i>Leicester</i>	53
Some of the Members imprison'd	436	<i>Dudley</i> slights the Queen of Scots in hopes of obtaining Queen <i>Elizabeth</i>	54, 55
Convocation assert their popish Principles	13	See <i>Leicester</i> , Earl.	
Cottages, no new ones to be erected without laying four Acres of Land to each	369	<i>Dunkirk</i> Privateers troublesome	352
Creations of the Nobility	373	<i>Dutch</i> implore the Protection of Queen <i>Elizabeth</i>	144
<i>Cumberland</i> , Earl, his Expedition against the <i>Spanish West-Indies</i>	321	<i>Dutch</i> deprive the <i>Englisch</i> East-India Company of their Trade	330
		<i>Dutch</i> own'd a Free-state by <i>Spain</i>	417
		Cautionary	

D

D Arnley, Lord, the Queen of Scots demands Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> 's Consent to marry him	56
<i>Davis</i> 's Strait discover'd	203
<i>DAVISON</i> , Secretary of State, his Conduct on the	

The T A B L E.

Cautionary Towns deliver'd up
to them Page 450
Their Practices ever since *ib.*

E

E *Ast-Indies*, two Ships sent to
trade thither 263

E L I Z A B E T H, Queen,
declar'd Heir to the Crown
by the two Houses of Par-
liament 1

Her Measures on her Accession 2

She breaks off all Correspond-
ence with *Rome* 3

She borrows Mony at *Antwerp* 4

Renders herself extremely po-
pular *ib.*

Her Title recogniz'd 10

The Commons address her to
marry 11

An Act for the Security of her
Person 12

Tonnage and Poundage gran-
ted her for Life 13

Several Matches propos'd to
her 23

Duke of *Holstein* courts the
Queen 29

Several *English* Noblemen in
hopes of obtaining her, par-
ticularly the Earl of *Leices-*
ter her Favourite *ib.*

She insists on the Queen of *Scots*
renouncing her Claim to
England 35

She is invited to be reconcil'd
to *Rome* 36

She provides against an Attack
from the popish Powers *ib.*

A Plot against her in Favour
of the Queen of *Scots* 38

The Protestants implore her
Assistance 41

An Act for maintaining the
Queen's Supremacy 43

She offers to settle the Crown
on the Queen of *Scots* if she
marry'd *Dudley*, who is

made Earl of *Leicester* P. 53

She summons *Murray* to answer
the Queen of *Scots* Charge
against him 85

She declares she believed the
Queen of *Scots* innocent 90

The Queen assists the Prote-
stants in *France* 91

The Pope's Bull against her
publish'd 102

The Queen declares the *Scots*
had no Reason to depose
their Queen 106

An Act for the Security of the
Queen's Person 112

The Penalty of declaring who
was next in Succession *ib.*

The Queen reproaches the
Queen of *Scots* with her in-
citing Conspiracies, &c. 121

She refuses to deliver up the
Protestants, who fled to
England 126

The Queen advises *Alençon* to
defer his coming to *Eng.* 130

Her Justice 131

She protects her Ministers 132

She assists the Hugonots 136

She refuses the Dominion of
Holland *ib.*

The Queen prevents the Com-
mons Proceedings for the
Reformation of the Church
138

She is desir'd to marry 132

She offers her Mediation be-
tween *Spain* and the *Dutch* 141

Her Endeavours to keep the
French out of the *Nether-*
lands *ib.*

The *Dutch* implore her Pro-
tection 144

One shot in the Queen's Barge
148

Articles of Marriage between
her and the Duke of *Anjou*
sign'd 167

She excuses the solemnizing
the Marriage 168

N n n She

The T A B L E.

She puts a Ring upon his Finger	Page 169
And breaks with him the next Day	<i>ib.</i>
Arguments for the Marriage	170
The Queen's Reasons against it	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Stubbs's</i> Right-hand cut off for writing against the Marriage	171
<i>Somerville's</i> Attempt to kill the Queen	185
Her Women incited to destroy her by the Papists	187
An Association enter'd into for her Preservation	189
A Bill for securing her against the Queen of <i>Scots</i> , and confirming the Association	193
The Queen assists the <i>United Provinces</i>	201
The Queen and Ministry's Prudence, which ought ever to be imitated	203
She assists the King of <i>Navarre</i> and <i>French</i> Protestants	206
A Conspiracy to assassinate the Queen and invade the Kingdom	207
The Pictures of the Assassins shewn the Queen	210
She meets with one of them	<i>ib.</i>
Seven of them plead guilty	212
They are executed	213
Her Letter to Sir <i>Amias Paulet</i> relating to the Sentence pass'd on the Queen of <i>Scots</i>	218
An Address for Alterations in Religion	221
The Queen's Answer	<i>ib.</i>
King <i>James</i> intercedes for his Mother the Queen of <i>Scots</i> Life	224
The <i>French</i> also interceed	<i>ib.</i>
The Queen of <i>England</i> in great Perplexity	<i>ib.</i>
The Queen of <i>Scots</i> executed without her Knowledge	226
The Queen's Letter to the	

King of <i>Scots</i>	Page 232
Preparations for the <i>Spanish</i> Invasion	239
The Queen prepares for her Defence	240
An Army of 80,000 Men	<i>ib.</i>
Her Majesty's Conduct at the Head of the Army	245
Great Taxes granted in Parliament	251
An Expedition against <i>Spain</i> , by <i>Drake</i> , <i>Norris</i> , &c.	253
The Queen supports the <i>French</i> King <i>Henry IV.</i>	256
She sends 3000 Men to <i>Bretagne</i> , &c. to his Assistance	261
Her Opinion of the Liberty of Speech in the House of Commons	271
She commits several Members for proposing to settle the Succession	272
The Queen advises K. <i>James</i> of <i>Scotland</i> to suppress the <i>Spanish</i> Faction	294
They unite their Interest	295
Attempts of the <i>Spaniards</i> , &c. to murder the Queen	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Lopez</i> her Physician condemn'd for engaging to poison her	296
The Queen expostulates with the King of <i>Spain</i> on these treacherous Attempts	<i>ib.</i>
She demands the Money she had lent the States	301
She eases herself of the Charge of assisting the States	318
She strikes the E. of <i>Essex</i>	319
Another Attempt to poison her	320
She consents to revoke the Patents for Monopolies before she is address'd	349
The Queen taken ill	358
Becomes melancholy on finding her Friends desert her	<i>ib.</i>
All Men apply to the King of <i>Scots</i>	359
She	

The T A B L E.

<p>She nominates K. <i>James</i> her Successor Page 359 Her Death <i>ib.</i> Her Person and Character 360 Her Title 365 Statutes in her Reign <i>ib.</i> E L I Z A B E T H, Princess, married to the Elector <i>Pa-</i> <i>latine</i> 430 Her Portion 40,000 <i>l.</i> <i>ib.</i> <i>Egerton</i>, Lord-Chancellor, succeed- ed by Sir <i>Francis Bacon</i> 453 Episcopacy, the King of <i>Scots</i> re- stores it in that Kingdom 190 E S S E X, Earl, discontented 309 A Quarrel between him and <i>Raleigh</i> 313 He is discontented again 314 The Queen strikes him 319 He is made Lord Lieutenant of <i>Ireland</i> 323 He has a View to the Crown <i>ib.</i> His Descent from the Royal Family made out <i>ib.</i> He acts contrary to his Orders 324 Wastes his Army without com- ing to a Battel <i>ib.</i> Is reprimanded by the Queen 325 He resolves to come to <i>England</i> with a Body of Troops <i>ib.</i> He comes over with a few Friends only 326 He is confin'd <i>ib.</i> He throws himself on the Queen's Goodness 331 He encourages all Malecontents 333 Endeavours to bring the King of <i>Scots</i> over to his Party 334 Courts both Puritans and Pa- pists <i>ib.</i> He is commanded to attend the Queen's Council 335 His Friends assemble at <i>Essex</i> House in a hostile Manner 336 Four of the Privy-council sent thither <i>ib.</i></p>	<p>He marches into the City 337 He is proclaim'd a Traytor <i>ib.</i> He surrenders at Discretion 338 He, <i>Southampton</i>, &c. brought to their Tryals <i>ib.</i> They are convicted 339 <i>Essex</i> beheaded 340 The Story of the Queen's Pas- sion for him, a Fable <i>ib.</i> E S S E X, Earl, Son of the for- mer Earl, marries the Earl of <i>Suffolk's</i> Daughter 426 The Prince courts the Countess of <i>Essex</i>, but she encourages <i>Rocheſter</i>, and goes to a Conjuror for Advice <i>ib.</i> <i>Overbury</i> first assists <i>Rocheſter</i> in this Intrigue, and afterwards endeavours to break it off 427 E S S E X, Countess, and <i>Ro-</i> <i>cheſter</i> resolve to marry 432 King <i>James</i> apply'd to, to get the Countess and Earl of <i>Essex</i> separated 433 Commissioners assign'd to try the Cause <i>ib.</i> A Divorce decreed 434 <i>Rocheſter</i> marries her <i>ib.</i> The Countess condemn'd for poisoning <i>Overbury</i> 442 Exchange, Royal, built 106 Exchange, New, built 417</p>
---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

F

<p>F <i>Awkes</i>, one of the Conspira- tors in the Powder-Plot, apprehended 405 Fishery, a Difference with <i>Den-</i> <i>mark</i> concerning it 330 Fish-ponds, the Penalty of de- stroying them <i>ib.</i> Fishing, a Proclamation against Foreigners fishing on the Coast 418 Forgery, the Penalty thereof 367 Frauds, Statutes provided against fraudulent Deeds, &c. 368 F R A N C E, Civil Wars there 32 N n n 2 The</p>

The TABLE.

The Papists and Protestants make Peace, and drive out the <i>English</i>	Page 48
The Civil War reviv'd in <i>France</i>	91
<i>FRENCH</i> King kill'd	22
Succeeded by <i>Francis</i> the Dau- phin, a Minor	<i>ib.</i>

G

G <i>Enova</i> , Collections for the Relief of that City	356
<i>Germany</i> , the Trade thither in- terrupted	315
<i>Gowry</i> , Earl, try'd	186
He is beheaded	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Gowry's</i> Attempt to assassinate K. <i>James</i> of <i>Scotland</i>	331
<i>Grey</i> , Lady <i>Katherine</i> , imprison'd for contracting Marriage with the E. of <i>Hertford</i>	39
<i>GRINDAL</i> , Archbishop, the Convocation petition for his Restoration	162
The Queen requires him to suppress Prophecys	164
He is suspended	165
His Death	178
<i>Guise</i> , Duke, assassinated	47
<i>Guiana</i> in <i>America</i> , Sir <i>Walter</i> <i>Raleigh's</i> Expedition thither	302
<i>Guise</i> , Duke, murdered	256
Guns, great, exported	352
Gun-Powder Plot discovered	405
The Conspirators try'd and condemn'd for it	410
<i>Garnet</i> executed for concealing it	411
Gypsies, the Penalty to pretend to be such	367

H

H <i>Amburgh</i> , the Trade there establish'd	94
Hedge-Breakers, how punish'd	370

<i>HENRY</i> IV, the <i>French</i> King, turn'd Papist	Page 291
Queen <i>Elizabeth's</i> Letter to him on the Occasion	292
He reduces <i>Bretagne</i> by the As- sistance of the <i>English</i>	297
But proves ungrateful to the Queen	<i>ib.</i>
He is assassinated	419
<i>HENRY</i> , Prince, Son to <i>James</i> of <i>Scotland</i> , born	295
Created Prince of <i>Wales</i>	418
The King far from being jea- lous of him	<i>ib.</i>
His Death	429
High Commission, the first	17
<i>HOLLAND</i> , Queen <i>Eliza- beth</i> demands the Money she had lent the States	301
The Queen eases herself of the Charge of assisting them	318
Horses, how toll'd and vouch'd in Fairs	369
Hue and Cry, by whom to be made	<i>ib.</i>

I

J <i>JAMES</i> VI. King of <i>Scot- land</i> , Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> ad- vises him to suppress the <i>Spanish</i> Faction	294
<i>Bothwell</i> insults him, but is defeated	<i>ib.</i>
The King and Queen unite their Interest	295
The Pope's Brief to exclude him from the Crown of <i>England</i>	330
<i>Gowry's</i> Attempt to assassinate the King	331
Earl of <i>Effex</i> endeavours to bring the King over to his Party	334
The People of <i>England</i> apply to the King of <i>Scots</i>	359
Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> nominates him her Successor	<i>ib.</i>
<i>JAMES</i> I. King of <i>England</i> proclaim'd	

The T A B L E.

proclaim'd	Page 371	An Act of Recognition pass'd	Page 387
Sir Robert Carey carries him		Commissioners appointed to	
the first News of the Queen's		treat of a Union	388
Death	372	Bishops disabled to part with	
The King sets out from <i>Edin-</i>	<i>ib.</i>	their Lands	<i>ib.</i>
<i>burgh</i>		Tonnage and Poundage granted	
He is met at <i>Theobalds</i> by the		to the King for Life	<i>ib.</i>
Privy-Council	373	And a Duty on Wool and Lea-	
The Queen and Princes sent		ther	<i>ib.</i>
for	374	The King proclaim'd King of	
Creations of Nobility	375	<i>GREAT BRITAIN</i>	389
He arrives at <i>London</i>	<i>ib.</i>	A Peace concluded with <i>Spain</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Above 200 Knighted by him	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Rapin's</i> Remarks on the Pro-	
More Creations of the Nobility	<i>ib.</i>	clamation for calling a Par-	
		liament examin'd	391
Most of the late Queen's Mi-		He suppresses the first Part of	
nisters continu'd	<i>ib.</i>	the Proclamation, with an	
Secretary <i>Cecil</i> continued prime		Intent to asperse the King	392
Minister	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Ostend</i> taken by the <i>Spaniards</i>	
60 Knights of the <i>Bath</i> made	<i>ib.</i>		398
The King and Queen crown'd	<i>ib.</i>	The Discovery of the Powder	
		Plot	405
Sir <i>Walter Raleigh</i> , &c. try'd		The King's Speech on the Dis-	
and condemn'd for High		covery of the Plot	407
Treason	376	<i>Rapin's</i> Remarks on the Plot	
Facts that are false related by		consider'd	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Rapin</i>	377	The Conspirators try'd and	
Particularly, that the Queen		condemn'd	<i>ib.</i>
made a written Will con-		A Report, that the King was	
cerning the Succession	<i>ib.</i>	stab'd	411
And that King <i>James</i> had a		Acts pass'd this Session for keep-	
parliamentary Title	<i>ib.</i>	ing the 5th of <i>Novem.</i>	412
A Proclamation for a Union	380	For attainting the Conspirators	
Another, whereby Monopolies			<i>ib.</i>
are revok'd	<i>ib.</i>	For discovering and repressing	
The Puritans petition the King		popish Recusants	<i>ib.</i>
against the Rites of the		An Act for cutting the New	
Church	381	River	<i>ib.</i>
A Conference at <i>Hampton-</i>		Players prophaneness punish'd	
Court	<i>ib.</i>		<i>ib.</i>
The Puritans declare themselves		The K. of <i>Denmark</i> arrives	414
satisfied and promise Confor-		And Prince <i>Vaudemont</i>	<i>ib.</i>
mity	382	A Union of the two Kingdoms	
A Proclamation concerning the		propos'd	<i>ib.</i>
Success of the Conference,		All hostile Acts repeal'd	<i>ib.</i>
and requiring the Puritans		<i>Calvin's</i> Case in favour of the	
to conform	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Scots</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Another banishing the Jesuits	384	Penalty of being drunk	<i>ib.</i>
A Parliament call'd	<i>ib.</i>	Insurrections	

The TABLE.

Insurrections on Account of Inclosures	Page 415	the <i>English</i> in <i>America</i>	P. 428
<i>Tiouruen</i> solicits an Invasion	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Cecil</i> dies	<i>ib.</i>
The King's Partiality to the <i>Scots</i> discontents the <i>English</i>	<i>ib.</i>	Trade with <i>Persia</i> settled	<i>ib.</i>
Creations of Nobility	416	The Prince <i>Palatine</i> arrives	429
Two popish Priests executed	<i>ib.</i>	Prince <i>Henry</i> dies	<i>ib.</i>
Pirates executed	<i>ib.</i>	The <i>Palatine</i> marries the Princess <i>Elizabeth</i>	430
Earl of <i>Salisbury</i> made Lord Treasurer	<i>ib.</i>	The Portion of the Princesses	40,000 <i>l.</i> <i>ib.</i>
The <i>Dutch</i> own'd a free State by <i>Spain</i>	417	<i>Rapin</i> scurrilous and inconsistent with himself	431
The New Exchange built	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Rocheſter</i> and the Countess of <i>Essex</i> resolve to marry	432
A Proclamation against new Buildings in <i>London</i>	418	And ruin <i>Overbury</i> for opposing it	<i>ib.</i>
Against Foreigners fishing on the Coast	<i>ib.</i>	King <i>James</i> apply'd to, to get the Earl of <i>Essex</i> and Countess separated	433
Prince <i>Henry</i> created Prince of <i>Wales</i>	418	Commissioners assign'd to try the Cause	<i>ib.</i>
The King far from being jealous of him	<i>ib.</i>	A Divorce decreed	434
The <i>French</i> King, <i>Henry</i> IV, assassinated	419	<i>Rocheſter</i> marries the Countess	<i>ib.</i>
The King of <i>England</i> alarm'd at it	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Overbury</i> poison'd in the Tower	435
The Royal Navy and other Shipping increas'd	420	The Parliament meets	<i>ib.</i>
The Parliament meets	<i>ib.</i>	The Commons refuse a Supply	<i>ib.</i>
The People discontented at the Money lavish'd away on the <i>Scots</i>	421	The Parliament dissolv'd	436
The Puritans clamorous	<i>ib.</i>	Some of the Members imprison'd	<i>ib.</i>
The King's Speech to both Houses	422	The King levies a Benevolence	<i>ib.</i>
Acts pass'd	423	The K. of <i>Denmark</i> arrives	<i>ib.</i>
Archbishop <i>Bancroft</i> dies	<i>ib.</i>	The King in Distress for Money	<i>ib.</i>
Succeeded by Dr. <i>Abbot</i>	424	<i>Somerſet</i> out of Favour	437
Baronets first made	<i>ib.</i>	The King scandalously aspers'd	440
The Rise of <i>Carr</i> , afterwards Earl of <i>Somerſet</i>	<i>ib.</i>	JESUITS sent to preach among the Puritans in <i>England</i> to disturb the establish'd Church	31
The Earl of <i>Essex</i> marries the E. of <i>Suffolk</i> 's Daughter	426	<i>Parsons</i> and <i>Campion</i> , Jesuits, come into <i>England</i>	152
The Prince courts her, but she encourages <i>Rocheſter</i>	<i>ib.</i>	An Act against them	194
<i>Overbury</i> first assists <i>Rocheſter</i> in this Intrigue, and afterwards endeavours to break it off	427	<i>Garnet</i> Superior of the Jesuits, executed for concealing the Powder Plot	411
Several Settlements made by			<i>Fewel,</i>

The T A B L E.

<i>Jewel</i> , Bishop, his Apology for the Church of <i>England</i>	42
He dies	116
<i>India</i> , <i>East-India</i> Company erected	330
Insurrections on Account of Enclosures	415
<i>I R E L A N D</i> , the Rebellion of <i>Shan O-Neal</i> suppress'd	77
<i>Ireland</i> reduc'd to a peaceable State	143
An Insurrection there	150
<i>Spanish</i> Forces arrive there <i>ib.</i>	
The War there unsuccessful	300, 304
<i>Essex</i> made Lord Lieutenant	323
The Reason of the long Continuance of the War	357

K

K <i>Atherine de Medicis</i> Regent of <i>France</i>	33
Knight of the Shire, whether the Sheriff may be one	345
Knights, 200 made by <i>K. James</i>	373
Knights of the <i>Bath</i> made <i>ib.</i>	
<i>Knox</i> incites the <i>Scottish</i> Nobility to rebel and compel their Queen to alter Religion	19

L

L <i>E-I-C-E-S-T-E-R</i> , Earl, first prefer'd by Queen <i>Elizabeth</i>	30
The Queen offers him to the Queen of <i>Scots</i> for a Husband, but he flights the Match in Hopes of obtaining the Queen of <i>England</i>	49, 53
<i>Leicester</i> endeavours to depress the Earl of <i>Essex</i>	137
He marries the Earl of <i>Essex's</i> Widow	142

He opposes the Queen's marrying the Duke of <i>Anjou</i>	147
He is made General of the <i>English</i> Auxiliaries in the <i>Low Countries</i>	203
The <i>States</i> complain of him	203, 206
He is said to have propos'd the poisoning the Queen of <i>Scots</i>	214
He is recall'd from the <i>Low Countries</i> on the Complaints of the <i>Dutch</i>	239
He is made General of the <i>English</i> Forces on the <i>Spanish</i> Invasion in 1588	241
The Earl's Death, his Goods seiz'd by the Queen	248
<i>Lenox</i> , Earl, Regent of <i>Scotland</i>	112
<i>Lopez</i> , Physician to Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> , hired to poison her	296

M

M <i>A R Y</i> Queen of <i>Scots</i>	3
	<i>See Scots.</i>
Massacre at <i>Antwerp</i>	140
Massacre of the Protestants the 24th of <i>August</i> at <i>Paris</i>	124
<i>Montjoy</i> , Lord, made Governor of <i>Ireland</i>	327
MONOPOLIES, numerous	347
Thirty or Forty enumerated	348
The Queen consents to revoke these Patents before she is address'd	349
Monopolies revok'd by King <i>James</i>	380
<i>Monteagle</i> , Lord, the Letter sent him by the Conspirators in the Gun-powder Plot	403
<i>Morton</i> , Regent of <i>Scotland</i>	166
Condemn'd and executed	167
<i>M U R R A Y</i> , Earl, takes the Administration upon him, and uses the Queen of <i>Scots</i> , his Sister, barbarously	69
He	

The TABLE.

He gets his Proceedings confirmed by Parliament P. 85

Queen *Elizabeth* summons him to answer the Queen of *Scots* Charge against him *ib.*

The Substance of his Accusation of the Queen of *Scots* 87

He exhibits a fresh Charge against her 90

He takes the Earl of *Northumberland* 101

Earl *Murray* assassinated *ib.*

N

Naturalization, Acts relating thereto 423

Navy, Royal, &c. increas'd 420

Newport Battel 329

New River, an Act pass'd for cutting it 413

Nobility, Creations thereof 6

Nobility, Creations 119

NORFOLK, Duke, the Proposal for his marrying the Queen of *Scots* reviv'd 95

Queen *Elizabeth* reprimands him for attempting this Marriage 96

He is sent to the *Tower* 97

The Queen of *Scots* with his Privy applies to *Spain*, &c. to restore her 107

His Treaty with the Queen discover'd 108

He confesses his being privy to the Plot 110

His Tryal 117

He is condemn'd and executed 118, 120

Northumberland, Earl, beheaded 126

Northumberland, Earl *Henry*, found dead in the *Tower* 200

November 5th, Acts pass'd for keeping it 412

O

OATH of Supremacy tender'd to the Clergy 15

The Bishops imprison'd for refusing it *ib.*

Oaths, by whom to be taken 423

Orange, Prince, assassinated 192

Orchards, the Penalty for robbing them 370

Ostend Siege 343

OVERBURY, Sir *Thomas*, first assists *Rocheſter* in his Intrigue with the Countess of *Essex*, and afterwards endeavours to break it off 427

He is ruin'd for opposing the Marriage 432

He is poisoned in the *Tower* 435

His Murder discover'd 439

The King scandalously aspers'd on the Occasion 440

The inferior Agents condemn'd and executed 441

The Countess of *Essex* condemn'd for his Murder 442

The Discovery of the Murder, as declar'd by the Attorney-General at the Tryal *ib.*

The Earl and Countess of *Somerset* both condemn'd for *Overbury's* Murder, but pardon'd 447

Oxford Library furnished with Books by Sir *Thomas Bodley* 320

P

PAlatine, Prince, arrives in England 429

He marries the Princess *Elizabeth* 430

Papists create Disturbances 78

Forſake their Pariſh Churches 116

The Penalty of a popiſh Recuſant departing five Miles from his Habitation 279

An

The TABLE.

An Act for discovering and repressing popish Recusants	Page 412	Pope's Authority abolish'd P. 7	7
<i>Parker</i> created Archbishop of <i>Canterbury</i>	24	Bull against Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> publish'd	102
He dies	137	Briefs to exclude King <i>James</i> from the Crown of <i>England</i>	330
<i>Parry</i> opposes the Bill concern- ing the Jesuits	195	<i>Portugal</i> , the Conquest of it di- verts the King of <i>Spain</i> from invading <i>England</i>	147
He is charg'd with a Design to assassinate the Queen	196	Priests, popish, executed for main- taining the Pope's Power	145
His Confession	<i>ib.</i>	70 released out of Prison	188
He is condemned and executed	198	Two executed	416
PARLIAMENT, a High Sheriff Representative for the same County	199	Prisoners, County charg'd to- wards their Relief	368
Queen's Servants privileg'd from Arrests in Parliament time	345	Protestant Religion establish'd in <i>Scotland</i> by Law	29
A Parliament call'd	384	Protestants massacred at <i>Paris</i>	124
Prohibited by Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> to meddle with Ecclesiastical Affairs	316	PROCLAMATION concerning Apparel and Weapons	157
Parks, the Penalty for hunting therein	367	Against building on new Foun- dations in <i>London</i> and <i>West-</i> <i>minster</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Paul's</i> , St. burnt by Lightning	38	The Legality of such Procla- mations enquir'd into	156
Peace concluded with <i>Spain</i>	389	Prophecies, some Account of them	163
<i>Penry</i> , a Puritan Minister, try'd and condemn'd for Sedition	288	PURITANS troublesome to the Government	19
<i>Perrot</i> , Sir <i>John</i> , Deputy of <i>Ire-</i> <i>land</i> , condemn'd for Words spoken against the Queen	269	Create Disturbances	59, 78, 105
Perjury, the Penalty thereof	366	Forfake their Parish Churches	116
<i>Persia</i> , Trade settled there	428	A Character of the Puritans by Dr. <i>Whitgift</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Philip</i> II, King of <i>Spain</i> , dies	320	Disturb the Government	127
Pick-pockets, Benefit of Clergy taken away	367	They threaten both Houses of Parliament, if they did not not destroy the Church, and establish the <i>Geneva</i> Plan	128
Players, Penalty for using the Name of God on the Stage	413	They endanger the whole Pro- testant Interest by their un- seasonable Cavils	129
<i>Poles</i> and their Confederates try'd for High Treason	46	They insult the Government	133
Poor, how to be provided for	369	<i>Burchet</i> maintains the Lawful- ness	ness

The TABLE.

ness of killing the Enemies of the <i>Geneva</i> Plan	P. 134
Their Insolence at <i>Bury</i>	175
Two of <i>Brown's</i> Disciples hang'd there	181
They differ among themselves about reforming the Liturgy	184
Large Concessions made to them, to no purpose	<i>ib.</i>
Their Attempts to establish their Sect	219
An Address for Alterations in Religion	221
The Queen's Answer	<i>ib.</i>
Their Resolutions thereupon	222
Synods held by the Puritans	249
The partial Authors of <i>Rapin</i> entirely omit this Part of our History	250
They threaten to introduce the <i>Geneva</i> Discipline by Force	259
Their dangerous Doctrines and Practices	264
A Motion to restrain the Bishops from proceeding against them	274
The Queen forbids proceeding on the Motion	<i>ib.</i>
Condemn'd for seditious Libels	280
Reasons given for their Sepa- ration	281
Their Doctrines	<i>ib.</i>
Commend for Empire, not Tole- ration	284
An Answer to their Reflections on the Clergy	286
The true Reason why they were not prosecuted in the Beginning of the Reign	287
And why afterwards	<i>ib.</i>
They keep the Sabbath as a Fast	299
Their Doctrine of Predestina-	

tion	Page 299
They pretend to Miracles	311
They tamper with an Impof- tor to counterfeit a Posses- sion	<i>ib.</i>
Petition King <i>James</i> against the Rites of the Church	381
The Conference at <i>Hampton</i> Court	<i>ib.</i>
They declare themselves satis- fy'd and promise Conformity	382
A Proclamation concerning the Success of the Conference, and requiring the Puritans to conform	383
<i>Rapin's</i> Account of the Con- ference, contrary to that of the Puritans	390

R

R <i>Aleighb</i> , Sir <i>Walter's</i> , Expe- dition to <i>Guiana</i> in <i>Ame- rica</i>	302
A Quarrel between him and <i>Essex</i>	313
Try'd and condemn'd for High Treason	376
Rape, Clergy taken away from Persons guilty thereof	368
<i>R A P I N</i> blends <i>Melvil</i> and <i>Buchanan</i> together, so that it is not easy to distinguish one from the other	70
He takes great Pains to make the Queen of <i>Scots</i> thought criminal	71
He charges <i>Cambden</i> with For- gery and Ignorance	74
<i>Cambden's</i> Authority well sup- ported	<i>ib.</i>
He contradicts <i>Cambden</i> , with- out producing any Authori- ty for it	81
He cautions his Readers not to believe <i>Cambden</i>	83
Instances of his unfair Quota- tions	

The TABLE.

tions	Page 84
He is inconsistent with himself	<i>ib.</i>
His Mistakes as to the Meeting of the Parliament in 1583	162
His unfair Usage of <i>Cambden</i>	174
Remarks on him in relation to <i>Argyle's</i> Protest	227
He omits part of the History	250
Abuses <i>Cambden</i> , tho' oblig'd to him for most part of the History	<i>ib.</i>
Lamentations, that a Law should be made to compel the Puritans to come to Church	283
His Remarks answer'd	284
He and the Presbyterians guilty of advancing Facts that are false	285
Inconsistent with himself in the Character he gives Queen <i>Elizabeth</i>	364
Facts that are false, related by him	377
Particularly, that Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> made a written Will concerning the Succession <i>ib.</i>	
That King <i>James</i> had a parliamentary Title	<i>ib.</i>
His Authority not to be rely'd on, concerning Facts, that happen'd many Years ago	379
His Account of the Conference at <i>Hampton Court</i> , contrary to that of his puritan Brethren	390
He sounds his Surmises upon Facts that are false	391
His Remarks on the Proclamation for calling a Parliament, examin'd	<i>ib.</i>
His Remarks on the Powder Plot, consider'd	407

He is scurrilous and inconsistent with himself	Page 431
Rebellion rais'd by the Earls of <i>Northumberland</i> and <i>Westmoreland</i>	98
<i>Rizzo</i> , an Account of his Murder	61
Robbery, Clergy taken away from those, who rob Houses, &c. to the Value of 5 s.	369
<i>Rochelle</i> besieged by the French	129
<i>Rochester</i> and the Countess of <i>Essex</i> resolve to marry	432
And ruin <i>Overbury</i> . for opposing it	<i>ib.</i>
A Divorce decreed	434
He marries the Countess	<i>ib.</i>
Made Earl of <i>Somerset</i>	<i>ib.</i>
He loses the King's Favour	437
Apprehended for <i>Overbury's</i> Murder	439
The Earl and Countess condemn'd, but pardoned	447
<i>Rome</i> , Treason to apply to that See	113
<i>Russia</i> Trade suspended	93
<i>Ruthuen</i> and other Lords seize on the King of <i>Scots</i>	174

S

S abbath, kept as a Fast by the Puritans	299
<i>Salisbury</i> , Earl, made Lord-Treasurer	416
<i>Scots</i> , Queen, and the Dauphin, stile themselves King and Queen of <i>England</i>	3
<i>Knox</i> incites the Nobility to rebel, and compel the Queen to alter Religion	19
Concessions made by her to the Lords of the Congregation	28
O o o 2	The

The T A B L E.

The Protestant Religion establish'd in <i>Scotland</i>	P. 29	<i>Murray</i> exhibits a fresh Charge against his Sister, on slender Proofs	Page 90
The <i>Scots</i> desire their Queen may be declared presumptive Heir of <i>England</i>	35	Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> declares, she believes her innocent	<i>ib.</i>
Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> offers to settle the Crown on the Queen of <i>Scots</i> , if she married <i>Dudley</i>	53	Queen of <i>Scots</i> more strictly confin'd	91
Queen of <i>Scots</i> demands her Consent to marry Lord <i>Darnley</i>	56	The Proposal for the Duke of <i>Norfolk's</i> marrying her reviv'd	95
<i>Scotland</i> in Confusion	60	Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> reprimands the Duke for attempting it	96
The Queen detain'd Prisoner	62	The Earl of <i>Suffex</i> invades <i>Scotland</i> , <i>Lenox</i> chosen Regent	102
The King of <i>Scots</i> murdered	66	A Plot to set the Queen of <i>Scots</i> at Liberty	103
A Protest of the Earls of <i>Huntley</i> and <i>Argyle</i> , that <i>Murray</i> , &c. were guilty of the King's Murder	67	Proposals made her by the Court of <i>England</i>	104
The Conspirators get <i>Botbwell</i> acquitted of his Murder, and procure the Consent of the Nobility for the Queen's marrying him	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Scots</i> assert the deposing Doctrine	106
She is compell'd to resign her Crown to her Son, or rather <i>Murray</i>	69	Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> declares they had no Reason to depose their Queen	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Murray</i> takes the Administration upon him, and uses his Sister barbarously	<i>ib.</i>	The Queen of <i>Scots</i> applies to <i>Spain</i> to restore her	107
She makes her Escape	80	Bishop of <i>Ross</i> forms a Project in her behalf	<i>ib.</i>
Her Troops being defeated by the Rebels, she flies into <i>England</i>	<i>ib.</i>	<i>Norfolk's</i> Treaty with her discover'd	108
The Council determine to detain her	85	The Parliament Address Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> to proceed capitally against the Queen of <i>Scots</i>	120
The Differences between her and her Subjects heard by the <i>English</i> Commissioners at <i>York</i>	86	Queen <i>Elizabeth</i> reproaches her with her inciting Conspiracies	121
Her Commissioners charge her Enemies with Rebellion, &c.	87	<i>Ruthuen</i> , and other Lords seize on the King of <i>Scots</i>	174
The Substance of <i>Murray's</i> Accusation of her	<i>ib.</i>	Queen of <i>Scots</i> admits her Son Partner in the Government	175
Her Reply	88	Secretary <i>Walsingham</i> sent to the Court of <i>Scotland</i>	177
		Another Plot to seize the King of <i>Scots</i>	178
		He restores Episcopacy	190
		Queen	

The T A B L E.

Queen of Scots put into the Hands of Sir Drue Drury, and Sir Amias Paulet	Page 191	Sheriffs to have 12 d. in the Pound for Goods taken in Execution to the Value of 100 l. &c.	Page 369
She bathes every Day in Wine	ib.	Sidney, Sir Philip, kill'd	205
She is accus'd by her Secreta- ries	213	Simony, corrupt Presentations punish'd	369
Debates in Council concerning her	ib.	Somerſet, Earl, his Rise	424
Leiceſter propoſes to poiſon the Queen of Scots	214	He is out of Favour	437
Commiſſioners appointed to try her	ib.	He applies to the King for a Pardon	438
She objects to their Jurisdiction, but is at length per- ſwaded to appear and plead	ib.	He is apprehended	439
Sentence paſs'd on her	215	His Tryal	443
The Sentence publiſh'd	218	His Petition not to be try'd	447
King James interceeds for his Mother's Life, and uſes Threats	224	He is convicted	ib.
The Scottiſh Clergy reſuſe to pray for her	ib.	He and his Counteſs pardon'd as to Life	ib.
A Warrant order'd for her Execution	225	Somerſet, Earl	See Rocheſter.
The Conduct of Davis Secre- tary of State on this Occa- ſion	226	Spain, the King about to invade Ireland	146
She is executed without the Knowledge of Queen Eli- beth	ib.	He is diverted by the Conqueſt of Portugal	147
Her Perſon and Character	ib.	The vaſt Extent of his Domi- nions	154
Queen Elizabeth's Letter to the King of Scots	232	Spaniſh Invaſion, Preparations for it	239
He reſents the putting his Mo- ther to Death, and propoſes a War	237	The Strength of the Armada	242
He marries the Princeſs of Denmark	257	Diſpers'd by a Storm	ib.
The King's Partiality to them diſcontents the Engliſh	415	Attack'd by the Engliſh	243
The Engliſh diſcontented at the Money lavish'd away on them	421	A running Fight between the Engliſh and the Armada till it anchors in Calais Road	244
Servants, how long to be hir'd for	366	The Armada put into Con- fuſion by the Engliſh Fire- ſhips	ib.
		Sail about North, and return to Spain	245
		A Particular of the Spaniards Loſſes	246
		Reaſons of their ill Succeſs	247
		An Expedition againſt Spain by Drake, &c.	253
		Set up a Title to England	294
		The Engliſh deſtroy their Fleet	at

The T A B L E.

at Cadiz	Page 306
Spaniards, who land in Ire- land, besieged in Kingsale	355
A Peace concluded	389
The Dutch own'd a Free State by them	417
Star, a new one appears	129
Statutes pass'd in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth	365
Stubb's Right-hand cut off for writing against the Mar- riage of Queen Elizabeth with the Duke of Anjou	171
Subsidy defin'd	45
Subsidies in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth produce little	273
The Amount of them in this Reign	346
Few Gentleman tax'd at 10 l. per Ann.	ib.
Suffolk, Dutchess, on whom the Crown was settled, dies	49
Her Daughter Jane beheaded	ib.
Katherine imprison'd for mar- rying the Earl of Hertford	50
The third Sister married to the Groom Porter	ib.
Suffolk Title reviv'd	293
Suffolk, Lord Treasurer, disgrac'd	453
Supremacy	43
Supply, the Lords propose a Conference with the Com- mons concerning it	274
Carried, on a Division to have no Conference with the Lords on the Supply	276
The Commons follow the Lords Advice, tho' they re- fuse a Conference on the Supply	277

T

Tenth and Fifteenth de- fin'd	Page 45
Tobacco first brought to England	202
Tonnage and Poundage granted to Queen Elizabeth for Life	13
Tonnage and Poundage granted King James for Life	388
Trade with Germany interrupted	315
Treason, to apply to Rome	113
To withdraw Persons from their Allegiance, or the Protestant Religion	160

U

Udal try'd and convicted of Felony, for endea- vouring to introduce the Geneva Discipline by Force	260
Villars, Sir George, his Rise	437
Virginia discover'd	202
Uniformity Act reviv'd	8
United Provinces, Queen Eliza- beth assists them	201
Leicester embarks with the Auxiliary Troops for Hol- land	203
University, Queen Elizabeth e- rects one at Dublin	266
Union, a Proclamation for one	380
Commissioners appointed to treat of a Union	388
Utrecht Union	159

The TABLE.

W

WHITGIFT succeeds
Grindal in the See of
Canterbury 179
The Queen orders him to see
the Act of Uniformity duely

observed

He requires a Subscription to
certain Articles of the Cler-
gy

Witchcraft, an Act against it

Women, Penalty for stealing an
Heire's

27.

27.

43

369



